

A FAMILY UNDER GOD

"Honor your father and Mother
that thy days may be long upon the land "

Exodus 20:12



Lecture Notes

A Biblical Resource for God's Law Order in the Christian Home

BROOKY R STOCKTON, PHD

Unedited Lecture Notes on the Family 2.0 (2015) ©

This is a series of seminary lectures, church sermons, and Bible studies given during the ministry of Dr. Brook Stockton as a Baptist Pastor and Professor of Theology. It is an unedited manual on the theology and legal nature of a family under God. It will be most appreciated by a student of God's Word concerned about restoring Biblical Principles in the life of Christian families.

Any chapter of this work may be reproduced **ONLY** with the written authorization of Dr. Brook Stockton. Email: Nike Insights, nikeresearch@comcast.net.

Nike Insights

Brooky Stockton, PHD
P.O. Box 884
Tijeras, New Mexico

Table of Contents

1 Contents

A FAMILY UNDER GOD	1
TABLE OF CONTENTS.....	3
PREFACE	9
DEDICATION	10
1 ASSAULT ON THE FAMILY	11
2 DAD GOES TO WAR.....	14
2.1 WAR IS GOD’S WILL	15
2.2 WAR IS NOT ALWAYS EVIL.....	16
2.3 GOD’S PEOPLE MUST LEARN THE ART OF WAR.....	17
2.4 SOME THINGS ARE WORSE THAN WAR.....	18
2.5 UNWILLINGNESS TO FIGHT IS A WEAKNESS TO OVERCOME.	18
2.6 WAR IS NECESSARY.....	19
2.7 GRAPES OF WRATH	20
2.8 PASS THE SALT.....	21
3 WHAT DOES A HEALTHY FAMILY LOOK LIKE?	23
4 THE MOST IMPORTANT QUESTION.....	29
WHAT IS YOUR CONTINGENCY?	29
4.1 THE FIRST QUESTION	29
4.2 THE CONTINGENCY OF A BIBLICAL FAMILY	29
4.3 THE CONTINGENCY OF MODERN MAN	30
4.4 THE CONTINGENCY OF HABAKKUK	31
4.5 THE CONTINGENCY OF JOHN THE BAPTIST	31
4.6 THE CONTINGENCY OF THE MAGI	32
4.7 THE CONTINGENCY OF CHRIST	32
4.8 THE CONTINGENCY OF PETER.....	33
4.9 THE CONTINGENCY OF PAUL.....	34
5 THE FAMILY AND THE TEN COMMANDMENTS.....	36
5.1 WAR ON THE TEN COMMANDMENTS	36
5.2 THE GRAND PURPOSE OF THE TEN COMMANDMENTS	37
5.3 A SUMMARY OF THE TEN COMMANDMENTS	46
6 THE FAMILY AND THE FIRST COMMANDMENT	48
7 THE AUTHORITY FOR MARRIAGE	55
7.1 THE YOKE OF LICENSING	55
7.2 DEFINITION OF LICENSE	56
7.3 DEFINITION OF JURISDICTION.....	56
7.4 DEFINITIONS OF MARRIAGE.....	56

7.5	DEFINITION OF FAMILY	58
7.6	DEFINITION OF INSTITUTION	58
7.7	INTRUSION BY THE STATE	58
8	THE ORIGINAL JURISDICTION OF MARRIAGE	60
9	THE LAW OF MARRIAGE IN GENESIS	64
9.1	MAN UNDER LAW	64
9.2	MARRIAGE UNDER LAW	65
10	THE MARRIAGE CONTRACT	69
10.1	MARRIAGE IS A CONTRACT	69
10.2	THE DOWRY	73
10.3	THE JURISDICTION OF MARRIAGE.....	75
10.4	COMMON LAW JURISDICTION	76
11	SAMPLE MARRIAGE CONTRACT	78
12	DECLARATION OF MARRIAGE	79
13	CERTIFICATION OF A MARRIAGE COVENANT	80
14	THE MARRIAGE COVENANT AND THE THIRD COMMANDMENT.....	82
14.1	THE CURSE.....	85
14.2	PROHIBITIONS AGAINST SWEARING.....	86
14.3	DEFINITIONS.....	86
14.4	WRITING GOD’S NAME WORTHILY	88
14.5	VOWS OF PRINCE WILLIAM	89
15	THE FORM OF SOLEMNIZATION OF MATRIMONY.....	90
16	THE POISONOUS TREE	94
16.1	WHATEVER BECAME OF SIN?.....	95
16.2	SIN DEFINED.....	95
16.3	SIN IN THE FIRST FAMILY (GENESIS 3:1-6)	96
16.4	TOXINS AT WORK IN THE FIRST FAMILY (3:7FF).....	97
16.5	FRUITS OF THE POISONOUS TREE	98
16.6	THE SEVEN DEADLY SINS.....	100
16.7	THE FIRST PROMISE	102
16.8	GOD’S REMEDY FOR THE POISONOUS TREE.....	103
16.9	BLOOD IS THE CURRENCY OF THE SPIRIT WORLD.	103
17	GOD’S REMEDY FOR THE POISONOUS TREE.....	104
18	THE FAMILY AND THE SEVENTH COMMANDMENT	110
18.1	THE WAR AGAINST MARRIAGE	110
18.2	THE PURPOSE OF THE SEVENTH COMMANDMENT	111
18.3	SEXUAL PROHIBITIONS.....	113
18.4	HAND OF LOVE V. THE HAND OF LUST	118
19	IS THERE A LION IN THE HOUSE?.....	119
	BLESSED IS THE FAMILY WHO HAS A LION LEADING THE PRIDE.	119
19.1	CONDITION ONE	119
19.2	CONDITION TWO.....	120
19.3	CONDITION THREE.....	123

20	THE FAMILY CREED	125
20.1	ADOPTION OF THE APOSTLES' CREED.....	125
20.2	ADOPTION OF THE NICENE CREED.....	125
21	A GREAT WOMAN WITH GREAT FAITH	126
22	THE IDEAL WIFE	131
22.1	SHE IS A GOOD WOMAN.....	131
22.2	SHE IS A GOOD WIFE.....	131
22.3	SHE IS A GOOD MOTHER.....	131
22.4	SHE IS A GOOD NEIGHBOR	131
23	WHO CAN FIND A FAITHFUL MAN?.....	132
24	THE WAR ON THE FAMILY.....	134
24.1	THE ORDER:	134
24.2	THE DANGER:	134
24.3	THE HISTORICAL BACKGROUND.....	135
24.4	THE ENEMY'S WEAPON	135
24.5	THE INTELLECTUAL MOVEMENTS OF THE FIRST CENTURY.....	135
24.6	A FEW OF THE INTELLECTUAL MOVEMENTS OF OUR TIME:.....	136
24.7	THE BIBLICAL SOLUTION FOR THE ISMS	145
25	THE FIFTH COMMANDMENT-- THE KEY TO A LONG LIFE	147
25.1	PLEAD THE FIFTH	147
25.2	NOTES ON THE PURPOSE AND SCOPE OF THE FIFTH COMMANDMENT	147
26	THE FAMILY AND THE TENTH COMMANDMENT	154
26.1	INTRODUCTION TO THE TENTH COMMANDMENT	155
26.2	THEFT FROM PARENTS.....	157
26.3	THEFT BY FAILURE TO MAKE RESTITUTION.....	157
26.4	THEFT BY NEGLIGENCE.....	158
26.5	THEFT BY DECEPTION	159
26.6	THEFT BY CHARGING INTEREST	159
26.7	THEFT BY PERMISSIVENESS	160
26.8	THEFT BY HUMAN TRAFFICKING	160
26.9	THEFT THROUGH PRISONS.....	160
26.10	THEFT BY TAXATION	161
26.11	THEFT BY SEIZURE OF PROPERTY.....	162
26.12	THEFT BY FRAUD	162
26.13	THEFT BY TAX SCHEMES.....	163
26.14	THEFT BY THE DOCTRINE OF EMINENT DOMAIN.....	165
26.15	THEFT BY ROBBING GOD.....	166
27	THE FAMILY AND DELINQUENCY.....	169
27.1	LIST OF CAPITAL CRIMES IN TORAH	182
27.1.1	<i>For Sexual Crimes</i>	<i>182</i>
27.1.2	<i>For Treason Against God's Law-order</i>	<i>182</i>
27.1.3	<i>For Violations Against Parents and Family Law</i>	<i>183</i>
27.1.4	<i>For Crimes Against Humanity.....</i>	<i>183</i>
28	WHAT IF I CAN'T HAVE CHILDREN?.....	185
28.1	PEACE WITH INFERTILITY	186

29	THE FAMILY AND ITS PETS	191
30	THE TALE OF TWO SONS	192
30.1	THE PRODIGAL	193
30.2	CHARACTERISTIC OF THE ELDER SON:	198
31	EXPLORING THE OCEAN OF GOD'S LOVE	201
31.1	LOVE IS PATIENT	201
31.2	LOVE IS KIND	202
31.3	LOVE DOES NOT ENVY	203
31.4	LOVE IS NOT PROUD	203
31.5	LOVE DOES NOT BEHAVE IMPROPERLY	203
31.6	LOVE SEEKETH NOT HER OWN	204
31.7	LOVE IS NOT EASILY PROVOKED	204
31.8	LOVE THINKETH NO EVIL	205
31.9	LOVE DOES NOT REJOICE IN WRONGDOING, BUT REJOICES IN THE TRUTH.	205
31.10	LOVE BEARS ALL THINGS,	206
31.11	LOVE BELIEVES ALL THINGS,	206
31.12	LOVE HOPES ALL THINGS	206
31.13	LOVE ENDURES ALL THINGS	207
31.14	LOVE NEVER FAILS	207
32	THE POWER OF A DAD'S BLESSING	209
32.1	THE BLESSING	209
32.2	BE A SEEKER	210
32.3	BE A LOVER	210
32.4	BE A HUGGER	210
32.5	BE AN ENCOURAGER	211
32.6	FACTS ABOUT THIS BLESSING:	211
32.7	FACT ONE	211
32.8	FACT TWO	213
33	THE STRONG SON	214
33.1	TEST OF TRUTHFULNESS (GENESIS 37)	214
33.2	THE TEST OF OBEDIENCE (GENESIS 37)	215
33.3	TEST OF PURITY (GENESIS 39)	215
33.4	TEST OF INJUSTICE	216
33.5	TEST OF RESENTMENT	216
33.6	TEST OF PRIDE (GENESIS 41-42):	217
33.7	TEST OF FORGIVENESS (GENESIS 45)	218
34	THE GREATEST SON OF ALL	220
34.1.1	<i>The Amazing Transformation of Judah</i>	220
34.1.2	<i>The Amazing Loyalty of Tamar</i>	221
35	THE FOOLISH SON	226
35.1	WHAT COULD BE WORSE THAN A FOOL?	228
36	THE PROUD SON	229
36.1	THE PROUD SON WAS FULL OF RESENTMENT.	230
36.2	THE PROUD SON WAS A COLD, CALCULATING MAN	231
36.3	THE PROUD SON HATED HIS FATHER	231

36.4	THE PROUD SON COULD ADMIT NO WRONG.....	231
36.5	THE PROUD SON WAS A HANDSOME MAN.....	232
36.6	THE PROUD SON PROMOTED HIMSELF.....	232
36.7	THE PROUD SON REBELLED AGAINST HIS FATHER.....	233
36.8	THE PROUD SON SHAMED HIS FATHER PUBLICALLY.....	234
36.9	THE PROUD SON DIED THE DEATH OF A FOOL.....	234
37	THE DAUGHTER WORTH MORE THAN SEVEN SONS.....	236
37.1	RUTH'S DISTRESS.....	236
37.2	RUTH'S DESTITUTION.....	236
37.3	RUTH'S DARING DECISION.....	237
37.4	RUTH'S DELIGHT.....	239
38	A CONFEDERATE LETTER FROM A FATHER TO A SON.....	242
39	THE CASE FOR CHRISTIAN EDUCATION.....	245
40	GOD'S MODEL FAMILY.....	251
41	GRACE UPON A FAMILY UNDER GOD.....	254
42	REMEMBER GRACE.....	262
42.1	"HURTS," "WOUNDS," AND PSYCHOLOGY.....	262
42.2	GRACE IS THE KEY TO HEALING.....	263
42.3	A REVIEW OF GRACE.....	264
43	GRACE FOR THE OFFENDED PARTY.....	265
43.1	THE HIGH COST OF FORGIVENESS.....	269
44	GRACE FOR THE OFFENDING PARTY.....	271
45	THE FAMILY AND THE SABBATH.....	274
46	THE FAMILY AND THE CHURCH.....	279
47	THE FAMILY AND GOVERNMENT.....	282
47.1	CLARIFYING ROMANS 13.....	282
48	NT CASE LAW ON MARRIAGE.....	287
48.1	THE THIRD COMMANDMENT.....	287
48.2	GOD'S RESOURCE.....	288
48.3	HONORING AUTHORITY IN THE HOME.....	289
48.4	HEADCOVERINGS.....	290
49	CASE LAW ON A WOMAN'S BEHAVIOR IN THE CHURCH.....	292
50	CASE LAW FOR WIVES IN EPHESIANS 5:22, 33.....	294
51	CASE LAW FOR HUSBANDS IN EPHESIANS 5:25-33.....	296
52	CASE LAW ON MALE / FEMALE ROLES IN THE CHURCH.....	298
53	CASE LAW FOR MEN AND WOMEN IN TITUS.....	305
53.1	SIX MARKS OF CHRISTIAN MANHOOD.....	305
53.2	SEVEN MARKS OF A CHRISTIAN WOMANHOOD.....	307
54	CASE LAW FOR WIVES IN 1 PETER 3:1-6.....	312
55	CASE LAW FOR HUSBANDS IN 1 PETER 1:7.....	317

56 HEADCOVERINGS, THE SIGN OF A FAMILY UNDER CHRIST 319
57 REFERENCES 329

Preface

We live in a confused age where perspective is hard to come by. It is the duty of grandparents to pass on to their children and grandchildren their insight into life as God has granted wisdom. Like Patrick Henry, I only have one asset to pass on to my family:

This is all the inheritance I give to my dear family. The religion of Christ will give them one which will make them rich indeed. (Patrick Henry, USA's Founding Father)

This work is a combination of Bible studies and sermons and lecture notes from Brook Stockton's seminary and pastoral ministry. It was compiled for the benefit of our five children and their families with a reasonable expectation that they will pursue a dynasty of godliness. But, it is profitable for any seeking to be a family under God.

We were blessed with the most wonderful parents any children could ask for . . . and we were privileged to have them in our lives until we were in our sixties.

We had the best parents in the whole world as we were objects of their love. We never heard them ever speak ill of their parents, and we did our best to always honor them. Now that our parents are gone to be with the Lord, our hearts ache. We wish we had done more! We heard our parents' stories dozens of times, but we would give all we own for just one more conversation with not only our own parents but also our grandparents.

We are so grateful to God for the children He gave us, and there is not a day that our children and grandchildren don't waltz across the dance floor of our minds. We were the first in our family to come to know Christ and to rear children with Bible in hand. We made more mistakes than we can count, but we also did many things right as "those who must give account." It is our hope that our adult children will pick up the mantle where we left off and to vigorously pass on the principles of godliness to their children and grandchildren. It is our prayer that they do better as Christian parents than we.

ESV Psalm 119:9 How can a young family keep its way pure? By guarding it according to your word.

Brook Stockton

Dedication

This booklet is dedicated to the most important people in our lives--people who loved us and whose marriages excelled in respect for their parents.

From the family of Brooky Ralph Stockton

Larry and Florine Stockton (parents)

Henry and Larue Stockton (grandparents)

Nevil and Gay Muncy (grandparents)

From the family of Jo Ann Hartman Stockton

Richard and Geraldine Hartman (parents)

Roman and Hazel Hartman (grandparents)

Warren and Elizabeth Althouse (grandparents)

Our parents and grandparents were a gift of God, and we are indebted to them for all that we are and have.

James 1:17 Every good gift and every perfect gift is from above, coming down from the Father of lights with whom there is no variation or shadow due to change.

1 Assault on the Family



We live in the best of times and the worst of times. It is an age of wisdom, and an age of foolishness; it is an epoch of faith, it is an epoch of unbelief; it is the season of light, it is the season of darkness; it is the spring of hope, it is the winter of despair; everything is before us, yet nothing is before us; everyone is going to heaven, everyone is going to hell; the concept of

family is strong, yet it is on the verge of being obliterated (Dickens).

We are living in a post-Christian world and in an era of neo-paganism. The concept of marriage and family is under assault in the following ways:

The Nanny State: An overprotective government seeks to be the nanny granny aggregating all power to itself, usurping the role of educator, and pirating 30% of the family income each month to insure its own survival. The depletion of the wealth of the average family is a planned strategy by the State to strengthen its own power base at the expense of family. In the mind of the Molock cult, it takes a village (the state) to raise children, not parents; that devotion to the State is more important than devotion to the family; that the State will take care of you.

The Public Fool System: The State has wrestled away the role of education from the family creating government regulated public schools—schools that have become the State’s most important indoctrination tool for Statism, secularism, democratic fascism ever invented by man. Public education and its “common core” propaganda insures and loyalty to the State above loyalty to the family. Daily, students line up to repeat, “I pledge allegiance to the United States . . .” and then receive statist propaganda about global warming, tolerance, multiculturalism, and moral relativism. The hope of America and the world is now in the hands of Christian homeschoolers.

Multiculturalism: The United States has a fanatical attachment to multiculturalism touting the nonsense that a multi-ethnic, multi-religious, multi-lingual, multi-legal society is a strength. Multiculturalism, however, is not strength, but a weakness to overcome. The building blocks of a nation are race, language, land with borders, and religious, ethical concord. No nation on earth can long survive that permits itself to be ethically, morally, and linguistically balkanized. Multiculturalism and tolerance are the message preached during a moral revolution. The institution of marriage cannot long endure which permits two-male

parents, two female parents, racial, religious integration, and female headship of the family, polygamy, or suppression of women as in the Arabic world.

Redefinition of Marriage: On July 26, 2015 the U.S. Supreme Court abrogated the Christian definition of marriage as a contractual, sexual union between one man and one woman and replaced it with lawyer “legalese” as a “union of two persons.” This twisted perversion opened up the door for same-sex civil unions—a concept designed to weaken humanity, and to destroy the institution of marriage. This decision along with *Roe v. Wade* was a declaration of war on Christianity.

Feminism: The false war announced against women is nothing more than PMS propaganda to promote lesbianism, abortion, and estrogen power. The State and its shadow government pushes gender equality, especially feminism, not in a Christian sense, but in the sense that women’s happiness is to be found outside the home and in the workplace; that employment and self-sufficiency enhance a woman’s quality of life; that a homemaker is “old fashion” and destructive to a woman’s self-worth. In reality, feminism is a propaganda tool by the State to get women into the workplace paying taxes to enrich the State. Can you say “propaganda?” Feminism destroys the concept of roles intended by Scripture when the LORD God declared the woman to be man’s helpmeet.

Gendercide: There is a powerful movement in the United States advocating “equality,” but in reality pushes gendercide. There is an assault on masculinity today wherein female educators want boys to behave like girls. Recess in some schools is denied. Boys are often diagnosed with ADD and then drugged to behave like girls. Even in Hollywood, shaved, cutesy young boys have replaced the masculine stereo types like John Wayne, Robert Redford, and Clint Eastwood.

Manhood is “pussy-whipped.” Transgenders are touted as “coming out” heroes . . . or is that heroines? A professor at Washington State University, and others, has barred students from using “offensive” words like “male” and “female.” This trend is also seen by California legislation to permit co-ed showers and gender-neutral bathrooms according to one’s “perceived gender”—a “hole-in-the-dyke” breakdown of gender segregation and the natural order of society. Such digress is being promoted as a means for military bonding between male and female cadets and the end of sexual repression. Pandering to the whims of perverts by legislators is absolutely astounding— replacement of reason with the absurd, unnatural, and unreasonable. A society that fails to recognize the differences between men and women courts the cults of chaos and commits social suicide.

Fornication: The society that tolerates promiscuity by its youth, finds itself burdened with unwed mothers, bastard children, delinquent fathers, divorced parents, young people with STD, and a host of other societal problems. The U.S. has the highest teen pregnancy rate in the world. Every single year there are twenty million cases of STD. One out of four girls in the U.S. will be sexually abused before

her eighteenth birthday. One out of five people do not get married today. And, why get marriage when a person can cohabit and have sex free. Sex without responsibility and commitment in marriage is a run-away-train that will derail its track leaving its passengers dead and wounded.

Pornography: We live in a society where the State refuses to enforce obscenity laws and the result is the demoralization of the family and its most vulnerable youth. Porn is a fiction--a virtual world of idolatrous illusions. It is a lie about women; a lie about men; a lie about sex; a lie about life; a lie about relationships; a lie about priorities; and a lie about marriage. It is not about love, but about shock, lust, and money!! Porn is not about nudity, it is about nakedness. Porn is not about sex, it is about the exploitation of sex for commercial purposes. Porn is a flight from true knowledge and a retreat from reality. Porn denies real life where there is sin, sickness, disease, suffering, heartache, and death. Pornography is the enemy of the family destroying its commitment to holiness, fidelity, and integrity. And, the industry is totally controlled by Zionists with an anti-Christ agenda.

Easy divorce: According to "Divorce Statistics," 50% of marriages end in divorce. It is just as high for casual, nominal Christian families. Twelve million families in the U.S. are headed by a single parent. Who can list all the evils that easy divorce has on the psyche of children and their supporting parent? Easy divorce with delinquent dads and feminist mothers is a Viking blow to family.

Biblical criticism: It seems we can't go a week without hearing about some attack on the Scriptures by a Biblical novice, or the removal of some Ten Commandments monument from a public foyer. A destruction of Biblical thinking and the disparagement to read the Word of God undermines the foundation of Christian civilization, especially the family and its Source of law. Children today know more about Peter Pan than they do Peter, John, James and the apostles. Families that read the Word of God together are as rare as candlelight at the dinner table.

Ignorance: The Barnum Group has found that only 9% of Christians have a Biblical worldview. This means that only one in ten so-called "Christian families" understand Biblical principles related to the family. Christians, it appears, are increasing tolerant of female-dominated homes, same-sex marriages, permissive discipline, and "worldly" pursuits of children. A family ignorant of Biblical law, authority, and Biblical ethics cannot produce holy offspring. And, the Scripture warns, "My people *and their families* are destroyed for a lack of knowledge."

These and many more "isms" at work in society through the media, public education, and T.V. are anti-family, anti-male, anti-children, anti-Christ, and anti-humanity. A family not built on the rock cannot long endure the floods of revolution and social reconstruction happening in our time. The great need today is for men to become totally Biblical, to grasp grace, and to lead their families by the light of God's Law-order.

2 Dad Goes to War

ESV Judges 3:2 It was only in order that the generations of the people of Israel might know war, to teach war to those who had not known it before.

1 Corinthians 16:13 Be watchful, stand firm in the faith, act like men, be strong.



There is a crisis of masculinity. Man killers are among us. Young men are stuck in front of computers in time-sucking hobbies like video games. Among actors, rugged men like John Wayne, Sean Connery, Gregory Peck, Burt Lancaster, and Paul Newman have been replaced by smooth faced, cutesy pajama boys. Gone are the men mining sulfur from active volcanoes; men diving dozens of feet and holding their breath for five minutes at a time to spear fish on the ocean floor; fathers teaching their sons to train eagles; fathers escorting his children on a sixty-mile journey through the snow covered Himalayas. Where have all the sweaty, sword-wielding men gone?

Women are more likely than men to graduate from high school.

Only 44% of undergraduates at community and four-year colleges are men.

Female college students have higher grade point averages than men and are more likely to graduate within four years.

According to the US Census, “Among young adults 25 to 29, 35 percent of women and 27 percent of men possessed a bachelor’s degree or more in 2009. This gap has grown considerably in the last decade: it was only 3 percentage points in 1999 (30 percent for women, 27 percent for men).”

Women are 60% more likely than men to earn a bachelor’s degree by the time they are 23.

According to the US Census, for the first time in history, more women than men are earning advanced degrees. “In the 25-29 age group, 9 percent of women and 6 percent of men held either a master’s, professional (such as law or medical) or doctoral degree.” Nearly six out of ten adults holding advanced degrees between the ages of 25 and 29 are women.

Men lost 3/4 of the 8 million jobs that disappeared during the recession.

For the first time in history, there are now more women in the workforce than men.

1/3 of men ages 22-34 still live at home with their parents. An increase of 100% in the last 20 years. According to the census, among young adults ages 18-24, 56 percent of men and 48 percent of women still live at home with their parents.

Among Christians, it fairs no better. Christian males are no longer as strong as an ox. Smooth faced, petticoat Christians dripping with candy-compliance sit cross legged, clapping their hands in Charismatic churches listening to female pastors in push-up bras talk about the pseudo war on women and how men need to attend sensitivity training classes. Gone are the men with steel-convictions stuffing cartridges of death with metal rods down muskets of fire and thunder during an enemy charge up Bunker Hill. Instead of weeping like Nehemiah over the state of Jerusalem, Christian fathers sit around the television laughing at "The Simpsons" while snacking on bite size Heart-to-Heart Boo Boo Bear Mango Peach Passion Peck Party Crunches.

And, all this during a cultural revolution wherein Sodomites, transvestites, and *yowamushi*¹ congressmen run for office to pass legislation to enroll the nation's children in sexual-identity sex education courses! Needed are Christian fathers who eat Iron-man Wheaties, fuel for champions. Needed are fathers who will turn off the idiot tube and arm themselves with Biblical gator bombs to attack the citadels of liberalism dumping sewage into the public drinking water. Needed are standalone Rambo-dads who will go to war for Christ. America doesn't need dads to join the Sodomite, female saturated military to fight against imaginary enemies in the Middle East, but to fight wars at home against domestic terrorists in the shadow government waging war against the family.

2.1 War is God's Will

Psalm 143:10 Teach me to do thy will; for thou art my God: thy spirit is good; lead me into the land of uprightness.

Psalm 144:1 Blessed be the LORD my strength, which teacheth my hands to war, and my fingers to fight:

Jeremiah 51:20 Thou art my battle axe and weapons of war: for with thee will I break in pieces the nations, and with thee will I destroy kingdoms;

1 Timothy 6:12 Fight the good fight of faith,

¹ Yowamushi (Japanese): a weakling, a sissy, a coward, a wimp with feminine characteristics having no backbone and no moral courage.

The psalmist prays, “Teach me to do your will” (Psalm 143:10). Have you ever thought that it is God’s will that you learn to fight; that the reason there are so many cultural conflicts is to teach fathers to stand up for what is right and to resist what is wrong? The ideal man in psalms is holy man with a song in his heart and a doubled edged sword in his right hand (Psalm 149:6).

Notice that David declared that it was God who taught his hands to war. It was God who taught him how to use a sling, weld a sword, and shoot a bow. When his training was complete, God's man was a trained killer. And, it is God’s will that all manly men know how to fight against the powers of darkness through persuasion and argument (Psalm 18:34).

God had a purpose for saving Israel out of Egypt and that purpose was to be a **weapon of justice**. He didn’t call them to be a honey-factory to produce sugar slap cereals. He called Israel His “battle ax.” Think of it— **God’s people a Battle Ax!** The LORD God redeemed them from Egypt, and brought them to Mount Sinai to learn His law. He organized them into a redemptive community, called up all men twenty-years of age and older and arranged them into military units as a weapon of death against the Canaanites. The Spirit declared that the knowledge of the Lord will cover the earth as the waters cover the sea (Isaiah 11:9). Our Warrior-King claims earth as His domain. He redeems men by His grace and He executes criminals by His justice. Consequently, fathers must learn war, His methods of war, and to fight the good fight of faith as His soldier (1 Timothy 6:12; 2 Timothy 2:3).

2.2 War is Not always Evil.

*Exodus 15:3 The LORD is a man of war: the LORD is his name . . .
Pharaoh's chariots and his host hath he cast into the sea: his chosen
captains also are drowned in the Red sea.*

Immediately following Israel’s deliverance at the Red Sea, Miriam burst into song commemorating the slaughter of the Egyptians. What, a woman singing about the glories of war? But, before we look at the text, imagine what it would be like to be on the eastern shores of the Red Sea. The nation had traveled between two walls of water pursued by the most powerful army in the world. When the walls of water collapsed, the entire Egyptian army drowned under the thrashing waves. Corpses of men and horses floated on the seashore to the wonder of the sons of Jacob. Stunned by the power of Almighty God, Miriam penned her song.

The experience at the Red Sea branded a new truth on their soul. Our God is a Man of War; i.e., He is a Hunter—a terrifying Adversary—a fierce Fighter—a military Assassin—a vicious, ghastly Killing Machine! The nation learned that He was greater than the taskmasters, greater than Egypt’s five-star generals, greater than Pharaoh, Commander and Chief of Egypt. He is a Sovereign, whiz-ban, brawler Boss who gets His way. Further, there is a lesson for us. We aren’t following a

docile, frilly-nilly, sugar-coated, honey-lipped, namby-pamby cream puff but a terrifying Warlord! We know him as Sweet Jesus, but Israel knew him as the Bone Crusher who "shatters His enemies" (15:6).

If God wages war against evil men, then war is not always evil. War is an instrument of cleansing society and a means of subduing rebels. War is really a Writ of Execution--an application of the death penalty on hostile governments that are in rebellion against God's law order. His wars are not just defensive, but offensive! He ordered the destruction of the Canaanites even though the Canaanites had done Israel no harm to Jacob. He ordered the priests to wage war against Midian in an offensive maneuver to decimate that ungrateful, idolatrous nation (Numbers 33; Deuteronomy 23).

The last time the word "war" is mentioned in Scripture is in relation to Jesus Christ coming on a white horse splattered with blood to wage war against rebel nations that reject his authority (Revelation 19:19). Sweet Jesus is a Warlord and He's meaner than a pair of scissors in a tailor shop. He destroys armies, humbles kings, and executes antichrists. Without sounding trite, Miriam learned *the LORD is His name and war is His game*.

But, Christian men are picking up chicken wings and potato skins at tailgate parties instead of picking up the Sword of the Lord. The model for the modern American male is one wearing a wig with his face painted in orange and white while grunting and groaning like a gorilla beating his chest for his favorite team.

2.3 God's People Must Learn the Art of War

Judges 3:1-2 Now these are the nations that the LORD left, to test Israel by them, that is, all in Israel who had not experienced all the wars in Canaan. It was only in order that the generations of the people of Israel might know war, to teach war to those who had not known it before.

The events in the Book of Judges take place during the Late Bronze Age (1500-1200 B.C.) after the second generation of Israelites entered Canaan, and gained their conquest over the territory. As that generation passed, the Lord announced that He was not going to drive out the Canaanites all at once but leave part of them in the land of Canaan so the following generations might learn war. Without war, wickedness takes root downward and mushrooms upward poisoning civilizations. Without war, God's people become effeminate, cowardly, and servile. The Lord left enemy nations in the land like a bad virus testing Israel's health; that is, testing their obedience to Him. War was the means of building a nation to be Battle-Ax for the LORD God.

We do not have two Bibles: an Old Testament Bible and a New Testament Bible. There is one Bible, and the Bible teaches us to be good soldiers of Jesus Christ and to learn the art of war.

2 Timothy 2:3 . . . endure hardness, as a good soldier of Jesus Christ.

It is the duty of Christian men to learn to obey, to use His tools of war, to fight holy battles, to know their enemy, to gain legal and military skills, to know the rules of war, to engage the enemy . . . and to know “the gates of hell shall not prevail against” his army church. Notice this text, “the gates of hell.” Before us is the church militant takin’ it to the rebels against truth and justice.

2.4 Some Things are Worse than War

*War is an ugly thing, **but not the ugliest of things.** The decayed and degraded state of moral and patriotic feeling which thinks that nothing is worth war is much worse. The person who has nothing for which he is willing to fight, nothing which is more important than his own personal safety, is a miserable creature and has no chance of being free unless made and kept so by the exertions of better men than himself.*
(John Stuart Mill, English economist & philosopher (1806 - 1873))

John Mill’s observations are absolutely correct. There is nothing more pathetic than a man who does not recognize evil in the world, who thinks all men are born good, who believes in peace at any price, and who will not stand up and fight when his family and friends are being devoured by wolves of liberalism.

2.5 Unwillingness to Fight is a Weakness to Overcome.

Exodus 13:17 And it came to pass, when Pharaoh had let the people go, that God led them not through the way of the land of the Philistines, although that was near; for God said, Lest peradventure the people repent when they see war, and they return to Egypt:

A warrior mindset is something one has to learn. It was eleven days journey along the seacoast from the Nile of Egypt to southern boundaries of Canaan. God did not lead them directly into Canaan to face hostile forces. He saw a weakness in the young nation and that was the fear of war. The sons of Jacob served Pharaoh as slaves for hundreds of years. They were ignorant, obsequious, fawning cowards. All they had ever known was servitude and obnoxious compliance to kings and taskmasters. In taking them to Canaan the short route, there was a danger the nation would buckle and retreat to Egypt if they had to fight. Surrender was not in the plan of God. Therefore, God led them toward the Red Sea and out of Egypt. He enrolled them in basic training to prepare them to be his Battle-Ax.

Even after a year of basic training in God's law, the nation held a war protest. When the spies brought back a report on the strength of the enemy, the nation cowered like doves and rebelled against their Commander. They refused to fight. God retired that generation over the next forty years. It was fight or die, and they chose to die in the wilderness.

However, after 40 years of discipline, the second generation adopted a military attitude. They crossed the Jordan, marched on Jericho, engaged the enemy, whacked off heads, erected a monument to declare the new law of the land. The rest is history.

2.6 War is Necessary

Psalm 110:1 The LORD said unto my Lord, Sit thou at my right hand, until I make thine enemies thy footstool.

Psalm 139:19-24 Surely thou wilt slay the wicked, O God: depart from me therefore, ye bloody men. For they speak against thee wickedly, and thine enemies take thy name in vain. Do not I hate them, O LORD, that hate thee? and am not I grieved with those that rise up against thee? I hate them with perfect hatred: I count them mine enemies. Search me, O God, and know my heart: try me, and know my thoughts: And see if there be any wicked way in me, and lead me in the way everlasting.

Psalm 21:8-13 Thine hand shall find out all thine enemies: thy right hand shall find out those that hate thee. Thou shalt make them as a fiery oven in the time of thine anger: the LORD shall swallow them up in his wrath, and the fire shall devour them. Their fruit shalt thou destroy from the earth, and their seed from among the children of men. For they intended evil against thee: they imagined a mischievous device, which they are not able to perform. Therefore shalt thou make them turn their back, when thou shalt make ready thine arrows upon thy strings against the face of them. Be thou exalted, LORD, in thine own strength: so will we sing and praise thy power.

God has ordained death and destruction upon His enemies. No! God has not called Christians "get along," or to create a truce while pagans reign in the land. When sweet Jesus said, "Think not that I am come to send peace on earth: I came not to send peace, but a sword" (Matthew 10:34), he corrected bad thinking and wrong theology. How can there be peace in the middle of a cultural revolution dominated by godless minds and immoral feminists?

David was not a liberal idealist that believed men were born good. He did not bifurcate sin from the man or "to love the sinner and to hate the sin." He knew there was evil in the world; that evil was not in the environment, but in men. He

understood that wicked men existed, rose to power, and used their positions to steal property and to crush God's people. He calls them the "wicked" in this verse--rebels against God's law order; sinners eating from the fruit of the Poisonous Tree. Because David had aligned himself with God's law order, God's enemies became his enemies. He hated them. Hate is a virtue when your enemies are also God's enemies.

Psalm 139:21 Do I not hate those who hate you, O LORD?

War is the business of God's people. Both the saving of life and the taking of life is a duty of man. While love is an answer to some things, it is not the answer to all things. While grace can save the sinner, the proper use of the death penalty can save society from evil men. God did not permit a class of delinquents to develop in the nation. He did not send them to prison for rehabilitation. He ordered lawbreakers to be killed. In this way, society was cleansed of professional criminals. War is nothing more than the mass application of the death penalty upon a nation of evildoers. Kill enough of 'em and the rest will submit. War, therefore, is necessary because it purges society of lawbreakers. War is necessary because men do not appreciate that which they do not have to sweat for, work for, and bleed for.

I must study politics and war that my sons may have liberty to study mathematics and philosophy. ~ John Adams

But, the war Christian men are involved in is not physical but spiritual. Our Warlord wants to make Christian fathers into a Battle-Ax for the gospel, to attack the gates of hell, and to wage war wherever Satan is attacking truth.

2.7 Grapes of Wrath

Isaiah 5:3-5; 5:8-6:5 Judge between me and my vineyard . . . I expected grapes but it produced worthless ones . . . now let me tell you what I am going to do to my vineyard. I will remove its hedge . . . and it will be crushed . . . trampled to the ground . . . Woe, Woe, Woe, Woe, Woe, Woe, Woe.

Luke 19:27 But those mine enemies, which would not that I should reign over them, bring hither, and slay them before me.

Isaiah described judgment as the grapes of wrath—a day of justice, a day of darkness and death.

Jesus told a parable about rebels that refused His authority. Notice His remedy: "Bring them hither and slay them before me." King Jesus ordered the execution of rebels. That order will be carried out now in time or later in eternity. Sweet Jesus is the Hangman that executes His adversaries. Good governments acknowledge their

duties under King Jesus to be a terror to evildoers. But, evil government rulers will stand trial and face his terrible swift sword as their Executioner.

The lesson for fathers is that God does not want men to be silent, but men engaged in the fight for truth and justice against all ungodliness.

2.8 Pass the Salt

Matthew 5:13 You are the salt of the earth; if salt loses its taste, what is there left to give taste to it? There is no more to be done with it, but throw it out of doors for men to tread it under foot.

Christians are engaged in a battle of ideas. Whose ideas will prevail—the ideas of Zionists or the ideas of Christianity? Likewise, this war involves a fight for morality. Whose morals will rule society: the morals of evolutionary atheists or the morality of Christianity? Since all morals are based on religion, we are in a great conflict about whose religion will govern society: the religion of humanists or the faith of Christianity?

The Scripture informs us that God is a Warrior; that the earth shall be filled with the knowledge of the Lord as the waters cover the sea; that Christ came not to bring peace, but a sword; that He entered this world to conquer men and to bring them into his Kingdom; that his church is his Battle Ax at the gates of hell. Jude taught us to earnestly contend for the faith. We get the word "agonize" from the Greek word for "earnestly contend." Paul ordered the Colossians to be alert and to make sure believers were not entrapped by intellectual movements circulating in their day. Paul observed a weakness in Christians—a sappy tolerance of philosophies opposed to the gospel. **When Christians prefer peace instead of war, they become shockingly servile to God's enemies!** (Isaiah 11:9; Matthew 10:34; Jude 1:2; Colossians 2:8).

There was a time when the true Catholic Church venerated the martyrs . . . those that refused to bow to the will of the state and the State's demand for total devotion . . . those that were called treasonous to Caesar . . . those that paid the ultimate price of imprisonment, confiscation of property, and even death. The early church commemorated those believers who were mercilessly killed by the maniacal Caesars and called them "saints." Martyrdom was held in high esteem in the Christian community. But, no so today! The most popular Christians are the ones with the most toys, most money, and most ignorance of the gospel.

Did you know that when Christians were baptized in the early church, that the bishop placed a **pinch of salt** on the tongue of each new convert? Salt reminded the communicants that they needed to be salt, not sugar; that life was hard; that because they are salt they may be called to die for the gospel? (Kenneth S. Latourette, A History of Christianity, Volume I).

Today, Christians have more sugar than a chocolate factory. Because Christians have been eating too many Whooper Kaboom Sugar Bombs for breakfast, they have lost their “snap, crackle, pop” in gospel proclamation. Government officials are no longer threatened by the Christian community. Why? Because Christian men are longer men trained to be God's Battle-Ax.

In conclusion, evil exist in this world and war is a means of restraining evildoers. Until His kingdom arrives in its fullness, the church militant must learn the art of war, and engage rebels against God’s law-order. This involves winning souls, fighting for the faith once delivered to the saints, resisting civil rulers who do mischief through law, and it may even mean having to defend family and friends from a physical assault. Fear of war and unwilling to fight is disobedience and must be repented of. Our God is a Warlord. It is His will that fathers learn the art of war and be His Battle Ax against the gates of hell.

3 What Does a Healthy Family Look Like?



There is an old proverb that goes something like this: “For want of a nail, the shoe was lost; for want of a shoe, the horse was lost; for want of a horse, the rider was lost, for want of a rider, the message was lost; for want of a message, the battle was lost.”

The meaning of the proverb is that failure to correct a small dysfunction leads to more egregious outcome. The failure to know and apply God’s Word to the family can have critical results; that is, it is essential to apply the nails of truth so one can have a successful family.

Would you recognize a healthy family if you even saw one? What does a healthy family look like?

Consider, the following as the marks of a Biblical family.

First, a family under God is marked by its honor for parents.

A godly family contains adult children who vigorously love and respect their father and mother. In fact, this is the first duty learned in the godly home. This is *a positive command* and there are *no limits* to the amount of honor adult children are to shower on parents.

Exodus 20:12 Honor thy father and thy mother: that thy days may be long upon the land which the LORD thy God giveth thee.

*Leviticus 19:2 Speak to all the congregation of the people of Israel and say to them, **You shall be holy**, for I the LORD your God am holy. **Every one of you shall revere his mother and his father**, and you shall keep my Sabbaths: I am the LORD your God.*

Honoring parents is the first duty listed in the call to holiness. It is the key signature of fearing God, and it is closely associated with keeping the "First-Day Sabbath".² Is there a religious duty more important than keeping the Sabbath? Yes, there is--the duty to honor one's parents. Notice that honoring parents appears *first in the list* of directives on the highway of holiness.

² First-Day Sabbath is mentioned in 1 Corinthians 16:1-2.

Honor must be applied even to flawed parents, and all are. A cloudy day is not midnight, and a day without sunshine is still day; i.e. imperfect parents are still parents worthy of honor. And, God commands it so!

Honoring parents is a requisite listed by Jesus for one who desires to enter the kingdom of God. Do you want to go to heaven? "Honor your father and mother," said Jesus.

*Matthew 19:17-19 If you would enter life, keep the commandments . . .
Honor your father and mother . . .*

Honoring parents is the only direct instruction given by the Apostle Paul to children:

Ephesians 6:1-2 Children, obey your parents in the Lord, for this is right. "Honor your father and mother" (this is the first commandment with a promise)

Notice that the duty to, "Honor your Father and Mother," is right! That is, *honoring parents is always the correct course*. It is right because it conforms to law. Further, it is the first commandment with a promise. Honor is the key to health and long life. When a man fails to honor his parents, he signs his own death warrant. Death enters the man and his family. Contempt, slur, and maltreatment are fruits from the Poisonous Tree offered by the hissing snake.

So important is honoring parents that a trespass of this law was second only to murder. Cursing is the first step toward murder and it called for the death penalty; that is, there is zero toleration for muckraking a parent. Just to stay alive in Israel, one had to "bite his lip" and show respect to his father and mother.

Exodus 21:15 "Whoever strikes³ his father or his mother shall be put to death.

Exodus 21:17 "Whoever curses⁴ his father or his mother shall be put to death.

³ Striking would be a blow designed to kill or seriously injure a parent. Slapping, striking, punching a parent called for the death penalty. In many cases, the weapon of choice is slander and contumely; that is, verbal or written defamatory statements designed to do as much emotional damage as possible. A six-inch tongue can slay a six foot man.

⁴ The word "curse" in Hebrew means "to belittle," "strike with words," "to treat lightly," or "with contempt" (Strong's). The word is first translated in Genesis 8:8, 11 referring to the water level subsiding during a flood. It means to "bring down," or "cut down," or "belittle." Slander, public defamation, libel, aspersion, calumny bring down a parent and called for the death penalty.

Exodus 20:7 Honor . . . that thy days may be long upon the land which the LORD thy God giveth thee.

Deuteronomy 5:16 Honor thy father and thy mother, as the LORD thy God hath commanded thee; that thy days may be prolonged, and that it may go well with thee.

Heaven contains one Son who obeyed His Father unto death. The greatest Son of all could say, "*I honor my father. . . for I always do the things that are pleasing to him;*" and, the Father could say of him, "*This is my beloved Son, listen to Him.*" At the cross there was a covenant transaction taking place that only the Father and the Son could fully understand. Nailed to a tree, a Son honored his Father and proved his love. "*For this reason the Father loves me, because I lay down my life that I may take it up again*" and "*but I do as the Father has commanded me, so that the world may know that I love the Father . . .*" (John 8:29, 49; Luke 9:35; John 10:17).

Second, a family under God is marked by a fear of God.

*Exodus 20:20 And Moses said unto the people, Fear not: for **God** is come to prove you, and that his fear may be before your faces, that ye sin not.*

Leviticus 19:32 You shall stand up before the gray head and honor the face of an old man, and you shall fear your God: I am the LORD.

Jeremiah 5:22 Should you not fear me?" declares the Lord. "Should you not tremble in my presence?"

*The fear of God is actually the first law of the home. It is second here only in the sense that respect for parents is learned by younger children before they learn the fear of God. The fear of God is a family's greatest asset: honor of parents is next. In Hebrew, the word for fear is *yirah*, and it means "reverent fear, terror, or dread." It is normally translated as "fear." The word "tremble" above is the Hebrew word *chuwל*, and it means to "twist, whirl, dance, writhe, travail, and be in anguish." In the NT the Greek word for "fear" is *phobia*. To dilute these words to some form of half-baked respect destroys true worship. When Dorothy et al. met the Great Wizard of Oz, legs shook, knees knocked, and the lion sprinted away and jumped through a glass window. This is fear and God . . . the fear of "Him who, after He has killed, has authority to cast into hell . . ." (Luke 12:5).*

A healthy family knows that the LORD "judges the peoples." It is led by a man who knows he is responsible to live under God's law. If fathers cease to believe in the wrath and judgment of God, and discard law and righteousness, their moral standards gradually deteriorate and conduct becomes lax and loose. Because the head of the family recognizes God as the one to whom he is responsible and under whose eye he lives, a sense of discipline and order appear in all relationships of life.

A father who lives out obedience is concerned that his children obey him and that they also learn to fear the LORD God. Respect for parents is birthed by the fear of God (Judgment: John 3:3; 8:24; Romans 2:5; 12:19; 2 Corinthians 5:10; Hebrews 9:27; Revelation 20:11-15).

The whole idea that children will respond to reason and positive appeals without fear of punishment is a product of New Age optimism. A home without the fear of God degenerates into chaos because there is no understanding of law and order. A father who neglects God and disobeys God's law will have children that neglect him and disobey his law. When permissiveness replaces discipline, children cease to respect their parents and soon become tyrants who take over the home. Law and order is replaced by the law of the jungle where every member of the family does "what is right in their own eyes" (Judges 21:25).

In contrast to beer-bellied men stuffing themselves with pretzels around some sports program on Sunday arguing about whether Coors Light tastes great or is less filling, God's man is concerned about how he might better lead his family in obedience to risen Savior. He fears God because of His judgments; He loves God because He sent His Son to "save his people from their sins" (Matthew 1:21). Fear responds to judgment and power; love responds to virtue and goodness. The love of God is his passion; the fear of God his motivation. A cold grief chills his soul because he is not more Christ-like and that he has to live among idolaters addicted to amusements. He aches over the arrogance of secular men leading the nation, and the bitter, foul-mouthed women with whom he has to associate. The iron weight of rearing children in a society filled with lusty, pelvic driven teenagers presses upon his gentle spirit. How to be a man of steel and velvet, a more gentle husband, and a wise father is the whirlwind storming in his heart and mind.

A man under authority of the LORD God and His Law-word, he accepts the dominion mandate to lead his family. He is far from perfect, but a cloak of manly virtue enhances the home and the law of wisdom is upon his lips.

Third, a family under God is marked by a Bible-based, Christ-centered home.

Psalm 119:97 Oh how I love your law! It is my meditation all the day.

Psalm 119:99 I have more understanding than all my teachers, for your testimonies are my meditation.

The man under God shoulders the responsibility to sacrificially love his wife as Christ loved the Church and to bring up his children in the nurture and admonition of the Lord. With cannons packed with thunder and death, he soldiers the duty to defend his family against enemies set on fire by hell. A master builder, he lays line upon line, brick upon brick, so his children can learn about their Creator, His world, and their duties to God and man. A worn Bible sits at the family table. Day and

night prayers vibrate within the walls of this Christian home. His family motto reads, *Cruci Dum Spiro Fido*, "as long as I breathe, I will remember the cross."

Fourth, a family under God is marked by tangible acts of honor for parents and grandparents.

Respect is not silent and invisible. Honor can be seen and heard among adult children who fear God. The faces of adult children light up when parents enter the room. Everything stops until all honor the presence of Mom and Dad, Nana and Grandpa. T.V. is turned off. Cell phones are shut down. Cooking waits. Chatter ceases. Teenagers get off the couch. Patriarchs are in the home. A king and queen are present. Nothing is more important in God's economy than showing honor to parents! Nothing!

Fifth, the family under God contains a husband and a wife that honor one another:

Ephesians 5:33 However, let each one of you love his wife as himself, and let the wife see that she **respects** (*phobeomai*) her husband.

1 Peter 3:7 Likewise, husbands, live with your wives in an understanding way, showing **honor** to the woman as the weaker vessel

...

The man is called "to honor" his wife; and the wife is called to "fear" her husband. In a Christian home, the wife is treated like a royal queen, and the husband like a king. The law of kindness is on their tongue, and sympathy and affection warm the home on chilly nights. God's law-order defines right and wrong, and love is expressed by keeping the Ten Commandments. Dignity and honor hold hands at every family gathering. The family under God said Tertullian, "pray together, they worship together, instructing one another, strengthening one another." Law defines love; love heats the home; peace reigns among siblings.

Sixth, the family under God is marked by honor for others.

Romans 12:10 Love one another with brotherly affection. Outdo one another in showing honor

John 5:2 By this we know that we love the children of God, when we love God and obey his commandments.

The honor mom and dad show each other and to their parents become a model for their children. The healthy home is marked by love and respect for others, especially older people.

Leviticus 19:32 "You shall stand up before the gray head and honor the face of an old man, and you shall fear your God: I am the LORD.

1 Timothy 5:3 Honor widows who are truly widows.

The Chinese and Japanese and Koreans have it correct. They stand up in the presence of the aged, bow in the presence of the elderly, and address them with respectful titles. Sometimes elderly people have nothing else in life to cling to but their honor. Under God's rule, the aged may be poor, but they are rich in honor. This is health. This is the model family. This is the goal of all education and training: honor, honor, and honor. It is the key to a long life and the first commandment with a promise.

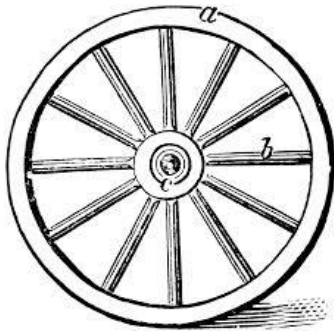
In conclusion, a family under God is marked by the fear of God and honor for parents. Notice the connection between honoring parents with Lordship and Sabbath-keeping in Leviticus 19:1-3. Further, notice that honor is expected in the home because the command comes from the LORD God. The Lord anticipated that men would love Him so much they would want to know how they could please Him. So, God told them: "Honor your mother and father." This is the first duty of adult Christians. In a Christ-centered home, the sweet fragrance of honor for parents and grandparents waft through the house to the delight of all.

*Leviticus 19:3 Every one of you shall revere his mother and his father, and you shall keep my Sabbaths: I am the LORD your **God**.*

Think of our original proverb. The loss of a nail in the shoe of horse caused the battle to be lost. Likewise, there are nails of truth that are essential for the godly parent to have nailed in their home. What are they? A man who fears God leads the family. Governed by parents honoring their parents, honor fills the home like the aroma of fresh baked bread. This is what you will find in a family under God.

4 The Most Important Question

What is your Contingency?



4.1 The First Question

When I meet a man, I want to know what makes him tick? What turns his crank? Do his eyes pop when you talk about sports or money, politics or religion, movies or Scripture?

What is the contingency? The word “contingency” refers to the hub in the center of the wheel around which a man organizes his life. All law, meaning, and purpose flow out a man’s contingency whether his contingency is self-centered or God-centered; whether his contingency is pleasure or power, the State⁵ or religion?

What is a man's contingency? That is the great question. Does He follow his emotions or the Christian faith? Is he building a child-centered home or a Christ-centered family? Is his mind filled with psychology or Scripture? Is he an autonomous man following his own law order or has he accepted the yoke and surrendered to God's law-order? What is a man's contingency? This is the great question!

4.2 The Contingency of a Biblical Family

The whole of Scripture teaches man to fear God because of His judgments and to love God because of his justice and mercy.

Note the connection between fear and love in Deuteronomy 6:1-6. Fear Him because life and death are in the power of His hand; love him because of the beauty of His holiness. The Lord taught fathers and mothers, sons and daughters, to pray, *"Hallowed be Thy Name; Thy kingdom⁶ come; Thy will be done in our family as it is in heaven."* The ultimate concern of a Christian man is that all his friends and neighbors might honor and respect the name of the Father; that all men might recognize His authority and surrender to Him now!

⁵ State: Use of the word State in this work refers to the commercial corporations called "government." It does not refer to the people or the land or to the citizens of a nation.

⁶ The kingdom of God is not a place, but a jurisdiction: rule, authority, sovereignty. It is the rule of God in and through the Lord Jesus Christ.

4.3 The Contingency of Modern Man

The contingency of marriage for modern man is not law, but romantic love. While the American male is expected to be sexier than socks on a rooster, the model American woman in *Cosmopolitan Magazine* is portrayed as having more passion and less clothes than Cleopatra at a Roman orgy. Drug enhancing commercials that stir the lion within are produced ad nauseam. Sex sells and anyone not interested in sexual sophistication is considered a novice and an amateur.

With sexual love as the contingency of marriage, there is a growing contempt against Biblical couples who are happily married because they have Christ at the center of their relationship. While Biblical sex is associated with a healthy marriage, liberal man divorces sex from marriage and law from love. Whenever the autonomous man directs its fury against the Christian family, it fires its cannons of antinomianism and anarchism at the foundation of a man's castle. By preaching the gospel of romantic love, the statist⁷ weakens and divides the family in order to hold up the State as the parent of us all. The divorced feminist with a beef against men looks to the State as her husband and means of support.

In the modern society, love is seen as the medicine that cures all ills. Love, we are told, is the panacea for all relational problems, the glue that builds a marriage, the absence of which breaks the family. It is clear that modern man believes in this magical pixie dust called "love." Furthermore, to the statist, love can be found outside of marriage. It is not marriage that is important, but finding love. And, if one can find romantic love outside of marriage, by all means seize it.

Even in Christian families, love is seen as the fire that heats the home. Law is seen as stogy and legalistic, and, therefore, separated from love. Grace, they say, is the rule of our home. It is a modern heresy that holds the law of God has no meaning and effect in the home--a product of social evolutionary influence of permissive humanism upon the family. The strength of a man is not in his good feelings, but in the absoluteness of his God. To study the Scripture without applying law to the family is to deny it. The opposite of law is not grace, but lawlessness; and, the opposite of grace is not law, but licentiousness and permissiveness. Pitting grace against law is a fruit of the Poisonous Tree.

While the Bible has a place for love in the family, it does not permit magical love to become so nuclear that it replaces a godly law-order and discipline. More than love, a family needs a canon of right and wrong. A father may love his children, but what

⁷ Statist: a person who believes the State is more important than the individual and that all happiness and prosperity is dependent on government; i.e., cult worship of the worship of the State,, not in theory, but in practice. Statists see government as the highest authority on earth and see no higher law to which man is accountable; that is, for all practical purposes, government is a god.

use is that love if he is not at home or does not instruct his children in the admonitions of the Lord? And, what value is there in a mother's love that over feeds, over protects, and over indulges her children?

Just as a river needs banks to guide its course, children need law as well as love; discipline and structure as well as food and clothing.

Biblical love cannot be separated from law for "*love is the fulfilling of the law.*" Love without law destroys the landscape of the family. The family can prosper if its foundations are solid. Love without law can't even be defined. If Romantic love is what binds marriage together, then the marriage will end with the death of those feelings; but, if God's law-order is the contingency upon which the family is organized, then the family will remain together during the droughts and famines of marital life for the glory of God (Romans 13:8; 1 John 5:1-2).

4.4 The Contingency of Habakkuk

Habakkuk 2:4 "Behold, his soul is puffed up; it is not upright within him, but the righteous shall live by his faith.

Seeing the disorder in his nation, Habakkuk prayed to the Lord. He received an answer that God was going to use the Chaldeans to judge his nation. The explanation puzzled the prophet wherein God appealed to the seer agreeing that the souls of the Chaldeans were bloated with pride having a contingency built on inflated self. The text informs us that the soul of the proud and self-reliant are not right within them. Further, the text reveals the just shall walk by faith. The LXX translates it, "the just shall walk by faith in me." The verb "walk" (*bamunto*) means "just, steadfast, and faithful." But, it also means "to touch, take hold of, and to cleave to." I don't know about you, but whenever I am on a boat in the middle of a storm, I cling to the rail. God was describing the contingency of the man who lives before Him. He is a man that clings to the LORD God.

4.5 The Contingency of John the Baptist

The Old Testament (OT) begins with a blessing for mankind and the first family. It ends with a curse upon the earth--a curse that either will be preceded by or prevented by the coming of "Elijah the prophet" who "*will turn the hearts of fathers to their children and the hearts of children to their fathers.*" (Genesis 1:26; Malachi 4:6).

Jesus declared that John the Baptist was the prophet who came in the power and spirit of Elijah. OT history ends with a snapshot of a dying civilization filled with self-centered delinquent fathers and self-centered, autonomous sons seeking their own amusements. But, there is hope. God promised that a prophet was coming--a prophet that would intervene, reverse the effects of sin upon the family by transforming the hearts of fathers and sons. John the Baptist appears on the

battlefield of ideas rifling his message of the kingdom of God⁸. He challenges fathers and sons to repent and rebuild their life upon God's law-order. A movement was born wherein fathers began to develop a new contingency ordered around Christ and his kingdom law (Matthew 11:13; Matthew 3:1-12; 5:17).

4.6 The Contingency of the Magi

When the Father introduced His Son to Joseph who was engaged to Mary, He revealed the contingency of Christ, "*He shall save his people from their sins.*" A "*King is born*" declared the Magi--a King upon which all of civilization will be built. "We have come to *kiss his hand*," they announced (Matthew 1:21; Matthew 2:2).

4.7 The Contingency of Christ

In the temptation of Christ, Satan ordered the Son to turn stones into bread. He even offered Christ the "*kingdoms of the world*" if he would accept the contract and form an alliance with the Prince of Evil. But, our Lord refused instructing Satan that there is only one lawful foundation upon which man should build his life:

Matthew 4:4 But he answered and said, It is written, Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.

*Matthew 4:10 Then saith Jesus unto him, Get thee hence, Satan: for it is written, **Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve.***

Though Jesus was a Hebrew from the Tribe of Judah, He was not a Jew. Further, He did not seek to develop a contingency around Judaism. All throughout our Lord's ministry, he challenged the Jews, fathers and mother, sons and daughters, to form a new gestalt configured around the rule of God--not Pharisaical tradition. "*Repent,*" of your personal autonomy and religious apostasy He ordered. Pray, "*Thy kingdom come; Thy will be done*" in the family and society; that is, that fathers and sons would recognize the rule of God and surrender to its authority now; that men would "*seek first the kingdom of God and his law-righteousness*" i.e., that they would acknowledge the reign of the LORD God and surrender to His law-order in this life now. Jesus, not Judaism, is King.

He urged people to "*take my yoke upon you and learn from me*" which is to say, "turn from your self-centeredness and accept My rule and My law (Matthew 11:29). Develop a new contingency around My authority as Lord and Master." Further, Christ warned his disciples about building a contingency upon "*sand*" instead of the

⁸ Remember, the kingdom of God is first and foremost the "rule of God" organized around His law.

"rock" of His Word; or, upon Judaism, a.k.a. "*the leaven of Pharisees*;" or, the legal redaction of Jewish lawyers. The Gospel of Matthew ends with the phenomenal announcement that all authority has been granted unto Christ wherein He ordered His followers to go forth and to organize the nations' families around the dominion mandate under the authority of the Triune God (Matthew 4:17; 6:10; 6:33; 11:28, 29). Matthew 7:24, 25: 15:1ff; 16:1-6; 23:1ff; 28:29ff; Genesis 1:26-28).

4.8 The Contingency of Peter

Due to the historical wonder of the risen Christ sitting in session at the right hand of God, Peter challenged man's idolatrous view of the State saying there is no State government upon which salvation and blessing comes to mankind other than upon the glorious reign of the Lord Jesus Christ:

Acts 4:12 Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved.

According to the German historian, Ethelbert Stauffer, the religious principle of the Roman Empire, from the days of Augustus on, was salvation by Caesar:

"Salvation is to be found in none other save Augustus, and there is no other name given to men in which they can be saved."

This helps us to understand the boldness of St. Peter, and the total power he declared rested in Christ. When Peter preached that Jesus was Lord, he declared war on Rome!

War between Christ and Caesar, the Christians and Rome, was thus inevitable. The state and its emperors claimed to offer salvation. Peter and the church declared that salvation was only in Christ.

St. Peter faced a hostile nation whose hope of salvation was in freedom from Rome. Thus the Zealots of Israel had a large popular following. Salvation for them meant a revived Jewish political order. For the Roman overlords and their followers, salvation meant Caesar's plan for the world.

St. Peter ruled out, not only all other religions, but all the political schemes by government rulers for salvation with his blunt words: "*Neither is there salvation in any other.*" Christ is unique, and His salvation is exclusive. He is THE way, the ONLY way! Peter made emphatically clear, ". . . *there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved.*" There is no other contingency upon which a man can rest for salvation.

This means that arrogant political saviors cannot provide redemption for the family, only ruin. Politicians only offer the illusion of hope and change. "Yes, we can" is nothing but political blabber. Truth is exclusive. It is founded on Christ the Solid

Rock, not upon the quick sand of political humbug. Government is not God. Families sucking on government pabulum will be anorexic and famished.

Thus, as the State offers Americans political and religious saviors, we must stand with St. Peter and declare: None other name! (CA Farmer 241:5 (Oct. 5, 1974), p. 28).

We are again in the age of Caesars, of political saviors offering hope and change.

All over the world, politicians proclaim their plans of salvation. The cornerstone of their building is man. "Look unto me," declare the politicians, "Vote for me and be saved." It takes a "village" to raise a family says Hillary Clinton. And, by this she meant that man needs big government to be saved--a heresy for sure and declaration of war against God's law-order.

Modern Christians, by their devotion to the State, have fallen into the pagan error that the State is a god . . . and only the State can save us politically, economically, and socially. They don't do this verbally, but pragmatically. They will pay their taxes to the State and obey its statutes before they tithe to the LORD God and obey His Word. This is statism, and statism is idolatry plain and simple.

4.9 The Contingency of Paul

In Acts 17:1-7, the Thessalonian rabble loyal to Rome accused Paul's missionary team of "*turning the world upside down*," by rebelling against the decrees of Caesar and advocating a contingency based on another King, Jesus (Acts 17:6-7).

Paul indicted pagan society for organizing civilization around a false contingency: "*They worshipped the creature rather than the Creator.*" He declared that only Christ could be the hub in the middle of the wheel by virtue of "*his resurrection from the dead*," and, that if any man would accept his Lordship and develop a contingency around the ascended Christ, that he would be saved (Romans 1:21ff; 1:4; 10:9,10).

He condemned men who were off-center and whose hub was organized around personalities, Judaism, and religious rites. "*Stand fast*," he ordered. Don't be entangle with Judaism, "*the yoke of slavery!*" Peace and mercy are only for those whose gestalt is built upon the "new creation." For those men who organize their families around this gospel, they are the true "*Israel of God.*" ***Christians, not Jews, are the true people of God*** (1 Corinthians 3:1-5; Galatians 5:1-2; 2:20; 6:13-16).

In Colossians 2:8-10 the apostle begged the Colossians to be alert and to make sure that none of the church families would be taken "*captive by philosophy and empty deceit.*"

A "*philosophy*" is an intellectual movement that offers another contingency other than Christ and the cross as a foundation for existence.

Energetic Judaizers, Greek Stoics, and Epicureans offered persuasive arguments that real power was connected to self-actualized experiences by engaging their cultic rituals; that man could find happiness and peace organizing his family around their religious speculations. Paul reminded the Colossians that the only contingency on which to build a family was upon the Lord Jesus Christ "*who is the head of all rule and authority.*"

"*For me to live is Christ,*" preached the apostle (Colossians 2:8-10; Galatians 2:20)

If Paul so strongly warned the families at Colossi about being captured by the intellectual movements in their day, what would he say to modern American men who have organized their families around T.V., sports, and fast cars? Or those who have a contingency around Judaism, or Papism, or Jesuitism, or pop psychology, or evolution, or secularism, or statism, or Marxism, or feminism, or pragmatism, or Zionism, Judaism, or capitalism, or constitutionalism, neo-liberalism, environmentalism, secular statism, or all the other movements contrary to the cross of Christ?

In conclusion, the great question is, "What is the contingency around which a man organizes his marriage and family?" In contrast to paganism which worship amusements, the Lord Jesus taught, "*You shall worship the Lord your God and him only shall you serve.*" (Matthew 4:10).

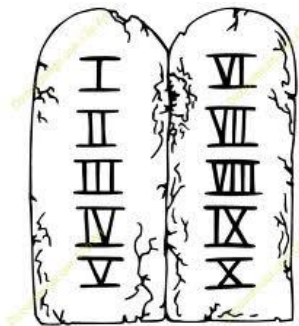
The great mandate of Scripture is that the kingdom citizen order his life around God's law.

Our Lord taught fathers and mothers, sons and daughters, to develop a contingency around the honor of God, the rule of God, and the will of God. Any other foundation is built on sinking sand.

When a Christian dad prays, "Hallowed be Thy Name; Thy kingdom come; Thy will be done in our family as it is in heaven," he is declaring war against the status quo. He is praying for a society who's families build a contingency around the kingdom of God and His law-order.

5 The Family and the Ten Commandments

Deuteronomy 5:16; 6:6-7 'Honor your father and your mother, as the LORD your God commanded you, that your days may be long, and that it may go well with you in the land that the LORD your God is giving you And these words⁹, which I command thee this day, shall be in thine heart: And thou shalt teach them diligently unto thy children, and shalt talk of them when thou sittest in thine house, and when thou walkest by the way, and when thou liest down, and when thou risest up.



Discover the law that governs the home and you will discover the god of that home, for gods are the source of law (Rushdoony).

Without a doubt, Western Civilization and its progress has looked to God's law-order for guidance in establishing its institutions. Christian families taught their children the Ten Commandments and ordered them to memorize them. But, not so today. Not only does society show contempt for the Commandments, but antinomianism rules Christian families. In the name of "love," God's law order has been abandoned in favor of open-minded permissiveness.

5.1 War on the Ten Commandments

In late October, 2014 a man drove his car into a six foot granite monument of the Ten Commandments located on the Oklahoma Capitol grounds to demolish it. According to Associated Press, "He claimed he got out of his car, urinated on the monument, and then ran over it and destroyed it," "He said Satan told him to do it, and that he was a Satanist." No doubt Satan did! The man's act was a symbolic statement that he did not want to be ruled by the Ten Commandments; that anarchy was preferable to the rule of law. What the man did privately was only an

⁹ The *words* refer to Deuteronomy 6:1 "Now this is the **commandment, the statutes** and **the rules** that the LORD your God commanded me to teach you, that you may do them in the land to which you are going over, to possess it,"

expression of a larger movement in America by the Jewish¹⁰ led ACLU¹¹ to abolish the influence of Christian law in America.

With the fury of a madman, this Herculean hatred of God's law-order has been unleashed on Christian families and their societies. So much so, the average Christian family can say the Pledge of Allegiance and sing the National Anthem, but can't quote the Ten Commandments.

The failure of Christian families to arrange their affairs by God's law-order is a product of more than a little evil. Divorce among Christians is as high in the church as it is among pagans. Today's Christian children are just as likely to rebel against their parents, fornicate, get drunk, and be on drugs as the non-Christian world.

The great question for the Christian man is, "What law is going to govern my home? My own feelings, the statutes issued by State legislatures and the Federal government, or the Ten Commandments and relevant case law?"

5.2 The Grand Purpose of the Ten Commandments

1. The Ten Commandments (the Law) are about a man's contingency.

In contrast to paganism which worship the works of their hands, the Lord Jesus taught, "You shall worship the Lord your God and him only shall you serve." (Matthew 4:10). The great commission of Scripture is that good men order their lives around the King and His law-order.

2. The Ten Commandments are law for the Family.

Isaiah 33:22 For the LORD is our judge, the LORD is our lawgiver, the LORD is our king; he will save us.

The Ten Commandments are the foundation of the Common Law: *Don't injure people; don't destroy property.* They are good for your family because they are good for all families. They are what you want your neighborhood to look like. When every member in the family follows God's law-order, peace reigns. Everyone is safe.

The Great Apostasy of our age has been the abandonment of the Ten Commandments in favor of the democratic man. Americans are more likely to see

¹⁰ In this work the term "liberal" or "Jewish" or "Zionists" or "statists" or "communist" or "socialist" or "shadow government" or "ACLU" or "New World Order" are synonymous.

¹¹ Of the nine(9) senior executives of the American Civil Liberties Union, four(4) are Jews. This is a numerical representation of 44%. Jews are approximately 2% of the U.S. population.* Therefore Jews are over-represented among the senior executives of the American Civil Liberties Union by a factor of 22 times(2,200 percent) (Wordpress.com. 2014).

the Source of Law in “WE THE PEOPLE” rather than the LORD God. The average person is more fearful of driving too fast and getting a traffic ticket than he is of breaking God’s Commandments and facing His judgment.

3. The Ten Commandments are for the State.

God's Law is not only good for the Christians, it is good for all men and all of man's institutions. Christ is King, and all nations have a duty to surrender to His law-order. Not only are men not to steal, governments are not to steal under color of law. Not only are men not to lie, the State is under command not to bear false witness, defraud, and propagandize the people. The Law is for civil rulers. There are no double standards. Citizens and their rulers are responsible to obey the Ten Commandments. Further, because civil rulers are given the duty to enforce God's law-order, they have the duty to set up de jure courts and administer justice.

But, nations are hostile to God's law-order. In the Judge Roy Moore Case (2003), Justice Moore was ordered by a federal judge to remove the Ten Commandment Monument from the Alabama Court Complex . . . not because of the Ten Commandment Monument, but because the Monument was a political statement *that government had a duty to acknowledge the LORD God and His law order.* This, the federal judge, could not accept. According to the federal judge, the United States is sovereign and responsible to no God.

4. The Ten Commandments are about health and prosperity.

Just to stay alive, one has to keep the Ten Commandments. The Law requires men to protect life and property. When properly applied, the Law and its case law benefits health. The Sabbath Law, for instance, prohibits man from being a slave to work. No other society in the world provided a day of rest for mankind. The 5th Commandment grants a promise of long life to those who honor their parents. When the Law says, "Thou shall not steal," it also means "don't be stolen from." The prohibition against murder requires men to develop strategy for self-defense; that is, ever Commandment enhances happiness and prosperity in a sick and perverted world.

5. The Ten Commandments are about law and order of society.

'We have staked the whole of all our political Institutions upon the capacity of mankind for Self-government, upon the capacity of each and all of us to govern ourselves, to control ourselves, to sustain ourselves according to The Ten Commandments of God' (James Madison).

From the beginning of time man has had to manage conflict. Life is full of conflicts. Death is the end of conflict. The Bible sees conflict rooted in the fall of man and the fall of nature. Evil exists in men, not in the environment. Thus, there is tension between men, between fathers and children, between citizens and the State.

A society in search of peace with evil is in search of death. A society that seeks to eliminate conflict by **individualism**; i.e., letting every man choose his own law leads to anarchy and to the multiplication of conflict. The other way to control conflict is through **collectivism**—the repression of a conflict by totalitarian regimes. A Christian society adopts the Ten Commandments. The Ten Commandment, when properly applied create responsible men as well as purge evil out from society.

6. The Ten Commandments are "the Testimony."

The tablets were called the "Ten Commandments" and were placed into the Ark of the Covenant which was called "Ark of Testimony." The Ark of Testimony was in the Tabernacle which was called "The Testimony." Both the Tabernacle and the Ark of the Covenant contained the tablets which were called "The Testimony." Why the use of the term "testimony?" The answer is because the Ten Commandments are a witness to God's character; that is the Ten Commandments are an objective reflection of His character. And, because God is eternal and immutable, His law is absolute (Exodus 25:16; Numbers 10:11; Exodus 40:20; Psalm 119:137, 142, 144).

7. The Ten Commandments define the character of God.

The Ten Commandments are a true and accurate reflection of the character of God; that is, the study of the Ten Commandments is a study on Theology. Every command reflects some righteous attribute of the Lawgiver.

Psalm 119:137 TZADDI. Righteous art thou, O LORD, and upright are thy judgments.

Psalm 119:151 Thou art near, O LORD; and all thy commandments are truth.

The law is as an accurate, but partial revelation of the character of God. His character is the core truth of what God wants men to know about Himself. The law also sheds light on man's moral defects. Furthermore, it becomes the expression of what God demands and will accomplish in His work in history, and it is the basis of his judgment on nations (Deuteronomy 10:1-5; Exodus 40:20, 21; Numbers 1:53; Galatians 3:10ff; Romans 7).

8. The Ten Commandments are absolute.

The commands are absolute because they are a direct reflection of God's righteousness. Since the LORD God is eternal, and His Commandments reflect His character, His Commandments are permanent. **If they are permanent, they are the final, absolute standard of righteousness.**

Psalm 119:142 Thy righteousness is an everlasting righteousness, and thy law is the truth.

Psalm 119:144 The righteousness of thy testimonies is everlasting: give me understanding, and I shall live.

The whole idea that man is evolving, that society is changing, and that we have to change with it is nothing but propaganda by a minority seeking to assert their will over the majority. That "*there are no absolutes and everything is relative*" is an absolute in and of itself. The whole idea that congressional law is religiously neutral is the Big Lie of Liberalism. Every law reflects someone's values, but "*peace and goodwill to men*" can only come by the Lord Jesus Christ (Luke 2:14).

9. The Ten Commandments are a reflection of Christ, the living Torah.

Romans 10:4 For Christ is the end of the law for righteousness to everyone that believeth.

The text says that "Christ is the end of the law;" that is, He is the fulfillment of the law, the living embodiment of the law, the perfect, subjective example of the law.

If the written Torah is the objective witness of the character of God, Christ is the Living Torah, or subjective witness of the character of God.

Furthermore, He obeyed the law on behalf of believers and became their Living Representative before the Father; that is, we are not only saved by the dying of Jesus at Calvary, men are saved by the doing of Jesus. Man is saved by works—His works in conformity to law and those works are credited to the believing man making it possible for him to be justified by grace before the Father (Romans 4:1ff).

10. The Ten Commandments define right and wrong.

Romans 7:12, 14 So the law is holy, and the commandment is holy and righteous and good . . . For we know that the law is spiritual,

The term "holy" describes the character and purity of the Ten Commandments. The Law is holy because it reflects God's holy character (1 Peter 1:15ff). The adjective "righteous" means the Law defines what is right and wrong. The Law is the yardstick measuring human behavior. God is righteous and the law reflects His righteousness (Psalm 119: 142). His Law defines righteousness . . . and man's sin.

The use of the word "good" means that the Law is beneficial to man; i.e., it leads to happiness and prosperity. The nominative adjective "spiritual" means the Law was given as a gift by the Spirit of God to man.

Only God has the authority to define good and evil. When man defines good, we end up with "therapeutic abortion" and "same-sex civil unions." When a humanist defines right he uses his belly-button as a moral compass. Good means doing what "feels good" to him. But, it is the Ten Commandments that tell us what is good, righteous, and holy.

11. The Ten Commandments defines truth.

Ps. 119:151 Thou art near, O LORD; and all thy commandments are truth.

Ps. 119:160 Thy word is true from the beginning: and every one of thy righteous judgments endureth for ever.

Because truth comes from God, truth has theological implications. The Ten Commandments are the heart of theology, and a study of them leads to truth about Christ. "He is the "the truth" about God. Truth is also ontological. This is fancy way of saying "it is the way things are." The Ten Commandments are about the ontology of God and the ontology of man. That is, when the Law says "do not bear false witness," it informs us that God is honest and truthful; but, it also informs us that it is in man's nature to lie and deceive. Thus, the need for truth! Under oath men are required to state the truth about that which conforms to reality.

12. The Ten Commandments define love.

Romans 13:8 Owe no man anything, but to love one another: for he that loveth another hath fulfilled the law.

1 John 5:2 By this we know that we love the children of God, when we love God, and keep his commandments.

1 John 5:3 For this is the love of God, that we keep his commandments. And his commandments are not burdensome.

Love is a Biblical word and a Christian value. The word "love" is used no less than 310 times in Scripture. But, what is love? Is it a feeling or a swell of desire to possess something? Love must be defined or people end up following their loins. God's law defines love, and following the Commandments is Biblical love. When a person keeps the Ten Commandments they are a loving person. A man who does not obey the Law hates God and hates his fellowman. Thus, when a Christian father tells his son to love his sister, he is not asking him to find "Hunka, hunka's burnin' love," he is asking him to rearrange his behavior in conformity to one or more of the Ten Commandments.

13. The Ten Commandments define normal.

A father may say to his son, "Act normal." But, what is normal? It is normal to love God, to honor parents, to keep promises, be honest, and to protect life and property. It is abnormal to lie, to steal, to murder, swindle men, and to dishonor parents. Thus, the Ten Commandments define what is normal.

14. The Ten Commandments define sanity.

The Scripture mentions the "double minded," "the mind of the flesh," "enemies in your mind," and those who walk in the "vanity of their minds." Insane people do not think about the Ten Commandments nor keep them. Sane people think about God's Law and practice God's law. When God talks about His saving work among men He says, "*I will put my laws into their mind;*" that is, the hypocenter of sanity is a mind ordered by the Law. Do you want sane kids? Teach them the Ten Commandments (James 4:8; Romans 8:6; Colossians 1:21; Ephesians 4:17; Hebrews 8:10)

15. The Ten Commandments define what is good.

Micah 6:8 He hath shewed thee, O man, what is good; and what doth the LORD require of thee, but to do justly, and to love mercy, and to walk humbly with thy God?

There are 613 commands in Torah which are case law to the Ten Commandments. The Commandments can be summarized under three simple principles:

- Justice in the courts for man;
- Mercy and kindness toward men in the marketplace;
- Faithfulness to God in daily life.

No god ever required so little! In contrast, State legislatures create zillions of laws in order to make every man a criminal. Biblical law is so simple. All of God's laws for the family can be summarized under the duties of justice, mercy, and faithfulness. Jesus even reduced them down to two principles: love for God and love for your neighbor. No god ever required so little of man¹² (Matthew 23:23; Luke 10:27).

16. The Ten Commandments define freedom—freedom that grows out of the garden of responsibility.

¹² *Micah 6:8* is in contrast to the gods of the orient that demanded castration, dismemberment, and child sacrifice. See *Micah 6:4-7*.

*James 1:25 But whoso looketh into the perfect **law of liberty**, and continueth therein, he being not a forgetful hearer, but a doer of the work, this man shall be blessed in his deed.*

James calls God's law the "law of liberty." Obedience to God's law leads to freedom. Responsibility first; freedom second! There is no such thing as absolute freedom. Only God is truly free, and even He is limited by His character. But, men can enjoy a measure of freedom when his neighbors obey the Ten Commandments. The law of God is not only for me but for all men and all of man's institutions. No man is free if his neighbor does not keep God's law. Where men do not have a contingency built on the Ten Commandments, doors must be locked, children watched, and weapons carried.

17. The Ten Commandments are about protecting human rights and about resisting lawbreakers.

1 Corinthians 7:23 Ye are bought with a price; be not ye the servants of men.

Rights come from God, not government. And, because they come from God they are unalienable. Every command in Scripture creates a right of man. God's law is about protecting the rights of man from thugs on the street and from psychopaths working for State governments; that is, the Ten Commandments place a duty on parents to protect the life and liberty of every family member . . . even to the point of using lethal force.

Government is about controlling men and exchanging rights for protection. Rulers control men by passing zillions of laws. Positive law makes unlimited demands on citizens. Negative law robs them of their rights and freedom. The First Commandment, if it means anything, is that *Christians must protect their Source of law and not be entrapped and enslaved by the laws of men.* Thus, the Ten Commandments require Christians to resist overreaching governments and their statutes designed to make slaves out of every man. The 14th Amendment, clause one, comes to mind.

18. The Ten Commandments are about how to live life in confused world.

It's dangerous out there. We live in a maximum liability universe and the law is for the protection and provision of the family. The Law is for the thinking man as it requires the proper application of the Law to life's varied circumstances. The Law is not for the rigid legalist. While men are prohibited by law from murdering people, that same law contains the requirement to execute murderers (6th). Both the saving of life and the taking of life are a duty of man. While men are required to not "bear false witness against their neighbor," that same law does not require men to tell

every truth about every man everywhere (9th). While the law forbids fraud, it does not forbid legitimate business enterprises (10th).

19. The Ten Commandment are about the purpose and limitations of law.

First, law was never intended as a means to save men. A proper use of law can cleanse society of evildoers, but it cannot regenerate society. The law punishes evildoers; the gospel saves sinners. The Law restrains men, but it cannot change them. The gospel changes hearts. The attempt to use law as the means of creating a man-made utopia proceeds from modern Pharisaical lawmakers called "politicians." Call them "liberals" or "progressives" or "republicans" they are just a new form of the old sect of Phariseeism.

There is one aspect of the Ten Commandments that is especially offensive to the modern mind and that is the negativity of the law. Eight of the Ten Commandments are expressed in negative terms: "Thou shall not. . ." Even the Command, "Thou shall remember the Sabbath and keep it holy has a negative aspect when it says, "Thou shall do no work." *Thus, nine of the Ten Commandments are expressed negatively.* If it is not forbidden, then man is free to do it; that is, as long as he does not infringe on the rights of others, he is free to go about his life pursuing his dream. This is freedom, not bondage.

However, it is not negative law that is dangerous. Generally speaking, positive law poisons society leading to the death of a culture. Positive law creates endless duties for men, particularly, in the form of taxation.

Negative law limits government. It limits man.

Prohibitive law deals realistically with a particular evil. *The Ten Commandments are meant to restrain governments, not enlarge their jurisdiction!* The Command, "Thou shall not steal" prohibits theft and makes it unlawful. This prohibition against theft applied not only to individual men, but to the rapacity of bureaucrats working for a depraved State. It is narrow and limited, and therefore, the state is limited. ***Negative law assigns a limited role to government.*** Neither individual men under necessity or the State under color of law are permitted to steal.

"I'll say this plainly, I've said it before - Taxation is theft. It presumes the government has a higher claim on our property than we do," says Judge Andrew Napolitano, the host of Fox Business' Freedom Watch (reason.com/blog).

Furthermore, negative law protects individual freedom. Unless some activity is prohibited, the rest of man's life is beyond law and indifferent to it. **Thus, negative law preserves the freedom of man** and empowers him to live a positive life consistent with his gifts and talents. If it is not forbidden, it is permitted!

Positive law, on the other hand, leads to tyranny and oppression. Positive law makes unlimited demands on man. It destroys freedom and causes the death of society. Positive law demands unlimited government because it assumes the people are childish and incapable of governing themselves. Because positive law is unlimited, the state is unlimited. Every man's business becomes the business of the state—not to control evil but to control men. The "Nanny State" comes to mind.

Secondly, positive law destroys the freedom of men. The state can do **anything** under *the tag of public safety and health*. Rome is an example of the tyranny that can result from positive law. Rome knew no limits of control and robbed its people of freedom under the pretensions of health and safety. Rome believed "The health of the people is the highest law." This principle came from Cicero and was written on the Twelve Tables (451-450 BC)—the earliest written statement of the Roman law. "When the Germanic tribes invaded the Roman Empire, the citizens did not resist. They saw the invaders as liberators from the Roman oppressors.

Under positive law, no activity of man is off limits. The state assumes total jurisdiction over the life, liberty, and property of man. The state can control behavior, speech, and even thoughts. Every heard of "Thought police"? Under positive law the state seeks to be the all-knowing, all-powerful, all-wise, all-benevolent protector of the people. Can you say, "Police State?" The all-competent State assumes the people are totally incompetent to make decisions for themselves. Thus, the state becomes the nursemaid that treats its people like little children, and the character of the state becomes childish and trivial. Sound familiar?

20. The Ten Commandments are about punishment and the foundation of judgment.

Law is about cleansing society of evildoers through punishments. God does not permit a professional class of delinquents in His kingdom. Criminals had to pay restitution to their victims. Those guilty of capital crimes were executed. But, the modern State is permissive. The definition of permissive means *without rules and punishments*. American families and schools are radically permissive even banning discipline altogether. Any restraint is viewed as harmful to a child's self-esteem. However, when they become eighteen these undisciplined, permissive children with high self-esteem are arrested for crimes and put in cement prisons for life. And, what is more cruel than robbing a man of freedom for life? Suddenly, Biblical punishments make more sense and seem far more humane.

21. The Commandments are given to create fear and to excite obedience.

The fear of God is the essence of sanity and common sense. Sane people acknowledge the authority of the Ten Commandments. Insane people reject them. If for no other reason, Israel should keep the Ten Commandments out of fear of

punishment. Moreover, the Commandments are motivated by love and therefore lead to happiness and prosperity (Deuteronomy 5:29).

22. The Ten Commandments are the family treasure.

Psalm 19:10 More to be desired are they than gold, even much fine gold; sweeter also than honey and drippings of the honeycomb.

Want to be rich? Study, memorize, and meditate on God's Law.

5.3 A Summary of the Ten Commandments

- The 1st Commandment proscribes a competing Authority and Source of Law in the family.
- The 2nd Commandment forbids devotion to anything man makes like idols and tattoos and body piercings.
- The 3rd Commandment condemns a casual, half-hearted use of God's name in contracts.
- The 4th Commandment requires positive energy to rest and remember the LORD God.
- The 5th Commandment requires positive energy to honor parents and their authority.
- The 6th Commandment outlaws murder, slander, and assault on family members.
- The 7th Commandment disallows adultery, fornication, and incest in the family.
- The 8th Commandment bans theft among family members and neighbors.
- The 9th Commandment blocks lies and deception within the family.
- The 10th Commandment censors fraud in order to obtain family property.

The great heresy of our time is “that God’s law has no meaning or relevance for modern man.” Or, to put it another way, “the gospel contains no law or binding force on men today.” This country was founded upon God’s Word. As a result of the teaching of the Ten Commandments in schools, Harvard Law Prof. Harold J. Berman wrote,

. . . fifty years ago . . . if you had asked Americans where our system of law came from, on what it was ultimately based, the overwhelming majority would have said, "the Ten Commandments," or "the Bible," or perhaps "the law of God." . . . In the past two generations the public

philosophy of America has shifted radically from a religious to a secular theory of law. . . ." (H. Berman, The Interaction of Law and Religion, 8 CAP. U. L. REV. 345 at 349-50 (1979)).

Some argue that this modern society will never accept Biblical law as its foundation for all law. Why not?

The great issue of our time is not whether God's law is "perfect," but whether there is enough salt in the Christian community to advance a healthy Theonomy in a society governed by secular men hostile to God's law order (Matthew 5:13).

The question is not whether Christian law will be attacked, but whether there is enough health in the body politic to resist the assault.

So docile are Christians today about God's law, they seem generally content to let atheists, murderers, and Sodomites govern society. **Citizens that tolerate the assault upon Biblical law join the revolt against God's law order** (Psalm 2:1-2). To tolerate subversion of God's order is in its self a subversive activity that leads to social suicide.

In summary, the Ten Commandment are about a family under the authority of the LORD God. The fear of God which leads to obedience to law is the key to prosperity and happiness within a family, within a neighborhood, and for a nation. The criminal element in society can be traced back to families deficient in knowledge and devotion to the Ten Commandments and the gospel that empowers men to obey them.

6 The Family and the First Commandment

Exodus 20:3 "You shall have no other gods before me.

יְהוָה אֱלֹהֵינוּ יְהוָה אֶחָד

- The First Commandment is the Family's ONLY Source of law.



*Isaiah 33:22 For the LORD is our judge, **the LORD is our lawgiver**, the LORD is our king; he will save us.*

The prologue introduces us to the Source of family law beginning with, "I am the LORD your God, who brought you out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of slavery."

The term "*LORD thy God*" declares God's sovereignty, authority, self-existence, and absoluteness. Because He is LORD, He has the right to be man's Lawgiver. He is Israel's Source of law. He is the Christian family's Source of law, the Nation's Source of law, and the Church's Source of law.

The phrase "*which brought thee out of Egypt*" declares God's grace and redemptive love. He is their Savior, and because He loved these people, He gave them the Ten Commandments; i.e., the Ten Commandments are not only a product of sovereignty, but a product of love and grace. Because He is LORD, He has the authority to deliver His law to His people; because He is their Savior, the law is a product of His love and goodness.

- The First Commandment teaches there is one true, infinite, personal, absolute God.

The Decalogue as well as Shema declared a truth: *שמע ישראל יהוה אחד* / *שמע ישראל יהוה אחד* (m;Dv. , "Hear, Oh Israel, the LORD our God is one LORD." Recited as a morning and evening prayer, the Shema teaches that *there is One, infinite, absolute, personal, virtuous unchanging triune Spirit who created the world, the God of the Bible, the God of Israel, and the Father of the Lord Jesus Christ.*

Since there is the one, true absolute God who has revealed Himself in history, then all other religions are FALSE!

The whole idea perpetuated by secular humanists that all religions are equal is nothing but religious gibberish by people with a PhD in Moonbat. Some religions honor their parents; other religions eat their parents; some religions help the sick; other religions assist in their suicide.

- The First Commandment is about One absolute God and One Absolute law.

Since the Ten Commandments are a reflection of God's character; and, since God is eternal, the Ten Commandments are absolute. Since the God of the Bible is absolute and has provided proof by the resurrection of Christ, there is only one, absolute law. Congressional legislative acts are statutes, not law.

According to Barna (March 6, 2009) sixty-six percent of adults surveyed said they did not believe in absolute truth . . . that "truth is whatever you believe." But, believe does not create reality. The opposite of One God and one law system is polytheism and multiculturalism. The premise of polytheism is that we live in a multi-universe with a variety of law orders with many gods; that there is no absolute God and therefore no one absolute law-order. Sharia law comes to mind.

That "you are the definer of God and the definer of truth" is a golden calf emerging from the forge of relativism. Relativism and lawlessness are the by-product of multiculturalism--a weakness to despise, not a strength to admire. The dimming of America as a light upon the hill is a result of changing gods and its plunge into pluralism. A nation in the process of changing its laws is in the process of changing its gods. Americans are in a flight from truth and are now drifting "on a tide of uncertainty into a sea of unknowing" (quoted from Barna, christianity.co.nz).

- The First Commandment forbids polyamory.

Since there is only one absolute God, there is only one God to love with all a man's heart, soul, and strength. As Creator, He created man. As LORD and Savior He loved Israel and saved them out of political bondage in tyrannical Egypt. The Commandment requires absolute devotion and condemns polyamorous relationships with other supernatural beings or powers. Those powers can be spiritual or material or sexual or political.

The difference between the First Commandment and the Second Commandment is the difference between form and spirit. The First sanctions polyamory in spirit; the Second censors the material object of worship. The First condemns devotion to anything God has made; the Second condemns devotion to anything man has made. Since God is spirit without shape or form, the First and Second Commandment disallows seeking spirits, necromancy, fortune telling, divination, astrology, horoscopes, and construction of idols, icons, symbols, deities, superstars, and the like. It condemns manufacturing tattoos that symbolize religion, values, heroes, nature, astrology, forces, powers, and even of Jesus Christ. Body piercings, body

alterations, and tattoos are symbols of rebellion against the Creator and His law-order. The trendiness of tattoos and obscenity is indicative that society is changing its gods and adopting a law-order from the gods of chaos.

Leviticus 19:28 You shall not make any cuts on your body for the dead or tattoo yourselves: I am the LORD.

- The First Commandment requires Christian men to protect their Source of law.

*James 4:12 **There is one lawgiver**, who is able to save and to destroy:*

The Scripture teaches us there is one Source of law--the God of Israel! If the First Commandment means anything, it means that all competing legal systems must be rejected; that is, the primary duty of the head of the home is to reject humanism, Judaism, psychology, evolution, and the temptation to create one's own competing law system in the family. Christian law offers "limited tolerance" of competing systems. To run a family by "gut feeling" and self-law is just as much rebellion against God's law-order as adopting the creeds of religious cults.

Since "gods are the source of law," the Commandment orders fathers to have no gods, no desires, no lusts, no amusements, no moral code, no source of law, no psychological theory, no contract with the State, no allegiance, no oath, and no loyalty above the duty of obeying the one true God.

The Commandment, "Thou shall have no other gods before me" condemns humanism where every man is his own god, his own law, and own universe. Many "gods" in America means "many people" practicing their own *religious values*¹³. Anarchy is *everyman doing what is right in his own eyes* (Judges 21:25).

This Commandment challenges deeply held beliefs about the Constitution. "WE THE PEOPLE" is a law source. Mao Tse Tung declared, "Our God is none other than the masses of the Chinese people. If they stand up and dig together with us, why can't these mountains be cleared away?"¹⁴ Democracy is a legal theory, not a Biblical maxim. The whole idea that secular democracy must be spread to Moslem countries is insane. And, when 51% of Americans sanction abortion and Sodomy, the overthrow of Christian law as the Foundation of Western Civilization will have been accomplished. Ed Griffin, American Patriot, quotes Yuri Bezmenov:

¹³ Religion: Religion is about values. All men are religious, even atheists, because all men have beliefs about what happens after death and ultimate values that are dear to their heart. To reduce "religion" to theism is to narrow the definition of religion and to control the argument.

¹⁴ Mao Tse Tung, "The Foolish Old Man Who Removed the Mountains (June 11, 1945): http://afe.easia.columbia.edu/special/china_1900_mao_speeches.htm

*Ideological subversion is the process which is legitimate and open. You can see it with your own eyes.... It has nothing to do with espionage . . . The **demoralization** process in the United States is basically completed already for the last 25 years.(Internet Source: [http://www.crossroad.to/ Quotes/brainwashing/2007/bezmenov.htm](http://www.crossroad.to/Quotes/brainwashing/2007/bezmenov.htm))*

For this reason, Christianity offers limited tolerance to other people, but it offers no tolerance for those who seek to subvert its Source of law!

The First Commandment forbids Moloch worship.

The word Moloch is a derivative of the Hebrew words “Melech, Meleck, or Malik” which means “king.” The term “Moloch” (Molock) is an intentional misvocalization of the term “Meleck” by using the vowels of shame (nikudos vowels). Thus, Hebrews used the vowels of shame to refer to the religion of shame—a religion that involved human sacrifice. Thus, Moloch worship was the worship of the State as the god of that society (Leviticus 18:21; 20:2-5; 1 Kings 11:7, 33; Jeremiah 49:1, 3; 32:35; Amos 1:15; Zephaniah 1:5).

Anything other than a Christ-centered education is apostasy for Christian fathers. True devotion to Christ requires parents to provide children a Bible-based education in the home.

The State is a source of law that is more often than not hostile to the Law-word of the LORD God. Statists are men who look to the State as their source of law, and statism is a form of idolatry. Children do not belong to the State (Moloch), and the State has no authority to be involved in the business of education. The fact there is not one word in the United States Constitution about education shows how overreaching and out of control the federal government has become. The family is the institution of education, not the government. Education needs to be the task of local communities, not the job of bureaucrats in the District of Criminals. And, it is the duty of Christian parents to teach their children God's law and help them learn how to apply it on the freeway of life.

- The First Commandment condemns Statism.

The greatest threat to the Christian family is not the thug down the street or some terrorist group that lives in the Middle East, but treachery by the overreaching government which seeks to enlarge its jurisdiction by creating statutes that subvert parental authority.

Psalm 94:20 Shall the throne of iniquity have fellowship with thee, which frameth mischief by a law?

From Exodus 32 we learn that idolatry is entered into during periods of listlessness when people cannot see or feel God at work in their lives. Idolatry is clearly a walk

by sight and not by faith. Idolatry replaces the invisible God with visible gods; the incorruptible God with corruptible gods. Further, we learn that idolatry is some kind of contingency or organizing principle around which a family or society organizes itself.

Every society has its gods. Find a society's source of law and you discover its gods. Every man is religious, even atheists¹⁵. All want their values to rule society. Over optimistic politicians believe that wolves and sheep can live together in peace when governed by neutral, secular governments. That a secular government is neutral is nonsense! That secular governments are superior to a Christian state and better able to manage diversity in among the peoples is more nonsense! The belief that everyman is his own law leads to anarchy, and anarchy leads to totalitarianism wherein the state enthrones itself as an absolute.



Southington Connecticut School Children, May 1942 saving the Pledge of Allegiance to

In requiring a 30% tithe (tax) of a man's income, the modern state not only considers itself more important than God by receiving its tithe / tax first before the citizen can tithe to the church¹⁶, but more worthy than God because it demands 35% tithe / tax to the State! *Such an exorbitant tax weakens the family and shifts power from the family to the State.*

It is the State that introduces idolatry into the nation. It was King Jeroboam that introduced the golden calves at Bethel and Dan:

¹⁵ Atheism is a religion because it is a product of "belief" and "faith" about what happens after death; further, "religion" is about values, and not just Theistic values. Since atheists have values, they are as religious as any man. Christians must not let atheists control the definition of "religion" and narrow it to Theist faiths. Whoever controls the definition controls the argument. Furthermore, it is atheists who shoving their religion down the throats of America by claiming to be secular and neutral.

¹⁶ W-4 deduction program.

Because the modern State sees itself as a god, it requires total allegiance; total sacrifice; and total commitment to its organization.

"I pledge allegiance to the United States" is morosely repeated by zombie students in government schools. What business is it of educators to indoctrinate children into pledging allegiance to anything but their family and God?

1 Kings 12:28 Whereupon the king took counsel, and made two calves of gold, and said unto them, It is too much for you to go up to Jerusalem: behold thy gods, O Israel, which brought thee up out of the land of Egypt.

The State competes with religion for the affection and devotion of its citizens. The State is zealous to tax the family, control the family, and indoctrinate the family in statism. The State uses the phrase, "Sons of America," but the State has no sons. Only a father and mother have sons.

Out of arrogance, the State believes its political system is strong enough to unite all immigrant families from non-Christian nations. Nonsense! Polytheistic Rome couldn't glue the empire together; neither can America's secular democracy seam an empire together. Democracy can work for a Christian people, but it leads to the tyranny of the majority among neo-pagan societies such as the United States.

The First Commandment requires true grit.

Fierce zeal¹⁷ burns like a fire in the eyes of true men. Deuteronomy 13 warns against the inventions of anarchists, power cults, and man's attempt to control society through law. The penalty for introducing a competing legal system in the nation of Israel was "death." The opposite of anarchy is Jesus Christ; the prophet God will raise up to which all shall be accountable. So destructive was statism to the family's happiness and prosperity that the LORD God enacted the death penalty against revolutionaries and "groups" (cities) that sought to lure others toward building a society on statism or another law source. No pity was permitted. Tolerance is a weakness to overcome, not a condition to admire.

*Deuteronomy 7:16 And thou shalt consume all the people which the LORD thy God shall deliver thee; **thine eye shall have no pity upon them**; neither shalt thou serve their gods; for that will be a snare unto thee.*

The application toward Christians is staggering. Christian fathers cannot be wimpy, passive, sugar-coated cream puffs. Moral courage is needed to stand up to the State or any organization that subverts the Christian law-order for "*all experience hath shewn, that mankind are more disposed to suffer, while evils are sufferable, than to right themselves by abolishing the forms to which they are accustomed*" (The Declaration of Independence).

¹⁷ Zeal is a virtue of Almighty God (Isaiah 9:7). Zeal is a praiseworthy jealousy to preserve something precious.

The question is not whether Christian law will be attacked, but whether there is enough steel and fiber in men's souls to resist the assault.

God's man has to become a man of steel and velvet. It is not possible for snakes and rodents to live together in peace. It is not possible for Moslems and Christian to govern the same land, nor is it possible for Christians to be at peace with godless homosexuals who feel compelled to push their immorality down the throats of our children. The First Commandment is ugly on permissiveness and death on idolatry. Going to war requires courage and one's precious all.

"Physical courage is common," but, "moral courage is rare" ~ Mark Twain.

Parents must be alert and not allow their families to be propagandized by television, public schools, or trends of the culture. "*Wake up the mighty men,*" shouts Joel (3:9). Christians are asleep! "*Awake, O sleeper, and arise from the dead, and Christ will shine on you*" quotes Paul (*Ephesians 5:14*). To surrender children to the State is to turn them over to the enemy. To adopt the values of the New World Order is to incite the jealousy of God for "having other gods before Me."

Sickly compliance with State statues is a weakness that must be overcome by fathers. When idolaters pressured Aaron to build a golden calf, **Aaron offered no resistance!** What, NO RESISTANCE? What was wrong with the man? The want of defiance on Aaron's part exposed his weakness—a lack of fortitude and true grit. The gloves must come off. Christian men must fight to protect their Source of law and to insure its adoption in society (Deuteronomy. 13:1-9; 18:15-22; Exodus 32).

In conclusion, the First Commandment is about the family's Source of law. Since there is one absolute God and one absolute law, it is the duty of Christian men to know their law and to protect their Source of law against all enemies, particularly the secular State, which seeks to subvert the Law of the LORD God.

7 The Authority for Marriage



Genesis 2:24 Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife: and they shall be one flesh.

By what authority do you get married, the authority of the State or the authority of the LORD God and His Law-word?

7.1 The Yoke of Licensing

Modern men have lived all their lives under the authority of the State instead of under the authority of the Lord Jesus Christ. So much so, the power and authority of Scripture has been all but lost; that is, the State has been very successful at indoctrinating Americans into believing that men must ask the State permission to marry, get a job, buy a house, or travel. Because of State propaganda through public schools and the media, modern Christians are not very sanguine about King Jesus.

Consequently, young Christians "feel" like they have to get a license and ask the State's permission to marry. Nonsense! Men have always been free to marry without permission of the government. *Young Christians need the consent of parents, but they do not need the consent of the State!* Common law is Christian law and the only law recognized in the Bill of Rights. Christians are under Lex Rex and not the law of a king (Rex Lex). All states must recognize common law or be at odds with the Bill of Rights, especially Amendments Eight, Nine, and Ten.¹⁸

When a couple applies for a marriage license, they are appealing to the State (a for-profit corporation) for its permission to marry. Further, by asking for a license, they are abdicating the law of God, surrendering their freedoms, and are agreeing to live under the laws of the god-State.

Application for a license means the couple is agreeing to be governed by the laws of these for-profit corporations acting as de facto governments. This is not all bad. Pagans need the State to govern them. ***Good Christian men do not!*** In law and in fact, couples married under State law are bound by their definitions of marriage, of

¹⁸ Colorado has recognized common law marriage as legal and binding since 1877, and is one of twelve states to do so. A common law marriage is established when the parties mutually consent to be husband and wife (U.S. Marriage Laws).

the family, and their rules for raising children; that is, the State is a third party in the bedroom of their marriage.

It's time for Christians to get a divorce, and to kick the government out of their bedroom and marry under God's laws.

If a couple gets married under God's laws and enter into a Marriage Covenant, then you have his promise of blessing and sustenance . . . and you are free to raise your children under His law and His grace.

You cannot marry under God's law and State Law and be ruled by both. You cannot serve two masters. One must prevail. And, if you go to court, a Bible will not be present in the courtroom!

7.2 Definition of License

*"The permission by competent authority to do an act which without such permission, **would be illegal.**" (Black's Law Dictionary)*

Illegal? When did marriage become illegal? Since when do Christian men and women need permission from the State to marry?

Licensure for marriage in America came into being after the Civil War wherein it was illegal for a white man to marry a black woman and vice versa. Thus, a license was necessary between races--licenses granted by the State. In early America, licenses to marry were unheard of. Marriages were covenant contracts between two families, between a mature man and a mature woman. Marriages were recorded in the family Bible, not with the county clerk and the secretary of State. The only permission needed to marry was the permission of the father. But, with the rise of statism in America, licensing conquered the Christian mind.

7.3 Definition of Jurisdiction

The term jurisdiction is a question of authority: Who or what has a right to tell you what to do? Who or what has authority over your marriage or house or job or land or children? Russian police have authority in the USSR, but they do not have authority in Denver, Colorado? The Federal Government has authority in Washington D.C. and Puerto Rico, but they do not have authority over Citizens of a State unless they are in contract with the federal government. Likewise, the State does not have authority over a man's family unless the man gives the State that authority . . . and, this is what a license does. A license is a contract that grants authority to the State to rule over, annul, disapprove, or punish a man for not following State statutes.

7.4 Definitions of Marriage

Marriage is the first and most important institution created by the LORD God. It is an economic institution not only designed to perpetuate mankind, but to seal, cement, bind, unite, educate, and provide for mankind. The family is more fundamental than government or the church. When families are strong, the government and church are strong. When the family is weak, other institutions steal power.

How Christians define marriage is important for the church in order to maintain control over it. Marriage is not a creation of government. According to Genesis two, the LORD God is Creator of marriage; that is, marriage is His idea, His plan, and His design. See Genesis 2:18-25.

Marriage is not a union of two persons, but a covenant between a mature **man** and a mature **woman**, competent to contract, bound together by oath to live together as man and wife under God's law and consummated by a sexual union. A marriage must include at least three elements: (1) a man and woman; (2) a binding contract by oath; (3) a sexual union.

Since God is the Creator, Grantor, Mediator, and Sustainer who sanctions marriage, ONLY THE LORD God has a right to define marriage.

Marriage is a religious institution and the government has no authority to define religion or regulate its law-order.

Amendment I

Congress shall make no law respecting an establishment of religion, or prohibiting the free exercise thereof; or abridging the freedom of speech, or of the press; or the right of the people peaceably to assemble, and to petition the government for a redress of grievances.

Marriage is **not** two people living together under the same roof. Marriage is not a perverted union between a male and a male, or a woman and a woman. Marriage is not two people in a commercial agreement. Marriage is not two people living together under the same roof. *Shame on anyone who performs a same-sex union and calls it marriage.*

Marriage is a covenant contract between a mature man and a mature woman who agree to live together as husband and wife for purposes of marriage as ordained in God's Word. Marriage is a contract. For a Biblical marriage to be valid, there must be an offer, acceptance, consideration, and performance expectations. The difference between a State license to marry and a Biblical Covenant of marriage is that in a State contract, the State is part of the contract and the couple agrees to live under the rules of the legislature. In a Biblical Covenant, God is part of the contract wherein the couple looks to God for His assistance to marry and to conduct that relationship under His laws. In a Biblical Covenant, there is a grant of permission

by the wife's father, an offer by the man, acceptance by the woman, consideration or dowry, a formal declaration of the marriage contract, and the seal of that union by sexual consummation.

7.5 Definition of family

A family is not a school or football team or a group of fraternity brothers living in a college frat house. A family has blood relations, not emotional friendship bonds.

A family is a product of marriage--of blood relations, working together as an economic unit for the good and health of its members.

7.6 Definition of Institution

An institution is a type of organization designed for the profit of the individuals composing it. ***There are three institutions in the Bible: the family, the state, and the church.*** God is the author of all three of these institutions. Each institution has its duties as well as limited powers within its own jurisdiction. Each has a duty to perform their services under God's Law-word and under His authority. The family is the institution of education. The state is the institution of justice. The church is the institution of mercy charged with the stewardship of the gospel.

The family is the first Biblical Institution. It is a spiritual, lawful, economic unit designed for the health and welfare of blood relations. Its first and foremost goal is education:

*Deuteronomy 6:6-9 And these words, which I command thee this day, shall be in thine heart: And **thou shalt teach them** diligently unto thy children, and shalt talk of them when thou sittest in thine house, and when thou walkest by the way, and when thou liest down, and when thou risest up. And thou shalt bind them for a sign upon thine hand, and they shall be as frontlets between thine eyes. And thou shalt write them upon the posts of thy house, and on thy gates.*

Consider how the home is a place of education. It is in the home the child takes his first class in language, speaking, writing, health codes, law, judgment, food preparation, chores, work, relational skills, building, sewing, singing, music, weaving, writing, and other skills.

7.7 Intrusion by the State

Consider the problems the State causes for Biblical families and the reasons not to surrender a family to the laws of the State. If a man obtains a license to marry, the State is the third party to the contract. The State has power to intervene, demand performance, take children away from the parents, force families to send their

children to public schools, punish parents for disciplining their children for corporal punishment, facilitate divorce, demand alimony even in cases of an adulterous spouse, child care, vaccinations, birth certificates, health care, etc.

Consider how the State is changing the definition and rules of marriage to include same-sex couples and then granting homosexuals parental rights over foster children. A poison arrow, it will kill the very definition of family.

Consider how the State damages the family by over reaching its authority and expanding its jurisdiction demanding vaccinations, flu shots, and specific performance.

Consider how the State is damaging and weakening the family through taxation, women's rights, redefining marriage, redefining a family, granting homosexuals tax breaks, seeing itself as the Great Parent to all children, devising a false war on women, diminishing the rights of men, granting power for fornicating mothers to murder their babies.

In conclusion, jurisdiction refers to the right, power, and authority to act. The great question is who has authority over a marriage, the LORD God or the State? Well, it depends under what laws a marriage contract is formed. It is time for good Christian men to return to the authority of Scripture, to kick the State out of their marriages, and to incorporate under the original jurisdiction of the creative order.

8 The Original Jurisdiction of Marriage



Jurisdiction refers to the right, power, and authority to act. The great question is who has authority over a marriage, the LORD God or the State? Well, it depends under what jurisdiction a man marries, the jurisdiction of the LORD God, or the jurisdiction of the State.

Wiki comments: "Conflict of marriage laws is the conflict of laws regarding marriage in different jurisdictions. When marriage-related issues arise between couples with diverse backgrounds, questions as to which legal systems and norms should be applied to the relationship naturally follow with various potentially applicable systems frequently conflicting with one another" (<http://en.wikipedia.org>).

Jurisdiction: All men are born under the original jurisdiction of Genesis 1:26-28-- of the LORD God and His dominion mandate.

Genesis 1:26-28 And God said, "Let us make man in our image, after our likeness: and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth." So God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them. And God blessed them, and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth.

The Creator: The "us" in Genesis 1:26, can be none other than the triune God. In other parts of Scripture, the Lord Jesus Christ is revealed as the Divine Executor of creation; that is, He is the Creator. Furthermore, He is revealed as the Head of every man; that is, males are directly under His authority as women are directly under the authority and protection of their husbands. For this reason, men uncover their head in prayer, and women are exhorted wear a headcovering as an object lesson of God's law-order (John 1:1-3; Colossians 1:15-18; Hebrews 1:1-3; 1 Corinthians 11:1-16).

In the course of history, the Creator is called "the King of the Nations." That is, all the families of the earth are under duty to acknowledge the prerogatives of the LORD God and to arrange themselves under His authority.

Jeremiah 10:7 Who would not fear you, O King of the nations? For this is your due; for among all the wise ones of the nations and in all their kingdoms there is none like you.

Man: The word for "man" in our text is "adam." Adam means "man." Mankind is the result of special creation and not a product of time-plus-chance. Men and women bear the image of God and are endowed with certain "unalienable rights" as acknowledged by the Declaration of Independence. Every command in the Bible creates a right of man. Responsibility, the exercise of those rights, leads to freedom.

Created in the image of God: The Hebrew word "image" means "likeness." Man is not "a god," but he does bear the image of God. He is a living, sentient being with a mind, heart, and soul. In fact, man is called "a living soul" (nephesh haya). Man is not an animal or a mass of living, growing protoplasm. Man has value and worth. For this reason Jesus said about those who lead a child into sin, that it is better for them to take a millstone, tie it to their neck, and jump in to the sea. If Jesus said this in His day, what would He say to those who kill their babies and protect baby-killers today (Genesis 2:7; Matthew 18:6)?

In Genesis 2:7, we are given the particulars of a man's creation wherein in Adam was called a "living soul." He is not a "person" or "entity" or "corporation" or "fiction" or "human resource" as the government defines "person." Men are living, breathing, flesh and blood, human beings subject to the LORD God. He does not need a license from government to do what God requires. A mature man and a mature woman do not need license to marry or raise a family. God's law supersedes and is superior to all man-made codes and statutes.

Purpose: The purpose of man is stated as "*let them have dominion over*" the earth and creatures on this planet. This is the dominion mandate. The verb is a jussive in Hebrew which is used to express a mild command or wish. Thus, the words "may" or "let" are often used to express the meaning of the jussive. Man was made to be a king, not a slave; a master, not a slave. His task is to rule and manage God's creation on earth. Slavery and serfdom did not enter history until the rebel Nimrod, the first statist. He was the first to see men as a human resource for the imperial ends of the first Babylonian State (Genesis 10, 11).

Furthermore, the dominion mandate was renewed politically by the Lord Jesus Christ following His death, burial, and resurrection when He ordered His followers to "*Go and make disciples of all nations . . .*" (Matthew 28:19-20).

Ownership: What a creator creates belongs to the creator. God is the Creator of the earth and man, and man and the earth belong to God. Neither man nor the earth belong to government. *God gave rights over land to families, not the State.*

Psalm 24:1 The earth is the LORD'S, and the fullness thereof; the world, and they that dwell therein.

When Christ was challenged about taxes, He responded, "Give unto Caesar, what belongs to Caesar and to God the things that are God's" (Luke 20:25). The question arises, "What belongs to Caesar?" The answer is closer to nothing than something. For "the earth" and they "dwell therein" belong to God (Psalm 24:1); that is, the modern land grab by government and the taxation of people with land is a fruit of the Poisonous Tree. This passage has been gravely misapplied by pastors to teach that all men need to pay taxes to Caesar. Why some contracted government employees have a duty to pay taxes, most men do not! Modern taxation is nothing more than theft by the State under color of law. The profit on a man's business does not belong to Caesar. Rather, the passage teaches that even Caesar has a duty to give to God what is God's and to keep his hands off what God has given to families.

The Duty of Married Couples:

Genesis 1:28 And God blessed them, and God said unto them, "Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth."

Children are the fruit of marriage. They are not a curse, but a blessing. The word "blessing" here refers to positive empowerment and prosperity; that is, God gifted the first couple with sexual energies and creative powers. Parents share in the responsibility to bear children and to raise them under the dominion mandate as stated in Genesis 1:28 and Matthew 28:19-20.

This command has never been rescinded. While the demand for numerical proliferation among humanity is not as critical as it was in ages past, the cry for rearing children who are attentive to the dominion mandate and surrendered to God's law-order begs to be fulfilled among the nations.

Finally, notice that the verb "Be fruitful" is a qal imperative; that is, it is a command. No sooner did God create man than He subjected him to law! Marrying and having children is not a preference, but Divine law. Every couple capable of having children is under duty to bear children and raise them under God's dominion mandate.

A word about birth control: The Divine mandate places a duty on couples to bear children. Only God can create life, but couples participate in that process. The command requires responsible participation, and responsible participation requires some kind of measured family planning. A family plan that excludes having any children, or a plan that accepts no responsibility for the number of children born

into a family are both hostile to God's law-order. Responsible obedience rather than recklessness are in order here.

In conclusion, jurisdiction refers to the right, power, and authority to act. The great question is who has authority over a marriage, the LORD God or the State? Well, it depends under what laws a marriage contract is formed.

9 The Law of Marriage in Genesis

Genesis 2:16-18 And the LORD God commanded the man, saying, Of every tree of the garden thou mayest freely eat: But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it: for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die. And the LORD God said, It is not good that the man should be alone; I will make him an help meet for him.

9.1 Man Under Law

In Genesis 2:4 we see the first use of the term "LORD God."

The name "LORD" is the Tetragrammaton, the sacred name for God wherein YHWH is identified as the Creator. Here we learn that man was formed from the dust of the ground. Man is not some type of ape or mass of protoplasm or some type of legal entity in the courts. Man is called a "living soul," a living "nephesh." Man is a product of special creation endowed with God-given rights. As a creature, he has a duty to his Sovereign Creator. The Source of man's law is the LORD God.

God subjected Adam to law and expected him to keep His commandments.

Before Adam met Eve and married her, God instructed Adam in law. Adam was given the duty of being a theologian, lawyer, and law enforcement officer . . . before he met his wife. Likewise, God requires husbands to know law. How can a man who is not educated in the Law-word of the LORD God, especially the Ten Commandments and the Gospel of Grace, be competent to get married or lead a family? If Biblical law is the foundation of the family, how can a man build a family if he does not know God's precepts? He need not, of course, be a trained lawyer, but he needs to have met the LORD God and passed Biblical Law 101.

The LORD God not only introduces Adam to law, but also to liberty. God's law-order leads to freedom. God set man free to eat from all the fruits of the garden save one. Man was created a free agent. There was freedom, but not unlimited freedom. *Only God is truly sovereign.* Further, He created Adam a legal man. In fact, Adam was charged with the duty of practicing law. Eating from the Poisonous Tree was not permitted by order of the LORD God; that is, it was not only *mala prohibita* but *mala in se* in that it contained all the far reaching evils of a Pandora's Box. Adam lived in a maximum liability universe. There were consequences to actions. Thus, man's liberty was under law. Responsibility led to freedom and prosperity, but irresponsibility led to death.

God required Adam to instruct his wife in the law of the LORD God.

Eve never heard God's prohibition regarding the Poisonous Tree directly. The command was given to Adam. And, it was his duty to instruct his wife in the law of the LORD God. *Likewise, it is the duty of all fathers to teach their family the Law of God.* Consequently, a man who omits or fails to teach his family the law of the LORD God is guilty of inexcusable neglect. God's man must be a legal man.

God elected Adam to be head of his family.

Likewise, God gave men (males) the head of home and the duty of leading the family under the dominion mandate. The assignment of head is by order of creation. Adam was created first; Eve was created second.

Modern man has declared war on God's law-order and the family. Beginning with the woman's suffrage, voting, and the apotheosis of women in the work place, confusion entered society regarding male and female roles in the family. Even today we see the movement of gendercide waffling through universities. Regardless of the mounting pressure from the liberal media and apostate churches, Christians must never surrender the leadership role for men in the family.

Christian home is a patriarchal home, not a democratic organization. Paul under the authority of Christ uses the order of creation to instruct church families about headship in 1 Corinthians 11:1-16. Males are given the headship of their homes

It is the duty of Christian men to guide and protect their home; it is the duty of women to surrender to that leadership and to arranger themselves under their commanding officer. The man is not superior to the woman, nor the woman to the man. Headship is not about competence or skill or superiority, but of assigned roles in God's law-order. The created order determines the right of the male to lead a home and the duty of a woman to honor and respect that role. The duties of husband and wife are clearly set forth in Ephesians 5:25ff as case law for the family. The man is the king of the home, and the king treats the queen quite well!! Further, the woman in her assigned role is to be honored by her husband and her children (1 Peter 1:7); and in Leviticus 19:3 the mother is mentioned first in line for honor, "You shall fear your mother and his father."

9.2 Marriage Under Law

Marriage is good and not evil. But, it is not good to be alone. Loneliness has its own set of evils and path of thorns.

*Genesis 2:18 And the **LORD** God said, It is not good that the man should be alone; I will make him an help meet for him.*

Marriage is God's remedy for loneliness and his norm for most people.

The word "help meet" is the Hebrew word "ezer." He created the woman to be man's helper, not the man to be the woman's helper. Hear what is being said, not what is not being said. Yes, a good man will honor his wife and serve her in many, many ways during the course of marriage. But, the man was not made for the woman and her ambitions. She was made to serve her husband and his lawful ambitions.

Marriage is a contract to live together as man and wife.

A covenant is also a contract to live together as man and wife, the difference being that in a covenant, God is part of the contract as its Lawgiver and Sustainer. A Biblical marriage is covenantal wherein the man and woman commit to living together under God's law. A "civil union" is also a marriage contract wherein permission to marry is obtained by the state. In civil marriages, the couple have a duty to State law. A Biblical marriage is a God-given right to contract and requires no permission from the State. *In fact, mature Christianity seeks NO permission from the government to do that which is ordered under Christian law.*

Without a contract, there was no *lex scripta* for marriage in the ancient world.¹⁹ The N.T. calls the contract a "yoke." No contract; no marriage!

2 Corinthians 6:14 Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers:

"If a man take a wife and do not draw up a contract with her, that woman is not a wife" Code of Hammurabi, 128.

In marriage, the woman is equal with the man in stature, but not in authority.

Adam said about Eve that she is "*bone of my bones and flesh of my flesh.*" She shall be called 'woman' because she was taken out of man. The word for "man" here is "*ish*" and the word for "woman" is "*isha*." Both man and woman are part of the "*anthropos*" we call "humanity" or "mankind." But, humanity is divided into two sexes, "*ish*" man and "*isha*" woman, or male and female. In my family, my wife is affectionately called my *isha yapha* or "beautiful woman."

Marriage involves forming a new family unit under God's law-order:

"Therefore shall a man leave his father and mother . . . "

A Christian marriage involves leaving, cleaving, and weaving. Leaving a parent is part of the Biblical order. "Leave" does not mean abandon or disown. God forbid! Married children still have a duty to honor their parents and all that the Fifth Commandment requires. Leaving is a synecdoche for coming out from under

¹⁹ Lex Scripta: Latin for "written law."

parental authority to establish a new home directly under God's authority. The new husband takes the position as king of his home and the wife takes the position as the queen of the new home. Likewise, when a son or daughter marry, the marriage is a formal declaration that the parental-child relationship is taking on a new dimension.

Marriage is a union wherein man and wife become one flesh.

A marriage is sealed by sexual intercourse. There is no such thing as a marriage without this bond. Weaving is part of marriage. Man and wife become one flesh; that is, in marrying, both man and woman forsake exclusive rights to their bodies. They are "one" in Christian law and under duty to care for the physical needs of each other. For this reason, Paul condemned "fornication," "adultery," and any ploy to selfishly deprive one another of conjugal rights (1 Corinthians 7:1-3ff).

Married couples are charged with the duty of cleaving to each other--till death do they part:

The rule of the Christian family is LEAVE, CLEAVE, AND WEAVE. "*What God has joined together, let not man put asunder*" - Christ (Matthew 19). By the law of God and the grace of God, problems must be worked out.

Marriage comes with legal rights.

Genesis 2:24 Therefore a man shall leave his father and his mother and hold fast to his wife, and they shall become one flesh.

The couple not only has marital rights, but legal rights; that is, the wife comes under the coverture of her husband. Black's defines coverture as follows:

"Coverture. The condition or state of a married woman. Sometimes used elliptically to describe the legal disability which formerly existed at common law from a state of coverture whereby the wife could not own property free from the husband's claim or control. Such restrictions were removed by state Married Woman's Property Acts."

Blackstone Commentaries (p. 442) has this to say about coverture:

"By marriage, the husband and wife are one person in law, that is, the very being or legal existence of the woman is suspended during the marriage, or at least is incorporated and consolidated into that of the husband: under whose wing, protection, and cover, she performs everything; and is therefore called in our law-French a 'feme-covert,' ...and her condition during her marriage is called her coverture."

By treating Americans as "individuals" and not a "family," American courts disparage the law of coverture unless that right is announced and claimed by husband and wife; that is, this truth like all truth must be defended in these statist courts.

Court rulings agree:

"A wife follows the domicile of her husband." Trayner, Latin Legal Maxims and Phrases, etc. "Husband and wife are considered one person (as one flesh and blood) in law." Coke on

Littleton, 112; Jenkins' Eight Centuries of Reports, English Exchequer.

"A wife is not her own mistress, but is under the power of her husband." Coke's Institutes, 5-108 "All things which are the wife's are the husband's." Bracton, de Legibus et Consuetudinibus

Angliae; 2 Kent's Commentaries on American Law.

"Although the property may be the wife's, the husband is the keeper of it, since he is the head of the wife." Coke on Littleton, 112.

The implications of Christian marriage are legally profound and are too numerous to be expound here. But, in summary, a husband has the duty to honor his wife and to protect her life even to the point of using legal force. He may employ every lawful means to protect his family whether it be from thugs on the streets or State actors wearing black robes on a bench called "the court."

Marriage involves trust.

The phrase, "they were both naked" imply implicit and explicit trust. Trust is the foundation of a healthy marriage and a wise couple with do everything in their power to honor the trust of their spouse by keeping promises, protecting secrets, and speaking kindly toward one another. Where there is anger, bitterness, slander, and promise breaking, the marriage shall not long endure.

In summary, the first man was not only placed under law, God placed Christian marriage under law. The failure to see admonitions to Christian marriage as law has been the product of more than a little evil.

10 The Marriage Contract



As stated in the first lesson, the first and most important decision a man must make regarding his marriage, is what law is going to govern his family: the law of gut instinct or the law of the State or the law of Almighty God? The failure of pure devotion to God's law-order is the reason so many marriages steer into rocky reefs.

Second, as stated previously, a marriage is a contract between a mature man and a mature woman to live together under God's law as husband and wife. When two people live together without a contract, this is fornication and concubinage--a state for fools.

The issue for the Christian man is whether to contract under God's laws or State laws or a merger of the two systems which results in legal confusion.

Third, and most important, is when there is a controversy, where does a man go to gain clarity? Does he consult his own gut instincts, or his humanist friends, the State, or God's Word? Truth be known, most Christians follow their belly-button rather than the Holy Scripture.

You can gain clarity about the legal authority of marriage and the superiority of a Biblical covenant by discovering the Biblical principle and applying it to your family and set of circumstances.

10.1 Marriage is a Contract

Genesis 24 is about a search for a bride and a marriage contract. There is no more beautiful picture of a marriage proposal in Scripture than the engagement of Rebecca to Isaac. It stands out like a rose garden in the public square. It burgeons with the fruits of integrity: honorable oaths, lawful purposes, duty, discernment, prayer, dependence on God, honor, full disclosure, valuable consideration, offer, acceptance, and joyful consummation. Before us is an arranged marriage between a royal Bedouin father, and a humble, upper middle class family known as the house of Bethuel.

It is ideal in some ways in that Abraham and Isaac were part of a marvelous covenant and a grand plan for the salvation of the human race. This simply cannot be duplicated. Second, this chapter is unique in that the party of the groom was quite wealthy. This is not always the case when a man finds a potential bride.

Third, there is a bold, dynamic prayer for guidance in this chapter and a marvelous, almost larger than life answer to prayer. Many pray for light and receive it, but few come with the such thundering fulfillment as we find here. Nevertheless, the chapter abounds with human interest and lessons for Christians on a Biblical marriage.

The indispensable lesson on marriage in this chapter is that marriage is a contract between two consenting families. In any contract, there must be an offer, acceptance, consideration, and defined duty. Before us is the marriage of Isaac and Rebecca--a model marriage with a model contract. It is applied to brides, but the principle applies to finding suitable husbands as well. Consider the following lessons:

A Christian marriage is a covenant built on God's law and His sustaining grace. The title "God" is mentioned seven times (7) in Genesis 24; and, the name "LORD" is mentioned no less than twenty times (20). An oath is taken in His name; His direction was sought through prayer, and the characters in the story looked to him, talked about him, and lived under an expectation that He was guiding and leading the search. The reader can see the providence of God at work in this historical event. This is not only a contractual marriage, but a covenant marriage created by and sustained by the LORD God.

A healthy marriage has the blessing and help of parents (24:1-2): Notice that it was Abraham, the father of Isaac, who took the initiative to find a suitable wife for his son. He did not leave this decision up to Isaac. Likewise, no God-fearing son or daughter would dare think of marrying without the consent of a godly father. Fathers love their sons and only want the very best for them. A man that will not consult his father (and mother) about his bride to be drinks the hemlock of pride and arrogance. Such a decision is a draft for disaster!

A godly father looks for suitable wife among "Christian" families (24:3): Abraham lived a separated life. Searching for a godly mate for Isaac among the Canaanites was like trying to find a pure bred poodle among hound dogs--an impossibility.

Abraham's family lived in the plains of Beersheba away from all the powerful, seductive city states in Canaan; that is, they lived apart from the corruption of the age. Finding a wife required a significant investment of time and money. For this reason, Abraham put his chief servant, Eliezer, under contract to travel and locate a suitable wife for Isaac among his clan in Haran in the northern region of Mesopotamia. Interestingly, the choice of the bride was not in the hands of Isaac, but a "matchmaker" under oath with Abraham.

The NT application of this law is that brides must be chosen from the pool of godly women: "*do not be unequally yoked with non believers;*" that is, under no

circumstances is a Christian permitted to marry outside of the faith. It was intermarriage to pagans that diminished Israel. Likewise, the faith of a Christian man will not prevail if he is unequally yoked to a carnal woman. Holiness is not contagious; but, but the spirit of a profane woman goes viral (2 Corinthians 6:14: Nehemiah 10, 11; Ezra 9:1ff).

Finding a godly mate for a son or daughter is like searching for a white tiger in Bengal. What man would want a wife among the autonomous, radical American feminists today? The head-wobbling, in-your-face American female is her own disaster. Furthermore, searching for wife among nominal, pseudo-spiritual, subjective Christians is like tying your horse to a fire engine. Finding a Proverbs 31 woman who "dresses herself with strength," and who "fears the Lord" is a challenge indeed. But, if found "doeth him good all the days of his life" (Proverbs 31:12, 29-31).

The search for a wife involves trust (24:5-9). Obviously, Eliezer was very concerned that he might not find a suitable mate for Isaac, but Abraham assured his servant that the God of heaven would be in charge of the search and guide the process. Likewise, it would be good for fathers and sons to pray much to Almighty God to provide the right person for their sons and daughters.

Finding a wife involves prayer (24:12-14): Further, notice that Eliezer also prayed and asked God for the success of finding a good woman for Isaac. He casts himself in dependence on God for the success of his mission.

Virgins make the best brides (24:16). Eliezer looked for a woman that was "a virgin" which "no man" had spoiled. The Ashkenazi-phallic culet led media portrays virgins as naive and unsophisticated. But, the opposite is true. Virgins make the best wives and best husbands. A sexually promiscuous woman who has given herself to dozens of men man not have anything left to give a husband. She is broken spiritually and lacks a whole heart to share with her husband. Plagued by guilt and shame and lusts, her baggage is more than a strong man can carry. A virgin on the other hand stands ready to give her whole heart, body, and soul to her first love. A woman of integrity will save herself for her husband, and the godly man will wait for her.

Look for an industrious wife (24:18): Eliezer requested a drink of water. Rachael not only lowered her jug into the cistern and raised it again for him to drink, she offered to water all his camels. Did you know that a camel can drink up to twenty (20) gallons of water at a time? Eliezer had ten camels. Rebecca was a beautiful, pure, happy, hard-working woman--a perfect choice for Abraham's son. It appeared the Lord was guiding this servant.

Likewise, a discerning young man will look for calluses on the hands of a potential bride.

A "Christian" woman should be able to state her pedigree (24:22-25). Eliezer immediately made inquiries about her family. Rebecca was a near relative of Abraham. Like a warm fire on a cold day, Rebecca's testimony ignited Eliezer's confidence that God was guiding him. Likewise, a Christian woman should not only be able to lovingly speak about her family, but be able to state in clear terms her Christian history, her story of salvation, and her hope in the person and work of the Lord Jesus Christ. This principle is confirmed in other passages. Priests that could not prove their lineage were rejected for service by Post-Exilic leaders in Jerusalem (Ezra 2:58-63; Nehemiah 13:1-3; 24-31)

A good woman should be recognized and honored (24:22). Eliezer was so impressed with Rebecca's kindness and generosity, it was Christmas in summertime. By placing a gold ring and two bracelets on her arms, Eliezer provided an earnest consideration for the contract he was about to offer. He wasted no time and spared no expense.

When the right woman is found, make haste to get married (24:33-). After the pleasantries were accomplished, Eliezer got down to business--the business of the proposal and contract offer. He reviewed his mission to clarify any trust issues and to dispel any fears the family might have. He did not take days or weeks to secure this bride. He found the right woman and made his offer. Long engagements are a curse. If God has revealed the right woman, why wait? A man should take as long as necessary to determine the will of God regarding a bride, but once he knows the woman is the right one, make haste to get married.

Marriage is a contract (24:40-49): Notice that Eliezer makes an offer of marriage. There is complete, honest disclosure about his mission. There is no deceit. No fraud! Truth reigns! The whole family is excited and gets involved in the proposal: Laban, Bethuel, Rebecca's mother, and Rebecca. The family wants more time, but Eliezer negotiates for an immediate answer. Will Rebecca accept this offer is the great question of the whole negotiation.

Observe the **contract elements** in this marriage proposal:

The Offer: "My master said . . . take a wife for my son . . . who had led me by the right way to take the daughter of my master's kinsman for his son. Now then, if you are going to show steadfast love and faithfulness to my master, tell me; and if not, tell me, that I may turn to the right hand or to the left" (24:37-48).

Full Disclosure: There is no fraud in this contract offer; no words in small print. Eliezer discloses all the family needs to know to make a decision. The whole affair. The fragrance of truth and integrity grace all the negotiations.

Consideration: ". . . the man took a gold ring weighing a half shekel, and two bracelets for her arms weighing ten gold shekel . . . And the servant brought out

jewelry of silver and of gold, and garments, and gave them to Rebekah. He also gave to her brother and to her mother costly ornaments" (24:22, 53). In contractual terms, it was consideration. In Biblical terms, it was a dowry.

Capacity of the parties: Both parties were competent, consenting adults, with a capacity to contract. The party of the groom: Abraham and Eliezer and Isaac; and the bridal party: Rebecca, Bethuel, Rebecca's mother, and Laban (brother).

Intent of the parties to contract: this is not Romantic love. Eliezer was on a mission, and he revealed his intention "*to take a wife for my son*" (24:38).

Legality and honor of the contract: There is no "small print" in this contract negotiation. Everything is above board, acceptable, and honorable per public policy and standards of the day. The whole affair shines with integrity.

Performance standards: the contract is about marriage, performing the duties of husband and wife--an understood tradition. The only issue was "when?" Rebecca's mother and her brother sought an extension of time: "*Let the girl stay for a few days,*" was their stipulation. Eliezer negotiated and pressed for an immediate decision: "*Do not delay me, since the LORD has prospered my way. Send me away that I may go to my master*" (24:33, 56).

Acceptance: "*We will call the girl and consult her wishes . . . will you go with the man? and she said, 'I will'*" (24:57-58). Brother Laban, Rebecca's mother and her father were part of the negotiations, but they did not make the decision for Rebecca as is the practice in pagan cultures. Rebecca willingly, voluntarily gave her consent to the contract offer. And, the parents gave their blessing (24:60).

Marriage needs the permission of parents, not the State: There is no filling out a license, no asking the local government for permission to marry. The marriage contract was a private matter between two families: the house of Abraham and the house of Bethuel. Marriage is germane to the institution of the family not the State.

Covenant aspect of this arrangement. The oath performed, the marriage agreement complete, the story of the marriage of Isaac and Rebecca ends with the arrival of Rebecca in Beersheba. One can only guess about the thoughts of each during the long journey and the anticipation of marrying a person they had never met. Introductions made, Isaac received Rebecca, and she became his wife . . . and he takes great delight in his new possession (24:67).

10.2 The Dowry

A dowry meant the wife became the property of the man. A Biblical marriage was always by dowry, and an important part of marriage. In one sense, a bride was purchased wherein she became the property of her husband with full rights and responsibility attached thereto. Both Rebecca and her family received gold and

silver. She was purchased and became Isaac's property. The word "property" in Latin means "not common with others, owned, special . . ." As property of the husband, he had rights over his acquired wife; likewise, says Paul, the wife had rights in her husband. A denial that the wife was the man's property with a duty to provide and protect her was a breach of marriage. Likewise, a wife that failed to recognize she was the property of man was a breach of contract--rebellion against God's law-order. In the case of seduction and rape, the guilty party had to endow the girl with the dowry of a virgin. If marriage followed, he lost the permanent right of divorce (1 Corinthians 7:4,5; Exodus 22:16, 17; Deuteronomy 22:28, 29).

The wife as property was not unique to Israel. Rome considered the wife and the children the property of man, each of which could be sold in an economic depression as a remedy to ruin . . . but this kind of human trafficking was strictly forbidden in Scripture. Neither the child nor the wife was permitted to be sold into prostitution to resolve an economic crisis. Such a thought was condemned by Sabbatical laws strictly because "I am the LORD" and His law forbade it (Deuteronomy 23:17; Leviticus 19: 20-30).

Modern man balks at the thought the wife is the property of a man but thinks nothing of the State's claim upon its citizens as property of the United States. Calling Americans a "human resource" for the government is nothing more the corpse of slavery dressed in a new suit. It has always been a liberal ploy to enslave man while creating the illusion of freedom.

A dowry involved wealth and forced the man to adopt a profitable business. A dowry consisted of about three years wages. In the case with Jacob, he worked seven years for Rachel. Paying for a wife was common practice. Jacob had to work seven years for Rachael and Leah. This fact is under appreciated by modern men, but its practice contained the highest degree of integrity.

A dowry constituted a bride's protection as well as her children's inheritance. A dowry was the family capital; her security in case of divorce due to the fault of the husband. If there were no dowry, there was no marriage. A conjugal relationship without a dowry constituted concubinage---that is, the woman became less than a "whore"--a practice forbidden in Israel (Deuteronomy 23:17).

A dowry created value; that is, the wife was considered a special treasure to be appreciated and honored. What was purchased had more value to a man than that which was taken; that is, the dowry assured the woman of future love and care. That a wife is to be greatly honored is part of Biblical case law. This system is far superior to the marriage arrangement in the west where women are viewed as sex partners or a "significant other" (1 Peter 3:7; Ephesians 5:27ff).

The dowry was a comfort to the family for their loss of a precious member the family. The loss of a daughter meant economic loss as she was a vital part of

the family business. The failure to practice the dowry in the west by expecting the bride's family to give away a family member and then pay for the wedding is a double tragedy; a loss of a daughter and the loss of income.

A dowry brought honor to the wife; that is, she knew that her husband loved her because he paid the bride price. Later in history, the Jews denigrated the rights of the wife wherein men sought to diminish their partnership in the marriage.

In Ben Sira 36:14-24, the Rabbi said, "A silent wife is a gift from the Lord, and nothing is so precious as her self-discipline." But, the Scripture tells us a good wife *"opens her mouth with wisdom and in her tongue is the law of kindness."* But even so, Biblical people carved out a society where women were treated with dignity and honor, as *"fellow heirs of the grace of life"* unknown in pagan societies . . . and this was due in part to the value men place on brides and their willingness to purchase so precious an asset to begin a family. (NRS w/ Apocrypha; Proverbs 31:26; 1 Peter 3:7).

Government policies undermine the institution of marriage and the dowry system. It is difficult to probe the complete negative impact of democratic governments upon the institution of marriage and the Biblical dowry system. Instead of providing a dowry to the bride's family, most men are forced to provide dowry payments to the state in the form of a slave taxation, a small tax on a marriage license, and a lifetime dowry / tax to the State for protection of the family. These outrageous policies keeps the man and his family in a lifetime of debt and dependency on the State for sustenance. When wealth is transferred to the State and not between families, marriages are weakened and all power is shifted to the State. Thus, the modern State is at war with the institution of marriage.

10.3 The Jurisdiction of Marriage

Do you need a license to get married? There are two jurisdictions in which couples can marry: (a) God's law, Common Law, Church Law, or Constitutional law, or (b) State law or statutory law.

People have married for millenniums without permission from the state. In modern times, Americans have seen the rise of Big Government and its intrusion into every area of life. Government even offers couples a marriage license (a tax). In the O.T. era, the only permission a man or women needed to marry was the permission of the father (Common Law). In the Christian era, clergymen assisted couples to marry under God's law (Common Law). Couples, therefore, need to determine in what jurisdiction they intend to marry.

If a couple chooses to marry under the laws of the state, they will need a marriage license. The marriage license is really a tax for the privilege of having the state be the third party in the marriage. After the wedding ceremony, the marriage license

will be signed and registered at the county courthouse. If a couple marries under *state jurisdiction*, the marriage is between three parties: husband, wife, and state. When a couple gets a license from the state, the state has authority over the marriage and the children brought into this world. A marriage under state law is honorable, but unnecessary for those who understand the Constitution and know God's Word.

The only way the State can interfere with a marriage is if the couple gives them permission to intervene. The *marriage license* is a *permission slip* giving the government authority over the marriage.

10.4 Common Law Jurisdiction

Common law is God's law or Constitutional law. Common law supersedes statutory law.

Congress shall make no law respecting an establishment of religion, or prohibiting the free exercise thereof (Amendment I).

The enumeration in the Constitution, of certain rights, shall not be construed to deny or disparage others retained by the people (Amendment 9).

The Constitution is the "highest law in the land." And, God's Law is supreme above all man-made laws (Acts 5:29). In other words, the Constitution supersedes all statutory laws. Statutory laws are considered "null and void" when they contradict the Constitution.

*. . . the theory of every such government must be, **that an act of the legislature, repugnant to the constitution, is void.** This theory is essentially attached to a written constitution, and is, consequently, to be considered by this court as one of the fundamental principles of our society. . . . (Marbury v. Madison).*

When a couple marries under God's law, they are choosing to live under Common Law. In church law, the father gives the bride away. A marriage license is not needed. Vows are taken, and the couple signs a marriage contract which states they agree to live together as man and wife as opposed to an illicit relationship. They may create a *Certificate of Marriage* which is then recorded at the county courthouse. The sexual union consummates marriage, and the couple becomes "one flesh" (God's Law). In common law, no license is necessary, and the state has no right to interfere with the marriage or with how a Christian couple under God's law

chooses to raise their children. A Common Law²⁰ marriage is a legitimate, God honoring, publicly recognized marriage.

Warning: Common law has received a bad rap from the media and the state. The State does not get excited about people marrying under Common Law, and rightly so. They lose money and they lose control.

It is important that couples not only understand God's Law regarding marriage (Genesis 2, Matthew 19, 1 Corinthians 7), but that they understand the primacy of Constitutional Law. If they do not claim their Constitutional right to pursue "life, liberty, and happiness," the government assumes they have yielded their rights in favor of statutory regulation. Unfortunately, you have to assert your rights to enjoy them. If you choose to marry under state law, you are yielding your rights to the government. If you choose to marry under God's Law, you are asserting your God-given rights as secured by the nation's constitution.

²⁰ The term "common law marriage" has been denigrated by the State in order to usurp power over the family. By narrowing the definition of "common law marriage" to years of co-habitation instead of in its intended lawful sense as a marriage under the laws of the LORD God, the state has been able to conquer the institution of marriage. Thus, whoever controls the definition, controls the argument.

11 Sample Marriage Contract

between

Name of Groom and Name of Bride

The authority for this covenant / contract shall reside in the following:

Genesis 2:24 Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife: and they shall be one flesh.

Matthew 19:4-6 And he answered and said unto them, Have ye not read, that he which made them at the beginning made them male and female, 5 And said, For this cause shall a man leave father and mother, and shall cleave to his wife: and they twain shall be one flesh? 6 Wherefore they are no more twain, but one flesh. What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder.

We hold these Truths to be self-evident, that all Men are created equal, that they are endowed by their Creator with certain unalienable Rights, that among these are Life, Liberty and the pursuit of Happiness (The Declaration of Independence).

Unlimited Right to Contract: No State shall . . . pass any Bill of Attainder, ex post facto Law, or Law impairing the Obligation of Contracts, or grant any Title of Nobility. (United States Constitution, Article 1, Section 10).

Congress shall make no law respecting an establishment of religion, or prohibiting the free exercise thereof . . . (Bill of Rights, Amendment I).

The enumeration in the Constitution, of certain rights, shall not be construed to deny or disparage others retained by the people (Amendment 9, Bill of Rights).

A man “owes no such duty to the State, since he receives nothing therefrom beyond the protection of his life and property” (Hale v. Henkel, 201 U.S. 43 (1906)).

“ . . . the fundamental and paramount law of the nation, and consequently, the theory of every such government must be, that an act of the legislature, repugnant to the constitution, is void” (Marbury v. Madison (1803)).

“ All persons are born free, and have certain natural, inherent and inalienable rights, among which are the rights of enjoying and defending life and liberty, of acquiring, possessing and protecting property, and of seeking and obtaining safety and happiness” (New Mexico Constitution, Article I, Section 4).

12 Declaration of Marriage

COME NOW THE UNDERSIGNED PARTIES, *Name of Groom and Name of Bride*, creations of Almighty God, having declined the option of state franchise and the disabilities associated therewith, do assert our God-given rights -- "rights reserved . . . for the People" (Amendment I; Amendment X), under the authority of Biblical Law, Common Law, as protected by the Constitution, having taken our marriage vows with the Lord Jesus Christ as our witness in the company of family and friends, do now hereby state our Declaration of Marriage to live together as Man and Wife:

We affirm that we are Citizens of the united states of America endowed by our Creator with certain unalienable rights; that we are of legal age, competent to contract; and, that we knowingly, voluntarily, and willingly entered into the Holy Estate of Marriage without state intervention, permission, or license. We affirm the Rights reserved for WE THE PEOPLE and with full authority do hereby exercise the right to marry under the laws of Almighty God.

From the date of this Declaration, we shall be known as husband and wife, Mr. & Mrs. *Name of Groom*, and the title Sui Juris shall remain with *Name of Groom* as husband, and Alieni Juris shall remain with *Name of Bride*, who shall hereafter be known as *Mrs. Name of Groom*, wife of *Name of Groom* that is, a wife subject to and under the protection of her husband by choice.

That should we bear children in this union, our desire is that they be reared lovingly under God's Law jointly with the responsibility and care of the children equally divided and sustenance maintained by both parties; that the purchase of assets in joint names, the same shall be considered as held in common tenancy. Other than debts validly contracted for services or materials or otherwise related to joint property of the Husband and Wife, if any, the Husband, Sui-Juris, shall have the right to act for, to obligate for, act for, contract for and act to the benefit of his Wife, Alieni-Juris, under the Common Law.

This is the Full Agreement of the parties and there are no agreements other than those stated herein. This agreement shall only be modified by written agreement executed by both parties hereto.

"What God has joined together, let no man put asunder" (Jesus).

Executed on the ____ day of _____, in the year of our Lord _____ "All rights reserved"

Signature of Husband _____
(Child of God) Address _____

Signature of Wife _____ (Child of
God)Address _____

Witness _____
Address _____

Witness _____
Address _____

Minister of the Gospel _____

13 Certification of a Marriage Covenant

This Marriage Document Certifies that the Bride and Groom were united in Holy Matrimony by a Minister of the Gospel before His Majesty in Heaven under Biblical Law in the County of Bernalillo in the sovereign state of Colorado on the _____ day of _____, in the year of our Lord _____, being witnessed by family and friends.

Under the Laws of the LORD God

Bride Groom

Witness Witness

“All rights reserved”

Minister of the Gospel

14 The Marriage Covenant and the Third Commandment

*Exodus 20:7 Thou shalt not take the name of the LORD thy God in vain; for the LORD will not hold **him** guiltless that taketh his name in vain.*



All that is wrong with marriage can be traced back to a violation of the 3rd Commandment and the failure to recognize, respect, and honor His name. A person's first encounter with an oath is usually at a wedding.

The first concern of a Christian should be the honor of God's Name.

The honor of the name of God is the first concern in the Lord's prayer, "Hallowed be thy name." Divorces occur because one spouse or both have failed to honor the name of Christ and take their vows seriously.

The archaic term *Hallowed (be thy name)* comes from the Greek word "holy" or "sanctify." It is an aorist imperative.

The first concern brought to the attention of the disciples is not one's daily bread or even the call to love others, but the duty to honor God's holy name. His name be considered holy among men.

Taking an oath honors the name of the LORD God.

His name is "holy" and "terrible." It is magnified above all names. His name rejoices hearts and creates fear. The Tetragrammaton declares His Sovereignty; the name "God" (Elohim) declares his deity as the triune Creator. Invoking an oath in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ is a witness of God's work in history through His Son (Psalm 33:21; 86:11; 99:3; 102:15; 145:21; Philippians 2:9-12).

Thus, oaths are an act of worship as an oath honored the name of the Lord.

Christ's prohibition against oaths, "Swear not at all" (Matthew 5:34) must be taken in light of the whole of Scripture. Christ is not forbidding taking of oaths. Rather, he condemns the mundane, trivial swearing on a day-to-day basis in the marketplace. Oath taking should be rare and reserved for testimony in a controversy where accusation has severe consequences. The Jews of Christ day were so knavish that vendors required substantiation of every minor assertion. Christ was telling people

to be so trustworthy that no oath is necessary in day-to-day interactions with men.

An oath declares His existence.

If God does not exist, an oath is superfluous. There is no One to judge the witness if he lies. In early America, *atheists were never allowed to testify in court*. Oaths were sacred, witnessing to the authority of God. How could an *atheist* take an *oath*? For an atheist, every man is his own god.

Taking His name in an appropriate oath honors His name and bears witness that God is active in the affairs of man judging the wicked and rewarding the righteous. *A godly oath recognizes God as the ground and source of all things*. Thus, the removal of God's name from oaths is a declaration of independence from Him.

Every oath involves the following:

Convocation: A solemn assemble of people for a righteous purpose.

Invocation: Invoking the Name of the Lord God

Invitation: Inviting God to witness and to judge testimony.

Declaration: A promise to tell the truth.

Execution: Telling the truth.

After the French journalist Alexis de Tocqueville came to America, he published his observations in the famous book Democracy in America. He observed the following during his travels through the states:

While I was in America, a witness, who happened to be called at the assizes of the county of Chester (state of New York), declared that he did not believe in the existence of God or in the immortality of the soul. The judge refused to admit his evidence, on the ground that the witness had destroyed beforehand all the confidence of the court in what he was about to say. The newspapers related the fact without any further comment (A. de Tocqueville, 1 "The Republic of the United States of America and Its Political Institutions, Reviewed and Examined," 12 (H. Reeves, trans., 1851). Cited in D. Barton, Myth of Separation, p. 81-82.).

Taking an oath declares the deity that one serves.

Christians are not theists that believe all religions are equal. They serve the Lord God; i.e., the one true infinite personal triune Spirit who entered history at Bethlehem in the person of Christ. Atheists would deny their beliefs if they took an

oath in the name of God. Christians are required to take oaths in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ. God's people are not permitted to take an oath in the name of a pagan deity, or their own name, or the name of the State. Even an oath taken in the generic name of "God" is questionable because it leaves doubt as to what "god" a man serves. Taking an oath requires specificity.

*Deuteronomy 6:13 **Thou shalt** fear the LORD thy God, and serve him, and **shalt swear** by his name.*

Taking His name means that oaths must be sworn in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ.

This should cause a Christian to think through what he is going to do when he is called into court and asked to take meaningless State oaths which leaves out the name of the Lord Jesus Christ. The Westminster Confession of Faith (1647) says that swearing an oath is an act "of religious worship" and "the Name of God only is that by which men ought to swear (*The Westminster Confession of Faith*, ch. xxii.i., cf. *The Larger Catechism*, Q. 108).

When this author was asked to take a State oath that left out the name of God, he refused. I informed the Court that as a Christian, I was only allowed to take an oath in the name of the LORD God. The Bailiff panicked. Court recessed. Telephone calls were made to other judges. Not once in the history of a New Mexico State Court had anyone ever refused to take an oath stated the prosecuting attorney. Finally, a ward of the Court said, "If you don't take our oath, we will cite you for contempt of Court. I responded, "I'm sorry, but I still can't take your pagan oath, but I'll tell you what I will do. I will swear myself in." I raised my hand and stated, "In the name of the Lord Jesus Christ, I promise to tell the truth." You could hear a pin drop. "Good enough," said the judge . . . and then we proceeded. I don't think anyone in the court will forget what happened. I sure didn't.

Taking an oath in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ proclaims the truth that He is the Judge of all men.

Acts 17:31 because he has fixed a day on which he will judge the world in righteousness by a man whom he has appointed; and of this he has given assurance to all by raising him from the dead."

2 Timothy 4:1 I charge you in the presence of God and of Christ Jesus, who is to judge the living and the dead, and by his appearing and his kingdom:

When Christians take an oath in the name of Christ, they proclaim His triumphant history and His session at the right hand of God. For "according to my gospel, God judges the secrets of men by Christ Jesus" (Romans 2:16; I Peter 4:5).

Taking an oath in His Name declares one's integrity.

Numbers 30:2 If a man vows a vow to the LORD, or swears an oath to bind himself by a pledge, he shall not break his word. He shall do according to all that proceeds out of his mouth.

When a man or woman takes an oath they are pledging their integrity. They are saying, "I say what I mean, and I will do what I say," and that, "I will speak accurately in accord with truth and reality." When a couple says, "I do," they mean that they are committing their precious all to keep their vow before God.

2 Corinthians 4:2 But we have renounced disgraceful, underhanded ways. We refuse to practice cunning or to tamper with God's word, but by the open statement of the truth we would commend ourselves to everyone's conscience in the sight of God.

Taking His Name means that a man must keep his oath.

The Third Commandment does not ban oaths but it does prohibit taking oaths that are insincere and superficial. Not all oath taking is prohibited. The key is the word "vain" which means falsehood. It is directed at disingenuous speech. Oaths are necessary in matters of controversy where truth is necessary for the success of a matter.

Every affidavit a man writes must be true, totally true, and sworn only in the Name of the Lord Jesus Christ.

A divorce is a serious violation of the Third Commandment because one or both parties break their vow. However, a divorce in the case of adultery is not a violation of a covenant because adultery nullifies the innocent spouse's contract obligations.

A false oath is more serious than murder or theft. Murder takes a single man's life and theft takes his property. But, a defective oath is an assault on the life of the entire society. It places men under the curse rather than under the blessing of God (Rushdoony).

14.1 The Curse

A curse is pronounced on oath breakers, "*for the LORD will not hold him guiltless who takes his name in vain.*" An oath is an appeal to God to judge the oath-taker if he does not tell the truth. A righteous curse is an appeal to God to stand with us for righteousness' sake or to stand with us in our resistance of evil.

A man may not curse his father or mother. Cursing a father merited the death penalty and is as criminal as attempted murder (Exodus 21:15-17).

Citizens were forbidden to curse a ruler of the people (Exodus. 22:28). Further, it is *verboten* to resist duly constituted authority—authority that recognizes the supremacy of God’s law order and administers in light of it (Romans 13:1).

But, it is not wrong to resist evil, especially if it is of a criminal nature. Trivial injuries can be ignored (Matthew 5:39). Resisting evil, *mala en se*, is necessary if good is to triumph over unrighteousness. Jehoiada revolted against Athaliah, the de facto queen, and ordered her assassination. What Queen Athaliah called "treason," was in reality allegiance to God (2 Kings 11:14). The Christian may be called to stand against oppression and tyranny and oath breakers in public office—but, in so doing one must be willing to pay the price of resistance.

14.2 Prohibitions Against Swearing

The Third Commandment prohibits profanity.

The word "holy" refers to that which is pure and good and set aside for a sacred cause. Holy things are like fine China set aside for a noble purpose. The Greek word for “profane” (Latin) comes from two words “pro”, before, and “fanum”, temple; i.e., it refers to that which is common. Profane things are like wash that is thrown into the street; like bringing the unclean into the temple or that which is sacred into market place.

In relation to speech, profanity refers to the casual use of holy language or outright contempt for that which is sacred. Profanity includes vulgar and obscene talk which appeals to man’s sexual energies for power over circumstances. In the Hebrew mind, both a jewel in a pig's snout and bringing a pig into the house of the Lord was profane.

14.3 Definitions

Swearing: verbal expressions of aggression or frustration.

Cursing: The invoking of some curse or misfortune upon an adversary.

Profanity: A form of swearing where religion or deities are invoked.

Blasphemy: vilifying or ridiculing objects of worship.

Obscenity: Use of bathroom words or phrases that appeal to the prurient interest of man.

Vulgarity: A form of swearing that uses pelvic terms to express contempt. Words that draw upon a man sexual energy instead of words that draw upon the omnipotence of Almighty God.

Mince words²¹: Substitute curse words like “dang” for “damn.”

Vulgarity is a cry for power. Profanity invokes man's lawless sexual energies as a source power. But, the godly man looks to God and His creative powers to change circumstances.

According to Ashley Montagu, in The Anatomy of Swearing, swearing or vulgarity is not a universal phenomenon. Swearing is purely an artificial urge that is culturally acquired—the result of anger. The use of obscenity is not normal; Obscenity is used when a society is changing its gods and shows contempt for the Lord Jesus Christ.

Most societies and civic groups have laws against obscenity, but they are rarely enforced. During WWII there were signs in factories dominated by female workers that read, “No Swearing: there may be a gentleman present.” Even today various corporations have signs prohibiting the use of vulgarity.

The Third Commandment requires good men to rebuke profanity. Neither the Bible nor the First Amendment protect obscenity. A society does not need to tolerate obscenity in order to protect free speech. The doctrine of free speech is necessary for a dialogue of ideas, but does not contain in it a right to access vulgarity. Rights come from God, and God has declared, “Let your speech always be gracious, seasoned with salt, so that you may know how you ought to answer each person . . . put away obscene talk from your mouth” (ESV Colossians 4:6, 8).

How can any Christian sit back while people use the name of "Sweet Jesus" profanely?

*Jesus is the sweetest name I know,
And He's just the same as His lovely name,
And that's the reason why I love Him so;
Oh, Jesus is the sweetest name I know.*

He is the Lord Jesus Christ, and the utterance of His Name requires reverence and respect. Since He is the Lord our Savior (Philippians 2:8-13), a man needs to develop a strategy on how to confront profanity in a way that honors Christ and is winsome to careless men. In the Book of Acts we read how God struck Ananias and Sapphira dead for lying to the Holy Spirit and dishonoring God's Name. “So great fear came upon all the church and upon all who heard these things” (Acts 5:1-11).

The Third Commandment prohibits blasphemy. Blasphemy is the thoughtless invoking of God's name during states of frustration. Blasphemy is more than carelessness about the use of God's name. It is the defamatory, rebellious, and

²¹ Mince words: Words that soften the effect of the intent.

wicked use of gutter talk to express rejection of God's sovereignty. It contains an attempt to amass man's vile energies in order to assert his will over others. It consults the gods of chaos and begs them to initiate change in favor of the blasphemer. Thus, blasphemy is a denial of Christ and the rejection of His authority over man (Rushdoony).

It is possible to pray and sing in vain. When we approach God casually or fall into cold and indifferent worship, we are actually breaking the Third Commandment. Furthermore, casual, sloppy dress at a sacred ceremony is an act of profanity (Exodus 19:10). People will dress better for a PTA meeting than for church. If you are going to meet the King, dress like it! Sing like it!

Leviticus 20:7 Consecrate yourselves, therefore, and be holy, for I am the LORD your God.

Profane men do not make for a better world as evil men cannot produce a better society. God ordered the execution of the profane in (Leviticus 20:3), and when Christ returns, "He will separate *the holy* from *the profane* as a shepherd separates the sheep from the goats" (Matthew 25:32).

The world is not bettered by disobedience and rebellion. Obscene language may entertain vulgar men, but good men are not amused. Order does not come out of chaos. Evil men cannot energize society for good, they can only vulturize its vitality. Vulgar men disqualify themselves for leadership because evil does not advance goodness.

The Third Commandment forbids mixing lies and truth, the holy and the profane.

In relation to marriage, the Third Commandment does not permit the intermarriage of Christians with unbelievers. Marriage of a Christian to unbeliever is profane. Marriage under State law is profane because it denies there is one, absolute Lawgiver and one absolute law.

Leviticus 18:21 You shall not give any of your children to offer them to Molech (the king), and so profane the name of your God: I am the LORD.

14.4 Writing God's Name Worthily

God's people in the Old Testament understood what it meant to show reverence to God by honoring His Name.

The scribes who copied the Scriptures by hand had many complex rules that enabled them to copy the Scriptures very carefully and accurately. They had word counts and letter counts at the end of each page to ensure that they had not added or left out anything that they were responsible to copy. Whenever a scribe came to

one of the secondary Names of God such as Elohim, or El-Shaddai, they stopped and put down their pens. They took up new pens and carefully wrote that Name. However, when they came to the principal Name that God had used to reveal Himself in the Burning Bush to Moses, Jehovah or Yahweh, for which they used the four letters YHWH, they rose from their seats, washed themselves, and clothed themselves with new, clean garments, dedicated for this purpose. Then they were to pray and confess their sins, take up a new pen, and fresh ink, in order to write those four letters YHWH– for Yahweh.

We do not do that today. However, in our mission, it has always been one a Christian principle to ensure that every word referring to the Lord is capitalized, including the personal pronoun Him, or His, when referring to the LORD God or a sacred title.

When the great architect Sir Christopher Wren was building St. Paul's Cathedral in London he ordered signs to be placed throughout the construction site declaring:

Due to the heinous custom of labourers taking the Name of the Lord God in vain, each person is hereby placed on notice that it shall be sufficient cause for immediate dismissal if the Name of God is heard taken in vain in this place.

In summary, all that is wrong with marriage can be traced back to a violation the 3rd Commandment and the failure to recognize, respect, and honor His name. All divorces occur because young men and woman do not take their vows seriously. "Jesus is the sweetest name I know." Let us do all we can to honor His sweet name. And, since all married people take a vow, let them take it with integrity, and so honor the name of Christ.

14.5 Vows of Prince William

The royal wedding vows of Prince William and Catherine Middleton followed a rigid script of words and rituals based on the honorable traditional Anglican wedding ceremony prescribed in the Book of Common Prayer. The Archbishop of Canterbury, chief clergyman for the Church of England, officiated the solemn event. In the same manner as Princess Diana before here, Catherine left out the vow to "obey" her husband--a violation of family law in Genesis 3:16 and 1 Peter 3:6. Nevertheless, the Book of Common Prayer contains an honorable Christian vow, and for that reason the Marriage Ceremony in the Anglican Book of Common Prayer is Included herein.

15 The Form of Solemnization of Matrimony

Book of Common Prayer

First the Banns of all that are to be married together must be published in the Church three several Sundays, during the time of Morning Service, or of Evening Service, (if there be no Morning Service,) immediately after the second Lesson; the Curate saying after the accustomed manner,

I PUBLISH the Banns of Marriage between *M.* of _____ and *N.* of _____. If any of you know cause, or just impediment, why these two persons should not be joined together in holy Matrimony, ye are to declare it. This is the first [*second*, or *third*] time of asking.

And if the persons that are to be married dwell in divers Parishes, the Banns must be asked in both Parishes; and the Curate of the one Parish shall not solemnize Matrimony betwixt them, without a Certificate of the Banns being thrice asked, from the Curate of the other Parish.

At the day and time appointed for solemnization of Matrimony, the persons to be married shall come into the body of the Church with their friends and neighbours: and there standing together, the Man on the right hand, and the Woman on the left, the Priest shall say,

DEARLY beloved, we are gathered together here in the sight of God, and in the face of this congregation, to join together this Man and this Woman in holy Matrimony; which is an honorable estate, instituted of God in the time of man's innocency, signifying unto us the mystical union that is betwixt Christ and his Church; which holy estate Christ adorned and beautified with his presence, and first miracle that he wrought, in Cana of Galilee; and is commended of Saint Paul to be honorable among all men: and therefore is not by any to be enterprise, nor taken in hand, unadvisedly, lightly, or wantonly, to satisfy men's carnal lusts and appetites, like brute beasts that have no understanding; but reverently, discreetly, advisedly, soberly, and in the fear of God; duly considering the causes for which Matrimony was ordained.

First, It was ordained for the procreation of children, to be brought up in the fear and nurture of the Lord, and to the praise of his holy Name.

Secondly, It was ordained for a remedy against sin, and to avoid fornication; that such persons as have not the gift of contingency might marry, and keep themselves undefiled members of Christ's body.

Thirdly, It was ordained for the mutual society, help, and comfort, that the one ought to have of the other, both in prosperity and adversity. Into which holy estate these two persons present

come now to be joined. Therefore, if any man can shew any just cause, why they may not lawfully be joined together, let him now speak, or else hereafter forever hold his peace.

And also, speaking unto the persons that shall be married, he shall say,

I REQUIRE and charge you both, as ye will answer at the dreadful day of judgment when the secrets of all hearts shall be disclosed, that if either of you know any impediment, why ye may not be lawfully joined together in Matrimony, ye do now confess it. For be ye well assured, that so many as are coupled together otherwise than God's Word doth allow are not joined together by God; neither is their Matrimony lawful.

At which day of Marriage, if any man do allege and declare any impediment, why they may not be coupled together in Matrimony, by God's Law, or the Laws of this Realm; and will be bound, and sufficient sureties with him, to the parties; or else put in a Caution (to the full value of such charges as the persons to be married do thereby sustain) to prove his allegation: then the solemnization must be deferred, until such time as the truth be tried.

If no impediment be alleged, then shall the Curate say unto the Man,

M. WILT thou have this Woman to thy wedded Wife, to live together after God's ordinance in the holy estate of Matrimony? Wilt thou love her, comfort her, honour, and keep her in sickness and in health; and, forsaking all other, keep thee only unto her, so long as ye both shall live?

The Man shall answer, I will.

Then shall the Priest say unto the Woman,

N. WILT thou have this Man to thy wedded Husband, to live together after God's ordinance in the holy estate of Matrimony? Wilt thou obey him, and serve him, love, honour, and keep him in sickness and in health; and, forsaking all other, keep thee only unto him, so long as ye both shall live?

The Woman shall answer, I will.

Then shall the Minister say,

Who giveth this Woman to be married to this Man?

Then shall they give their troth to each other in this manner.

The Minister, receiving the Woman at her father's or friend's hands, shall cause the Man with his right hand to take the Woman by her right hand, and to say after him as followeth.

I *M.* take thee *N.* to my wedded Wife, to have and to hold from this day forward, for better or for worse, for richer or for poorer, in sickness and in health, to love and to cherish, till death us do part, according to God's holy ordinance; and thereto I plight thee my troth.

Then shall they loose their hands; and the Woman, with her right hand taking the Man by his right hand, shall likewise say after the Minister,

I *N.* take thee *M.* to my wedded Husband, to have and to hold from this day forward, for better or for worse, for richer or for poorer, in sickness and in health, to love, cherish, and to obey, till death us do part, according to God's holy ordinance; and thereto I give thee my troth.

Then shall they again loose their hands; and the Man shall give unto the Woman a Ring, laying the same upon the book with the accustomed duty to the Priest and Clerk. And the Priest, taking the Ring, shall deliver it unto the Man, to put it upon the fourth finger of the Woman's left hand. And the Man holding the Ring there, and taught by the Priest, shall say,

WITH this Ring I thee wed, with my Body I thee worship, and with all my worldly Goods I thee endow: In the Name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost. Amen.

Then the Man leaving the Ring upon the fourth finger of the Woman's left hand, they shall both kneel down, and the Minister shall say,

Let us pray.

O ETERNAL God, Creator and Preserver of all mankind, Giver of all spiritual grace, the Author of everlasting life; Send thy blessing upon these thy servants, this Man and this Woman, whom we bless in thy Name; that, as Isaac and Rebecca lived faithfully together, so these persons may surely perform and keep the vow and covenant betwixt them made, (whereof this Ring given and received is a token and pledge,) and may ever remain in perfect love and peace together, and live according to thy laws; through Jesus Christ our Lord. *Amen.*

Then shall the Priest join their right hands together, and say,

Those whom God hath joined together let no man put asunder.

Then shall the Minister speak unto the people.

FORASMUCH as *M.* and *N.* have consented together in holy Wedlock, and have witnessed the same before God and this company, and thereto have given and pledged their troth either to other, and have declared the same by giving and receiving of a Ring, and by joining of hands; I pronounce that they be Man and Wife together, In the Name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost. Amen.

And the Minister shall add this Blessing.

GOD the Father, God the Son, God the Holy Ghost, bless, preserve, and keep you; the Lord mercifully with his favour look upon you; and so fill you with all spiritual benediction and grace, that ye may so live together in this life, that in the world to come ye may have life everlasting.
Amen.

Then the Minister or Clerks, going to the Lord's Table, shall say or sing this Psalm following.

*Beati Omnes*²² Psalm 128.

BLESSED are all they that fear the Lord: and walk in his ways. For thou shalt eat the labour of thine hands: O well is thee, and happy shalt thou be. Thy wife shall be as the fruitful vine: upon the walls of thine house; Thy children like the olive-branches: round about thy table. Lo, thus shall the man be blessed: that feareth the Lord. The Lord from out of Sion shall so bless thee: that thou shalt see Jerusalem in prosperity all thy lifelong; Yea, that thou shalt see thy children's children: and peace upon Israel. Glory be to the Father, and to the Son: and to the Holy Ghost; As it was in the beginning, is now, and ever shall be: world without end. Amen.

Note: the blessed couple is one that fears God and keeps His Commandments.

²² Beati Omnes: Latin for "All the Blessed Ones."

16 The Poisonous Tree

*Deuteronomy 29:18 Beware lest there should be among you man, or woman, or **family**, or tribe, whose heart turneth away this day from the LORD our God, to go and serve the gods of these nations; lest there should be among you a root that beareth **gall** (poison) and **wormwood** (bitterness);*



On April 10, 1815 Mount Tabora erupted on the Island of Subawa in Indonesia and was followed by six months of steam, smoke, and phreatic eruptions. It was called "The Year Without a Summer" which lowered global temperatures and was the cause of worldwide harvest failures. In the end, over 100,000 people were killed.

Modern man is fascinated by volcanoes and global catastrophes. But, there is nothing that compares with Tsunami

that hit mankind on the day Adam and Eve ate the forbidden fruit on the Poisonous Tree²³.

On that fatal day, sin swamped all of humanity. Call it "the fall of man," or "Eve's transgression," "Adam's sin," or the "fruit of the Poisonous Tree," its toxicity produced universal death. Beauty turned ugly; health lost the battle to disease; life bowed to death; peace and order gave way to chaos; morality struggled to defend itself from total anarchy; and, a lie could travel halfway around the world before truth got its boots on.

The term "genesis" refers to the origin of things. The Book of Genesis shows us the first couple, the first sin, the first promise, the first murder, the first polygamous relationship, the first city, the first universal judgment, the first rainbow, and the origin of the nations. Genesis is a book of "firsts."

²³ The fruit of the Poisonous Tree is a metaphor of sin and its terrible consequences. In law, the phrase refers to evidence obtained from illegal search and seizure or coercive interrogation.

There are two mega-catastrophes in Genesis: the fall of man, and the flood of Noah. Both wrought colossal destruction, but nothing in history compares with the devastation that Adam's sin brought to humanity. Before sin entered the world, the first couple was naked enjoying the wonders of creation; and, after the serpent hatched his eggs, death, nakedness, shame, blame shifting, and murder took up residence in the souls of men. Thus, begins the traumatic history of man which is a record of disease, deformity, fear, trauma, war, conquest, torture, and untold suffering.

To try and articulate the power of sin at work within a family is a Herculean task, but it is necessary if a Christian couple is going to raise a family that doesn't wilt like a flower under sin's heat. To find a solution, a person must define the problem. The problem in the family is not "Men are from Mars; and Women are from Venus;" or poverty or the environment or a "wounded inner child," but sin's poison at work in each member of the family. Sin is the problem; law and grace are the solution.

16.1 Whatever Became of Sin?

Have you noticed that the word "sin" is hardly used anymore? In the alleged Sandy Hook shootings, Adam Lanza, the twenty-year old murderer was called a "mental case," "insane," and "psychotic," but not a "sinner." In the Boston bombings, the two suspects were labeled "terrorists" and "crazy," but not sinners. In the Fort Hood Shootings, Moslem Army Major Hasan was accused of "workplace violence" and forced to face a "sanity board" because he "lacks mental responsibility and capacity," but at no time was he labeled a sinner or a Moslem who let hate conquer his heart. When Frederick Whitfield wrote, "There is a Name I love to Hear," His first stanza, "I need Thee precious Jesus, for I am full of sin" was omitted without Whitfield's sanction. Why? Whatever happened to the word "sin" or "sinner?"

When the tax collector was overcome with his thievery, he went to the temple, bowed his head to the earth, beat his chest, and cried, "God be merciful to me a sinner" (Luke 18:3). His robbery was not due to a lack of education or a psychotic fit, but sin rooted deeply in his own nature. Having identified the real problem . . . and having sought God's solution, the publican left his knees a changed man.

Clearly, studies in psychology have become more important than studies in theology. Psychologists are more in demand than Biblical pastors; the Mental Health Manual has superseded the Bible as the authority on behavior; and psychological terms have replaced Biblical terms. Instead of placing the blame on sinners, the liberal blame guns, or parents, or the environment, or poor mental health training. For the humanist, the great remedy for all these criminal acts is more legislation, psychological counseling, and education. Whatever happened to the need for repentance or regeneration or revival?

16.2 Sin Defined

Whatever became of sin? The concept of sin has all but disappeared in studies on anthropology. No longer is human behavior evaluated in Biblical terms. Rather, human problems are discussed in psychological terms like "disorders," and "mental illness." These change in terms expose a change in gods. Bad behavior is said to be the result of poor choices, insanity, bi-polar personalities, anger issues, depression, alcohol abuse, sexual addiction, child abuse, paranoia, schizophrenia, pedophilia, obsessive-compulsive patterns. Because sin is no longer the problem, the cure is no longer Jesus Christ and the cross. Because pastors are products of a humanistic education, churches are inundated with psychobabble. Psychologists have become the high priests of society who are leading men to hell, and Christian psychologists are their apprentices.

Because of the apotheosis of psychology in modern society, it is necessary to revisit the theology of sin. The PC (USA) defines sin in its Book of Confessions this way.

Q. 14. What is sin? A. Sin is any want of conformity unto, or transgression of, the law of God. (Referenced: I John 3:4; James 4:17; Romans 3:23)

Sin is a destructive power seeded in man that pushes him to disobey God's law, to the grief of Almighty God and to the detriment and harm of his fellowman. Think of sin as a fire smoldering in parents as well as children capable of burning a house to the ground. That fire must be contained or the family will go up in flames.

16.3 Sin in the First Family (Genesis 3:1-6)

One of the goals of the Book of Genesis is to help mankind understand what causes so much pain and suffering in the human race. That cause is sin and the results of eating the fruit from the Poisonous Tree. The reader should note the nature of the first temptation:

The agency of temptation: the beautiful hissing serpent.

Raising Doubt: "hath God said . . ." Doubt is the mother of all sins.

Contradiction of God's Word: "Ye shall not surely die." Every work of the evil one is designed to undermine the Word of God as the authority in the home.

A glittering promise: "Ye shall be as gods knowing good and evil" ~ a god is a sovereign, autonomous source of law.

Deception: " but the woman was deceived and became a transgressor" ~ a violator of law (1 Timothy 2:14).

Reversal of God's law order: " . . she took of the fruit thereof, and did eat, and gave also unto her husband with her . . ." Adam, having firsthand knowledge of

God's Law-word failed to protect his wife, gave in to her passions, committed idolatry by putting her will above God's, and in so doing became the willful transgressor.

The act of Disobedience: ". . . and did eat."

The mother of all sins is DOUBT! The first couple doubted God's Word and believed the Serpent's promise. They disobeyed God's law and sinned. When guilt and shame collaborated to expose the nakedness of the first couple, their coping strategy was to "cover up" and hide from God. The rest is history. And, this scenario is repeated a million times a day wherein men and women debate God's Word making room for the hissing snake. Sin reigns in the mind, heart, and body of people until they are introduced to Christ who "breaks the power of canceled sin . . . *and* sets the prisoner free; *and whose* blood can make the foulest clean . . ." ²⁴

16.4 Toxins at Work in the First Family (3:7ff)

- **Spiritual death:** at that moment Adam and Eve were cut off from communion with God.
- **Self-consciousness and guilt**²⁵: "The eyes of them both were opened."
- **Shame**²⁶: "They knew they were naked."
- **Cover up:** "They sewed fig leaves together, and made themselves aprons."- a symbol of religious humanism and man's attempt to deal with sin.
- **Hiding from God:** "Adam and his wife hid themselves from the presence of the Lord."
- **Fear:** "I was afraid."
- **Blame shifting:** "The woman whom thou gavest to be with me, she gave me of the tree, and I did eat," and the woman said, "the serpent beguiled me, and I did eat."
- **The serpent cursed:** "cursed above all cattle . . ."

²⁴ Chorus: Wesley, (1740): "Oh, For a Thousand Tongues to Sing."

²⁵ In Adam's sin, the consciousness of Adam and Eve became alive and active wherein guilt pounded its drums in the soul of each.

²⁶ Shame: the painful feeling of humiliation and distress caused by the consciousness of breaking God's law.

- **Multiplication of sorrow upon the woman:** "I will greatly multiply thy sorrow."
- **The ground cursed and man forced to work:** "cursed is the ground for thy sake; in sorrow shalt thou eat of it all the days of thy life . . . thorns and thistles . . . the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread"
- **Physical death:** "till you return to the ground."
- **The multiplication of evil:** the next few chapters are filled with consequences of sin in the family including murder, lying, blame, self-pity, polygamy, compromise, and violence of all kinds (Genesis 4-6).

16.5 Fruits of the Poisonous Tree

A father and mother would do well to recognize sin at work in the family, and to be alert to any member of the family that makes friends with the hissing snake or plays near the Poisonous Tree. Consider the fruits of sin:

In Mark 7, Jesus identifies sins of the heart.

*Mark 7:21 For from within, out of the **heart** of men, proceed evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders, Thefts, covetousness, wickedness, deceit, lasciviousness, an evil eye, blasphemy, pride, foolishness: All these evil things come from within, and they defile a person."*

In Romans 1, Paul identifies the character of pagan history. Notice how sin affects the mind, emotions, and body / actions of humanity.

*Romans 1:21-31 Because that, when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish **heart** was darkened . . . Wherefore God also gave them up to uncleanness through the lusts of their own hearts, to dishonor their own bodies between themselves . . . For this cause God gave them up unto vile affections: for even their women did change the natural use into that which is against nature . . . being filled with all unrighteousness, fornication, wickedness, covetousness, maliciousness; full of envy, murder, debate, deceit, malignity; whisperers, slanderers, haters of God, insolent, haughty, boastful, inventors of evil, disobedient to parents, foolish, faithless, heartless, ruthless.*

Romans 3 is Paul's indictment against all humanity.

Romans 3:11-18 There is none that understandeth, there is none that seeketh after God. They are all gone out of the way, they are together

become unprofitable; there is none that doeth good, no, not one. Their throat is an open sepulchre; with their tongues they have used deceit; the poison of asps is under their lips: Whose mouth is full of cursing and bitterness: Their feet are swift to shed blood: Destruction and misery are in their ways: And the way of peace have they not known: There is no fear of God before their eyes.

The apostle warned the Corinthians about the foolishness of going to law in order to resolve disputes among pagan judges. BAR trained attorneys are not qualified to judge cases regarding the church and interpersonal relationships of believers.

1 Corinthian 6:9-11 Know ye not that the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God? Be not deceived: neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankind, nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdom of God.

Paul contrasted the Christian who walks by the rule of the "new creation" with one who walks by the flesh; that is, by sin at work among pagans.

Galatians 5:19-24 Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are these; Adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness, Idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies, envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I have also told you in time past, that they which do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God.

The apostle reminds Timothy that the gospel contains law and that the law, when properly applied restrains sinners.

1 Timothy 1:9-11 Knowing this, that the law is not made for a righteous man, but for the lawless and disobedient, for the ungodly and for sinners, for unholy and profane, for murderers of fathers and murderers of mothers, for manslayers, For whoremongers, for them that defile themselves with mankind, for menstealers, for liars, for perjured persons, and if there be any other thing that is contrary to sound doctrine; According to the glorious gospel of the blessed God, which was committed to my trust.

Neil Armstrong stated on the Moon: "This is one small step for man, on giant leap for mankind." While mankind has made tremendous technological advances in the sciences, morally humanity hasn't moved far from the Poisonous Tree. Paul describes the fruit that will mark mankind till the end of history.

2 Timothy 3:1-7 This know also, that in the last days perilous times shall come. For men shall be lovers of their own selves, covetous,

boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy, Without natural affection, trucebreakers, false accusers, incontinent, fierce, despisers of those that are good, Traitors, heady, highminded, lovers of pleasures more than lovers of God; Having a form of godliness, but denying the power thereof: from such turn away. For of this sort are they which creep into houses, and lead captive silly women laden with sins, led away with divers lusts, Ever learning, and never able to come to the knowledge of the truth.

James calls for self-examination and for Christians to evaluate from what tree they are eating:

James 3:14-16 But if ye have bitter envying and strife in your hearts, glory not, and lie not against the truth. This wisdom descendeth not from above, but is earthly, sensual, devilish. For where envying and strife is, there is confusion and every evil work.

There is living water and a tree of life that heals the nations (Revelations 22:2), But, the mass of humanity has stuffed their cupboards with fruits from the Poisonous Tree.

Revelation 21:7-8 He that overcometh shall inherit all things; and I will be his God, and he shall be my son. But the fearful, and unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone: which is the second death.

16.6 The Seven Deadly Sins

Don't be naive and stupid as can be,

Eating the fruits from the poisonous tree.

Make it your goal to be pure and whole,

Or the Seven Deadly Sins will poison your soul.

1 LUST

Naughty thoughts about kisses and more,

This is rotten to the core.

A burning fever you dare not trust,

A serious sin known as fleshly LUST.

2 GLUTTONY

Gorging on cake, pasta, beer and more,

This is rotten to the core.

You dare not go on an eating spree,

A serious sin know as GLUTTONY.

3 GREED

Excessive desire for money and more,

This is rotten to the core.

Craving more stuff, where does it lead?

A serous sin known as burning GREED.

4 SLOTH

Oversleeping, dreaming and more,

This is rotten to the core.

Refusing to work or to cook your broth,

A serious sin known as idle SLOTH.

5 WRATH

Arguing, yelling, accusing and more,

This is rotten to the core.

Nostrils flared and on the warpath,

A serious sin known as anger and WRATH.

6 ENVY

Jealousy, resentment and much more

This is rotten to the core.

Others achieve having more than me,

A serious sin known as green ENVY.

7 PRIDE

Unteachable, self-centered and much more

This is rotten to the core

Nose in the air and a swagger in his stride,

A serious sin known as haughty PRIDE.

GOD'S REMEDY

Seven Deadly Sins and much more,

These are rotten to the core,

Surrender to the cross and follow your Lord,

The fruit of these sins, you cannot afford.

(Grampa Brook Stockton, Survival Guide 2014)

16.7 The First Promise

Genesis three contains the protevangelium, the first gospel promise.

Genesis 3:15 And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; it shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel.

First, notice that God promises that one of Eve's children would appear in history to crush Satan and reverse the effects of sin. This "seed" is none other than the Lord Jesus Christ, the seed of Eve and Mary, who appeared in time to defeat Satan and to bring men the blessings of God's kingdom for men to enjoy in advance of the cataclysmic end of history.

Second, this defeat does not come without a price. In crushing the authority (head) of the serpent (Satan), the Conqueror is severely wounded. Christians understand this to refer to Christ's accomplishments at the cross.

Third, though sin had its victory, it shall have its defeat. Thus, there is hope in this chapter and for this reason Christian families put their trust in Christ. Christ entered history in advance of Satan's final defeat, to rout him legally through his sufferings at the cross. Thus, it behooves every Christian family to ponder much the wonders of the cross of Christ.

Cruci Dum Spiro Fido

"As long as I breath, I will remember the cross."

16.8 God's Remedy for the Poisonous Tree

Genesis 3:21 Unto Adam also and to his wife did the LORD God make coats of skins, and clothed them.

Though the first couple sinned, God provided a remedy for their sins. Fig leaves would not do. Animals were killed, blood was shed, and the first couple was clothed with the skins from the sacrifice.

16.9 Blood is the currency of the spirit world.

Modern Americans have failed to grasp that blood is the only lawful currency accepted between spirits and mortals. Even in the French Quarter of New Orleans where Voodoo Queens practice love spells and curses, necromancers understand that to summon the gods of the underworld, blood must be mixed with frog hairs and toenails to attract the spirits. Even ancient Egyptians understood that mediation between the goat-gods and man required blood—lots of blood. Drinking blood, washing in blood, and sprinkling blood on symbolic objects guaranteed the Grand Zombie access to demonic powers.

In American courts all crimes are commercial. The only legal tender Americans understand are FRNs. In matters of eternal redemption, what spirit would be interested in green tender with pictures of dead presidents?

Oh, that men would realize that *blood is the currency of the spirit world*; that only by blood can men escape the penalties of their naked attraction to the Poisonous

Tree. Which, raises the question: How can a transgressor appease the offended Spirit he has rebelled against all his life?

The Christian answer is in the blood. Blood has to be brought to the bargaining table. Blood is the only currency recognized in the spirit world. Blood is the only consideration accepted for a contract. Fig leaves are rejected. Religion won't do. Feeling sorry for wicked deeds won't buy spit. Saying "I'm sorry" to an offended Spirit will get you thrown into hell. The only tender accepted for ransom is blood . . . and a very special kind of blood--innocent blood, pure blood, and sinless blood!

What can wash away family sins, "Nothing but the blood of Jesus." What can make me whole again, "Nothing but the blood of Jesus." In His grace and mercy, the great Spirit provided the blood of His Son as currency for redemption:

1 Peter 1:19 . . . knowing that you were ransomed from the corruptible ways inherited from your forefathers, not with worthless things like silver and gold, but with the precious blood of Christ, like that of a lamb without blemish or defect.

The Holy Scripture clearly places the blame for crime upon sinners "who fall short of the glory of God." And, what a horrible thing sin must be! Sin cannot be counseled away; educated away; or legislated away. The remedy for sin is God's Son who came to "save his people from their sins" (Mt. 1:21). Think of it! On the cross, the Father, made Him who knew no sin, to be sin for us, that we" might be made whole in His sight. On that Roman stake, sweet Jesus was transformed into an ugly, hideous poisonous cobra—the serpent lifted up in the wilderness (Jn. 3:14).

There the wrath of Almighty God tortured every cell in our Lord's body. So much so, his appearance was "marred (disfigured) more than any man, and his form more than the sons of men" (Is. 52:14). When Christ died a great earthquake occurred causing the rocks to split and the temple to crack in two. So repulsive was the death of the Son, the acting centurion "feared greatly!" Whatever happened to our sin? It was placed on Jesus and punished. So powerful is God's remedy for sin that it cleanses hearts, heals transgressors, and transforms sinners into saints. Let us never forget that the problem is sin, and the remedy is God's gift—His precious Son.

17 God's Remedy for the Poisonous Tree

God's remedy for the Poisonous Tree is the Gospel of the Lord Jesus Christ and faith in His death, burial, and resurrection. But, the emphasis in this section is not teaching the gospel, but the practical application of the Word of God in family life.

The toxins from the Poisonous Tree have infected each family member. For a family to experience happiness and prosperity, they must make sure that the personal sin of a family member does not infect the whole family. Furthermore, the Christian parent must stand guard and make sure that none of its members jump over the fence and steal forbidden fruits from that Tree.

First, adopt God's law order and don't eat from the Poisonous Tree. Make sure that the transgression of Eve is not repeated in the family. A role reversal took place in this marriage. Eve led; Adam followed. A Biblical home follows God's law-order with the man leading and the woman graciously supporting that leadership.

Every command in Scripture leads a man away from the Poisonous Tree. When the Scripture commands men "to love their wives as Christ loved the church" it is because sin resists sacrificial love; when Scripture commands the wife to "submit" and "respect" her husband, it is because her own sin rebels against God's law order; when the law says, "Honor your parents," it is because sin at work in children is prone to reject parental instruction; and, when the Scripture commands young men to "be self-controlled" it is because sin is impetuous and lawless. Every command in God's Word is good and wholesome.

Second, ground your family in the Word of God. If family members follow their feelings, they will track toward the Poisonous Tree like a bloodhound searching for a T-bone steak. If they are emotionally subjective, they will do what they feel. Leadership is doing the right things. *Obedience is doing things right. Emotional maturity is a prerequisite for leadership.*

The great task of the Christian parent is to avoid emotionally based leadership (anger), and to provide "principle orientated" leadership to the family. The Devil created uncertainty about God and His Word. The greatest sin a man can commit is to neglect the Word of God and to allow his feelings of anger and frustration to control the family.

Ephesians 6:4 Fathers, do not provoke your children to anger, but bring them up in the discipline and instruction of the Lord.

Psalms 119:9 How can a young man keep his way pure? By guarding it according to your word.

The term "provoke" is the Greek word *parogizo*. It means to "rouse to wrath," to "agitate," "to incite to action" by pushing the child's emotional buttons. An angry parent commands attention. A dad may get quick results by yelling at his son or threatening him like some drill sergeant, but in so doing transforms his son into an

emotional serf. An emotionally driven boy grows up to be A SLAVE TO ANYONE WHO PUSHES HIS BUTTONS! Selah!

In a family under God, children are trained to be led by principles of good behavior which the text calls "the nurture and admonition of the Lord." The term "nurture" is the Greek word *paideia* which refers to "child training." The word "admonition" refers to the content of that training which includes education in the law of the LORD God as well as the gospel of reconciliation. The humanist world wants your child to "have fun in this party on earth" (Clint Eastwood) and follow the "lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life;" but God places children under responsibility that leads to true freedom: "Do your duty in all things. You cannot do more. You should never wish to do less" (Robert E. Lee to his son).

Third, avoid vacationing near the Poisonous Tree. What kind of captain sales his ship near coral reefs? But, many fathers will vacation in sin city. Be a good captain. Avoid habits and activities that make it easy for children to find the Poisonous Tree. Eating the forbidden fruit destroyed the home of the first couple. Banished from the garden Adam and Eve were forced to forage for food while standing on thorns and thistles. Likewise, the greatest threat to a family is not the economy or wars in the Middle East, but enticements to visit the Poisonous Tree through T.V., the internet, and friends who know the path toward forbidden fruit.

Fourth, beware of fig leaves and hiding from God. Truth be known, most fathers are hiding from God behind the fig leaves of pseudo religion and half-hearted devotion to some form of Christianity. It seems the whole goal of the entertainment industry is to keep children entertained while on their way to hell. A family that is movie-centered and not service-centered send a message to children that meaning and purpose are found under the Poisonous Tree. When a family member tastes the forbidden fruit, fig leaves hang in every closet. Hypocrisy abounds. Casual Christianity prevails. Christian idioms supplant meaningful thought. Television and sports replace First-Day Sabbath keeping; that is, do everything in your power to be **a true man** who genuinely follows the Lord Jesus Christ.

No man hath a right to claim God as his Father, unless he feeleth in his soul, and believeth, solemnly, through the faith of God's election, that he has been adopted into the one family of which is in heaven and earth, and that he has been regenerated or born again. (Charles Spurgeon, Pastor)

A man ought to live so that everybody knows he is a Christian... and most of all, his family ought to know (D.L. Moody, Evangelist).

Fifth, understand that every member in your family is already infected with toxins from the Poisonous Tree.

*Psalm 58:3 The wicked are estranged from the womb: they go **astray** as soon as they be born, speaking lies.*

*1 John 1:8 If we say that we have no **sin**, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us.*

The godly parent is aware that toxins from the Poisonous Tree have infected every family member. True Christians do everything in their power to prevent their own sins or the sins of their children from ruling the family. A brat can ruin an outing to the mall. The man has to be stronger than the sins of his wife; and the wife stronger than the sins of her husband; and the parent stronger than the lusts of their children. Order, discipline, and Christian training, howbeit not the antidote for sin in and of themselves, are nevertheless employed so happiness and prosperity prevail in the home; that is, don't be a permissive parent. Set rules, be an example, limit T.V. time, engage in activities around the Tree of Life.

The opposite of love is not hate, as many believe, but rather indifference. Nothing communicates disinterest more clearly than distancing. A child cannot feel valued by parents who are forever absorbed in their own affairs (Dorothy Briggs).

Because we cannot control all that our children see, hear, and play, it is tempting to throw up our hands and do nothing. Although we cannot do everything, we can do something, and this is to talk with our children and teenagers about unexpected encounters with inappropriate violence, sexuality, and profanity (David Elkind)

Sixth: Pray that your children will discover God's remedy to the Poisonous Tree. God's remedy for sin in the first family was shed blood and a set of animal skins. True religion is splattered with blood, because blood is the currency of the spirit world. Hebrew children visited the temple with parents and heard squealing lambs going to slaughter and saw the blood flowing from the altar in the temple. A lamb must die that they might live. Likewise, God's remedy for sin is salvation through the gospel of the Lord Jesus Christ. The Christian family understands the necessity of blood sacrifice and the payment of sin through the death, burial, and resurrection of the Lord Jesus Christ. All prayer, teaching, and instruction of the home is to this end, that a child might acknowledge their sin and find rest for their little souls under the cross of Christ.

“The world takes us to a silver screen on which flickering images of passion and romance play, and as we watch, the world says, “This is love.” God takes us to the foot of a tree on which a naked and bloodied man hangs and says, “This is love” (Joshua Harris).

This is all the inheritance I give to my dear family. The religion of Christ will give them one which will make them rich indeed. (Patrick Henry, USA's Founding Father)

Cruci Dum Spiro Fido: "As long as I breath, I will remember the cross."

Seventh: Train your family to live free.

The first couple were free to eat fruit of all the trees God provided. If it is not forbidden, you are free to do. God's law sets one free because law is limited. Zillions of rules do not produce freedom, but slavery. Likewise, the Christian home has rules few and limited. As long as you do not infringe on the rights of others, you are pretty much free do as you please. Tackle life and enjoy the good things God has provided. In the words of Paul,

" . . . whatsoever things are true, whatsoever things are honest, whatsoever things are just, whatsoever things are pure, whatsoever things are lovely, whatsoever things are of good report; if there be any virtue, and if there be any praise, think on these things" (Philippians 4:8).

Engage love and plant the seeds of courage, kindness, justice, and holiness in the hearts of children. Train children to be courageous and to tackle the challenges of confronting injustice and evil.

"Jesus Christ lived in the midst of his enemies. At the end all his disciples deserted him. On the Cross he was utterly alone, surrounded by evildoers and mockers. For this cause he had come, to bring peace to the enemies of God. So the Christian, too, belongs not in the seclusion of a cloistered life but in the thick of foes. There is his commission, his work. 'The kingdom is to be in the midst of your enemies. And he who will not suffer this does not want to be of the Kingdom of Christ; he wants to be among friends, to sit among roses and lilies, not with the bad people but the devout people. O you blasphemers and betrayers of Christ! If Christ had done what you are doing who would ever have been spared' (Luther)." (Dietrich Bonhoeffer, Life Together: The Classic Exploration of Faith in Community)

In summary, the fruit of the Poisonous Tree infects families and ruins lives. God's remedy is the cross of Christ and his shed blood "which takes away the sins of the world" (John 1:29). The Biblical parent will camp far from the Poisonous Tree, discard their fig leaves, accept God's remedy for sin, and raise their family near the altar of the LORD God. But, life is more than rules, it involves freedom. Be responsible; be free.

Proverbs 3:7 Be not wise in thine own eyes: fear the LORD, and depart from evil. It shall be health to thy navel, and marrow to thy bones (and the navel of your family).

Psalm 65:4 Blessed is the one you choose and bring near, to dwell in your courts! We shall be satisfied with the goodness of your house, the holiness of your temple!

Psalm 84:4 Blessed are those who dwell in your house, ever singing your praise! Selah

18 The Family and the Seventh Commandment



From a Christian perspective, marriage is a product of faith and religion. It is not a product of government regulation. Government did not create the institution of marriage; and, therefore has no authority to define it or regulate it. Because God created marriage and because He is sovereign, He sets the rules. In order for marriage to work, there has to be law.

Exodus 20:14 "Thou shall not commit adultery."

The Seventh Commandment is about preserving marriage. Sex is a powerful gift, but if misused can wreck and entire family. This law is a product of God's love designed to protect marriage and to secure the wellbeing of each member of the family.

18.1 The War Against Marriage

Since the garden, man has been in rebellion against God's law order for marriage spreading chaos and misery on the globe. A society in decline decriminalizes adultery. In the first century, adultery was so common, the Jews eliminated capital punishment against adulterers. *When sin is no longer judged particularly, judgment becomes national.*

Likewise in America, the State has decriminalized adultery. The anarchists in the sexual revolution of the 1960s have transformed the social and sexual climate in profound ways by challenging homophobia and misogyny that prevented Sodomites and Lesbians from exploring the sexual pleasures they desired. The impact on social media, and therefore the family, is profound. The "Playboy" dream of absolute freedom including uninhibited carnality as fantasized in movies like James Bond are amusements from the Poisonous Tree for the purpose of demoralizing a nation. The destruction of the family is necessary to destroy Christian law and to bring in a new law order.

The shameless boldness of these revolutionaries need to be confronted with fearless courage on the part of Christian parents, without which, there will be total confusion and chaos about sexuality.

It is not sufficient for parents to believe in Christ and to practice personal piety and devotion to the Seventh Commandment while enemies of morality pump sewage into the public drinking water. The family is not safe as long as there are revolutionaries seeking to overthrow Christian morality and replace it with radical lawlessness and sexual permissiveness. Consequently, the Seventh Commandment calls all Christian parents to vigorously defend the law of marriage wherever the anarchists are attacking the institution of the family, whether it be in a sex re-education course in 8th grade, or promiscuous legislation at the State legislature.

18.2 The Purpose of the Seventh Commandment

Consider the following about the Seventh Commandment.

The Seventh Commandment is in place to protect the family and to secure its success.

If the 7th Commandment teaches anything, it condemns infidelity and makes "one night stands" and consensual bedroom affairs a crime against the institution of marriage. The man under God focuses all his energy on the prosperity and happiness of his family. A family of rebels or liars or thieves or adulterers won't long endure.

The First Commandment reveals one fundamental truth: one God, one law! The Seventh Commandment has one primary rule: one life, one wife! One heart, one love!

The Seventh Commandment promotes the virtue of purity and the nobility of virginity.

Virgins are like a pearl at the bottom of the sea: pure, valuable, and when found is admired by all. Chastity has been called the "Lilly of all Virtues," and rightly so! Our Lord Jesus was pure. Virgins not only make better spouses, they make better mothers and fathers. Only good people can overcome evil and produce a good society. Only the chaste are capable of pure love and devotion. Only the pure can serve Christ: "*Already you are clean because of the word that I have spoken to you*" (John 15:3). Purity was so esteemed in God's law-order, laws were in place to insure purity and devotion of young brides to their honorable husbands (Deuteronomy 22:13ff). It is not a coincidence that Hollywood mocks virginity. Mocking purity is a tactic of Jews and the Devil to demoralize a nation.

The Seventh Commandment not only prohibits adultery but contains law that bans the practice of all sexual perversions.

It prohibits incest, lust, pornography, fornication, Sodomy, lesbianism, rape, transvestism, prostitution, child trafficking, infantophilia, and all kinds of

paraphilias. All sexual prohibitions in the Bible are case law germane to the Seventh Commandment.

The "not" in the Seventh Commandment meant men must resist and put to death all sinful energies that cause a man or woman to drift toward adultery.

The Seventh Commandment protects the Biblical definition of marriage.

Marriage is a covenant between a mature man and a mature woman who agree to live together as husband and wife. Likewise, it condemns every redefinition of marriage designed to include perversion. Talmudic law that permits pederasty and homosexual acts with a minor is strictly condemned by this Commandment.

The Seventh Commandment reassures the original creative declaration that marriage is good.

Marriage is wholesome and beneficial for society. Sex is good; that is, the conjugal relationship in marriage is positive and beneficial. Marriage is part of the original dominion mandate, and the normal state for adults.

Hebrews 13:4 Marriage (gamos) is honorable in all, and the bed undefiled: but whoremongers (fornicators) and adulterers God will judge.

This Commandment contains the truth that marriage is a contract between a man and a woman to live together as husband and wife.

No contract; no marriage! A conjugal relationship without a contract is fornication, concubinage, or prostitution. A marriage must include at least three elements: (1) a man and woman; (2) a binding contract by oath; (3) a sexual union. A covenant is different from a contract in that God is part of a covenant. While marriage among pagans is a contract, marriage among Christians is a covenant under Christian law.

Divorce: Just as marriage is sealed by the sexual union, it can be broken by intercourse with an enemy. Adultery is an irreparable breach of contract and is grounds for divorce. "Till death do we part" meant the execution of the adulterers (Leviticus 20:10).

In fact, divorce is mandatory in most cases. Only in rare instances of deep repentance can the contract be repaired, vows renewed, and the relationship restored. In such case, forgiveness is an admirable Christian option . . . but forgiveness does not necessarily require the continuance of a marriage. In cases of adultery, forgiveness and remarriage is only possible based on deep repentance by the transgressor(s) (Matthew 19; 1 Corinthians 7; Luke 17:4).

Furthermore, the Seventh Commandment requires parents to instruct their children in law and to outlaw in the home what is unlawful in Christian law.

18.3 Sexual Prohibitions

All sexual prohibitions are case law based on the 7th Commandment.

Nakedness: This Commandment condemns nakedness but not nudity. Nudity is simply a state of being unclothed. It is not a sin to be nude. We all begin life nude and nudity is a necessity of life. Nudity is a symbol of innocence (a child), of trust between a man and a woman (marriage), and of vulnerability (sin). The human body is remarkable in every way for man is “fearfully and wonderfully made.” There should be no shame in nudity, but the garden is not the end of life, only the beginning. It didn’t take the original couple long to realize they needed shoes and clothing as a protection against the elements. How long did it take Eve to prevail upon Adam to make her a pair of sandals?

Nakedness, on the other hand, is the result of the fall and is associated with sin; that is, nakedness is connected with shock, shame, and exploitation. It is connected with surprise, commercial interests, and prohibited sexual acts. While there is no prohibition against nudity, God’s law legislates against nakedness—a soft designation for hard, unspeakable perversions of sex. In Jeremiah 49:10, nakedness has the idea of being stripped of resources and disarmed.

Furthermore, the 7th Commandment requires the practice of modesty. Since man's lawless interest in sex has long been established, modesty has been an important part of a Christian's deportment, dress, and conversation. It is the duty of Christian parents to instruct their children in modesty. Dress is an expression of one's theology.

*“Either we must speak as we dress, or dress as we speak. Why do we profess one thing and display another? The tongue talks of chastity, but the whole body reveals impurity.” ~ **Saint Jerome***

Obscenity and lust: Because the Seventh Commandment condemns obscenity, it also condemns the use of obscenity in normal conversation. Lust is a form of idolatry and proscribed under Christian law (Ephesians 5:1-9).

*“Lust indulged became habit, and habit unresisted became necessity.” ~ **Saint Augustine***

Fornication is a general term that includes all unlawful sexual acts particularly sexual intercourse between unmarried people outside the covenant of marriage. This would include seduction and voluntary compliance. Thus, the Bible condemns all consensual sex outside of marriage--the lusty man and the women who consent to become a man's kinky sex-slave. Furthermore, the mind is the property of God.

Christ condemned the thoughts leading up to adultery as a sin against holiness (Exodus 22:15; Matthew 5:28).

Adultery is illegal sexual intercourse between a married man or woman with a person who is not their spouse. The Bible does not condemn sex; rather, it condemns contract violations and sexual liaisons with another than one's spouse, the violation of which invited death into the family. In some cultures at war against God's law order is the belief that only the woman should not commit adultery; that is, a woman is restrained by law and punishment, while the male is free to do as he pleases. But, this double standard is also rebellion against God's law-order. The law applies to both husband and wife. So sacred is marriage, stoning was the remedy for adulterers and fornicators (plural) (Leviticus 20:10; Deuteronomy 22:24;

Bestiality: A sexual act with an animal which carries the death penalty: "Whoever lies with an animal shall surely be put to death" (Exodus 22:19).

Masturbation: There is no prohibition against masturbation in Scripture, but there are prohibitions against concupiscence or the stirring up of lusts. Further, there are exhortations for self-control which include responsible management of one's vessel (Matthew 5:28; Colossians 3:5; 1 Thessalonians 4:5; Galatians 5:21, 22).

Rape: Without consent, sex is always rape. A forced sexual act by a man on a woman is an act which carries the death penalty. It is unknown how a woman could possibly rape a man (Deuteronomy 20:10-14; Deuteronomy 22:23-24; 25-28; 28-29; Judges 21:10-24; Numbers 31:7-18; Galatians 5:19-21).

The Bible provides a test for rape. If the "rape" happens in the city and the woman doesn't scream or fight, then it is consensual sex; that is, she is presumed guilty. A woman that doesn't fight, scream, and scratch is not a victim, but a co-participant in the act. But, if the rape happens in the country, the man is presumed guilty – even if the woman consents. The mere fact that rape carried the death penalty and that all a woman had to do was accuse the man would give every man pause before being "alone" with a woman in a forest. In the city a woman is presumed guilty; but in the country and man is presumed guilty; in the city, a man is presumed innocent of the charge of rape if there is no blood and no screaming; in the country, a woman is presumed innocent even if she does not put up a fight.

Incest: The Scripture condemns consanguinity.--a sexual act with a near relative, brother, sister, mother, father, aunt, uncle, cousin, etc: 'None of you shall approach anyone who is near of kin to him, to uncover his nakedness: I am the Lord' and, it carries the death penalty (Leviticus 18:6-9; 7-17; 20:11-21.) The prohibition of incest contains the penalty of childlessness in that no legitimate heir can be produced with an interest in property. At one time incest contained no genetic danger, but as history developed, incest was a crime against nature; that is, it became a biological hazard.

Pornography is not about love or marriage, but about shock, sex, and money. It is a fiction. Pornography is a lie about women, sex, and love. And, the culprits of the plague are Zionist Jews.²⁷ While sex is a good thing, it is not a spectator sport. Since the Christian mind is the property of God, the Seventh Commandment prohibits mental infidelity. Furthermore, while we live in a free society, freedom of speech does not include the protection of obscenity. By calling obscenity "art" or "free speech," the State becomes a co-conspirator in the demoralization of the nation by permitting the dissemination of addictive and destructive materials upon society. There is no neutral ground here. A man (or woman) is either a victim or adversary of pornography. A healthy man joins the fight against obscenity.

"I've lived in prison a long time now, and I've met a lot of men who were motivated to commit violence. Without exception, every one of them was deeply involved in pornography - deeply consumed by the addiction. The F.B.I.'s own study on serial homicide shows that the most common interest among serial killers is pornographers. It's true." ~ Ted Bundy, Serial Killer & Rapist of at least 28 Women & Girls

Orgy is unrestrained sexual acts among a group of people—a people in rebellion to God's law order—a people who consult the gods of chaos for meaning and significance. That is, these people see opportunity in chaos and unlimited potential in unrestrained sexual acts. Thus, in this religious fire, sex itself is the object of worship.

Homosexuality: Homosexuality is a sexual perversion, a deviancy from the laws of nature and nature's God. Homosexuality is not a genetic or environmental bent, but a willful, malicious, reckless violation of God's moral law. However, Freudians insist on "making the enemies of perversion" perverts. After all, in man's sexual utopia, preachers of morality must be hunted down and slaughtered. Thus, autonomous man demands tolerance of the homosexual lifestyle because intolerance is a greater vice than the vice of Sodomy. The goal of the Freudian left is to set homosexuals free to sin without guilt and shame. Thus, homosexuality is not only vulgar and banal, but vigorously antinomian at its source (John Rushdoony).

Biblically, homosexuality is not only a perversion, but an abomination (Leviticus 18:22; 20:13). Homosexuality is so damned, a Sodomite is not even considered a member of the human race. He is called a "dog" (Deuteronomy 23:17, 18). So degrading and perverted is pederasty, the Scripture considers the crime punishable by death. And, if there is no law and no punishment for perversion, there is no gospel that can save sinners. Without punishment, the godly order for society

²⁷ In the postwar era, America's most notorious pornographer was Reuben Sturman, the inventor of the peep show, and dubbed the 'Bill Gates of porn' by US News and World Report. It was said that Sturman did not simply control the adult-entertainment industry, he was the industry.

cannot be enforced. Without capital punishment government ceases to be an agency for God and righteousness; that is, tolerance is the doctrine proclaimed when society is moving into the shadows. Thus, in a cultural revolution that has declared war on God's law order, it is not surprising the first order of business is to remove homosexuality from the list of crimes punishable by death.

We are in the midst of moral revolution—a cultural crisis demanding action and courage similar to the duties placed on Israel in Deuteronomy 13. As an example of revolution consider how Britain offered Alan Turing a posthumous pardon for in December 2013 for his vile homosexual acts during WWII. Wicked, vile, repulsive Sodomite acts have not changed, but the West's appraisal of these sins has degenerated into disgusting approval.

We are being asked not only to tolerate Sodomites and lesbians, but to approve and applaud their perversions. *Toleration is the doctrine preached when society is changing gods and sources of law.* No law-order can tolerate an attack on its source of law. For a people to fail to protect its law order is to promote death of the culture; to be open to new ideas and new laws from different religions is social suicide. The modern axiom that “diversity is our strength” is a falsehood. *Diversity is not a strength, but a weakness to overcome.* The humanistic propaganda of total toleration of differing values is a giant step towards total anarchy. Total toleration means total permissiveness. Total permissiveness leads to total anarchy. Total anarchy requires total tyranny to maintain order. Toleration of assaults on its law-order is not a virtue of freedom, but aiding and abetting enemies in their attempt to murder the culture.

Any discussion of homosexuality presupposes there is a God who has spoken in history and revealed His will to mankind through the Word of God. If there is no God, there is no judgment and it doesn't matter whether one is heterosexual or homosexual, a child molester or humanitarian. Both end up dead. But, God has spoken in history. And, therefore, this discussion is rooted deep within the Christian faith and Biblical law. Christ is King and His Law is absolute. Thus, we pray, “Thy Kingdom come;” i.e., may men recognize His rule and surrender to it now.

Homosexuality is the politics of the pack and can only move forward when approved by the pack. When custom is more important than morality, the custom of homosexuals prevails. But, morality can prevail when politicians revisit the sure Word of God and act courageously to defend truth and righteousness (John Rushdoony).

Polygamy is a product of the fall. Polygamy is the state of being married to more than one wife—a Biblically tolerated practice and a practice in primitive cultures. There are no commands to marry more than one wife; and while there are numerous disparaging remarks made about this state, one will search the Scripture

in vain to find a single verse that prohibits polygamy. The best we can come up with is Deuteronomy 17:17 and 1 Timothy 3:3-5. Following times of war, polygamy provided an economic relationship to provide for widows and to repopulate the human race. Thus, the Bible offers limited tolerance for polygamy. But, it is also very clear that monogamy, not polygamy, is God's grand plan for mankind (Genesis 1-2; 24; Exodus 20; Deuteronomy 6; Matthew 19:1ff; Ephesians 5:25ff; 1 Peter 3:1-7).

The Seventh Commandment demands that fathers instruct their sons in God's law order and warn them against the sexual perversions that it condemns. Notice how Solomon instructed his sons regarding the seductress in Proverbs 7. A father would do well to teach sons about the seductress.

She preys on fools who have no defense against predators (7:6).

She works at night . . . on the street (7:7)

She is aggressive and initiates contact with men (7:10)

She wears clothing that catches the eye (7:10)

She is extremely verbal and talkative, loud and obnoxious (7:11).

She is a woman of the street and never at home (7:12)

She is brazenly hawkish (7:13)

She can be very religious (7:14)

She is very attentive and complementary (7:15-16)

She is prepared and has a contract to offer (7:16-18)

She is very persuasive, and plausible (7:21)

She springs her trap and the fool loses HIS LIFE (7:22-23)!

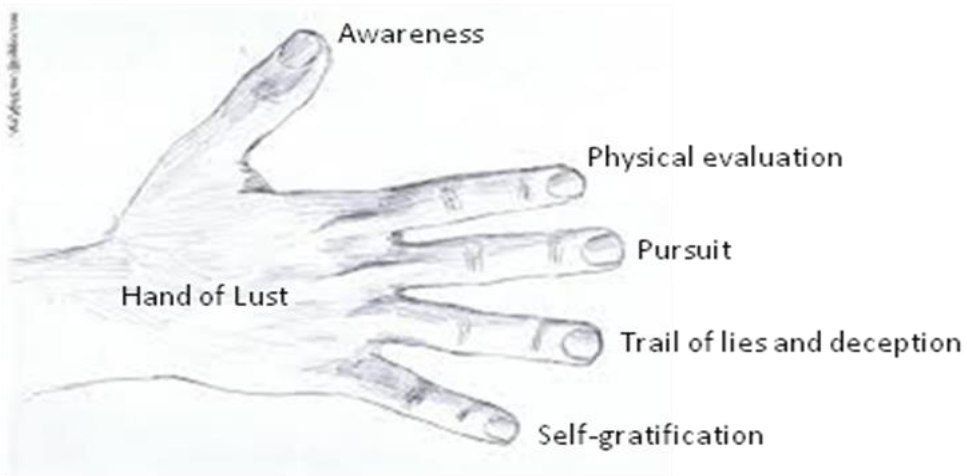
Finally, remember grace.

Christ died for sinners and, therefore, God forgives all kinds of sins, even sexual transgressions. Men and women can be made whole through the cross. The blood of Christ can make the foulest clean (Ephesians 1:7).

Thus, the Seventh Commandment places a duty on parents to construct a sex education course for their children and to teach them that (1) sex is what they are, either boy or girl; and (2) that marriage is good and that sex is healthy in marriage,

and (3) that God's law governs human sexuality and condemns sexual lawlessness. For the sexually immoral shall not enter the kingdom of God (1 Corinthians 6:6-10).

18.4 Hand of Love v. the Hand of Lust



19 Is There a Lion in the House?

As the Lion roaring over his prey (Is. 31:4)



Blessed is the family who has a lion leading the pride.

Whenever one sneezes, we say, “God bless you!!” But, I never could figure out why sneezes ought to bring a blessing, have you?

Do you want to be blessed? Of course you do . . . and so do I! And, God wants to bless us. He wants to bless us more than we want to be blessed. But, He has reserved his greatest blessings for those who qualify for them.

You can be a blessed man to your family by fulfilling three conditions mentioned in this psalm.

19.1 Condition One

Psalm 1:1 Blessed is the man that walketh not in the counsel of the ungodly, nor standeth in the way of sinners, nor sitteth in the seat of the scornful.

The Hebrew word for “Blessed” (*yev.a., ‘eshet*) means “to be endowed.” It is often translated, “happy.” A happy man is a spiritual man. In this passage, the psalmist compares the blessed man to a lush, green tree beside two streams of water. In Psalm 32, the blessed man is a forgiven man.

The English word “bless” has a grisly history. Its forefather was *bledsian*, a word that meant *to consecrate with blood*. This, of course, came from the bloody, Jewish sacrificial system: “*without the shedding of blood there is no remission of sins*” (Hebrews 9:22). Blood is the currency of the spirit world. Like the Israelites were saved from the death angel on Passover evening because of the blood on the door post. Today, people are saved when they believe that the shed blood of Christ is sufficient to cleanse them of sin. When we say, “God bless you,” we are really saying, “God bathe you in blood!” The OT Israelite obtained God’s favor through slit throats at the Tent of Meeting. Since God sent His Lamb into history, the state of blessedness really begins when one appropriates the benefits of the crucified Christ

to obtain forgiveness and cleansing. *God's blessed man is a Christian man bathed in the blood of the Lamb of God* (John 1:29).

19.2 Condition Two

If you want to be a blessing to your wife and children, separate from worldly persons and associate with godly people (1) Do not walk in the circles of carnal men, but (2) walk in the company of the holy men. Holy men are Biblical authors. Carnal men would include all who are hostile to God's law-order including but not limited to politicians, psychologists, media personalities, professional sports figures, college professors, and the like. This condition is the opposite of religious syncretism.

The word "not" (*al, lo*) is used three times in verse one. Negatively, the blessed one does not form an alliance with the ungodly. He is prudent rather than indulgent; closed rather than open; resistant rather than compliant.

A father and his teenage son were having a heated discussion about his son's activities. The debate went on and on. Finally, the Father asked, "What is it that you do not understand about the word, 'No!'" The blessed one of Psalm One understands the meaning of the Hebrew word "lo!"

He does not (*al, lo*) "walk," "stand," or "sit" under the counsel of pagans²⁸. Note the downward progression: "walk," "stand," "sit." "Walking" implies receiving advice ("counsel"). "Standing" refers to receiving focused education. "Sitting" refers to fellowship--the kind of fellowship one has when he eats with a friend.

Three titles are used to refer to the undesirables: "ungodly," "sinners," and the "scornful." The word "ungodly" designates transgressors of God's law. The word "sinner" refers to one "who falls short" of the law and who disregards God's law. The word "scornful" notes a person who not only breaks God's law and falls short of it, but one who is openly hostile to God's law-order. Stephen Hawking, Alan Turing, George Carlin, and John Dewey come to mind.

Because most of us do not associate with organized crime, we tend to see ourselves as unspotted by the prohibitions of the psalm. But, Psalm One discusses a problem that has plagued God's people from the beginning of time—**syncretism**. The word "syncretism" means "joining together." Pagans are not necessarily unlikable nor are all their philosophic dainties unreasonable. An historical perspective may help us to understand the problem.

²⁸ Pagans includes anyone that is not a Christian: humanists, intellectuals, liberals, atheists, feminists, college professors, etc.

Syncretism and Biblical History: During the period of the Judges, Israel “followed and worshiped various gods” (Judges 2:12). Solomon split the nation because he married the daughters of the Moabites, Ammonites, Edomites, Sidonians and Hittites. “*As Solomon grew old, his wives turned his heart after other gods;*” *i.e.*, he and adopt alien law (1 Kings 11:2-4). During Jeremiah’s day, fathers actually threw their sons and daughters into fires as living sacrifices to Moloch. Moloch refers to the legal system wherein men treated the government as paternal authority, as the highest authority in the land, as a god.

Syncretism was a problem in the first century. Jesus warned his disciples against the “leaven of the Pharisees.” These legalists thought they could change the world by legislation (Matthew 16:5). Paul chided the Corinthians urging them to cling to the cross and to shun the introduction of the wisdom of the Greek philosophers (Epicureans, Platonism, Stoicism, etc.) in the church. The Galatians tried to mix Judaism²⁹ with the gospel of grace (Galatians 5:1-3), and Paul rebuked them severely. He even pronounced a curse on the propagators (1:8). The church at Colosse took on water from the Greek mystic cults, and Paul admonished the believers to “see to it that no one takes you captive through hollow and deceptive philosophy” (Colossians 2:8).

Syncretism and Church History: The early Christians, however, refused syncretism as a way of life. Many lost their lives, not because they were Christians, but because they rejected the status quo. They only served the one, true, infinite, personal Spirit. It was the “only” the Caesars could not tolerate. To not worship Caesar was treason. If they had worshipped Jesus and Caesar, they would have gone unpunished. But, they “refused all forms of syncretism” says Francis Schaeffer (*How Should We Then Live*, 1976, p. 26).

During the Middle Ages, the church blended Greek philosophy with Christianity. Thomas Aquinas (1225-1274), the great intellectual and Dominican, developed an optimistic view of man and an inadequate view of the fall. Believing that sin did not affect man’s intellect, Aquinas taught people to rely on their own reason. Thus, he had an unhealthy mix of Greek philosophy with Revelation. In Dante’s *The Divine Comedy* it was Virgil, the Roman poet who became the guide through hell. Judas, Brutus, and Cassius were the worst sinners because they betrayed Christ and Caesar. Though some of the changes were not all bad, the mixing of Greek philosophy and Christian revelation eventually led to a departure of the culture from Christianity (Schaeffer, 1976).

In France, the departure from Christianity was monumental. They anointed the goddess of reason as chief in the pantheon of gods. The enlightenment ended in the

²⁹ Paul did not pit law against grace, but the gospel against Judaism. See Galatians 1:13 for Paul a former rabbi in Judaism, and it is this system of Judaistic tradition that Paul became an antagonist.

blood bath of the French revolution and the chilling sounds of the guillotine. Forty thousand peasants lost their lives. Schaeffer said, “the destruction came not from outside the system; it was produced by the system” of humanistic man (1976, p. 124).

Contrast the French revolution with the drafting of the united States Constitution in 1787. After the American Revolution, inspired by Calvinism and the Puritan ethic, it took the framers five months (May-September, 1787) to draft a constitution³⁰ that has lasted to this day. Not one life was lost during the draft and ratification process (Catherine Bowen, 1986, *Miracle at Philadelphia*).

History has exposed the antichrist eclecticism of the Roman Catholic Church with its false priesthood, prayers to Mary and the saints, its false claim the sacraments are the actual body and blood of Christ, and its absorption of communist, liberation theology that multiplies religious, political, social, and economic subjugation of the people.

In our own day, we have seen the development of theistic evolution—a syncretism of creation with evolution. Even today, modern humanists believe we must visit the gods of chaos to renew society. It is no accident that Time Magazine justified the Ferguson Violence as a response to white privileges: "Riots Are a Necessary Part of Evolution of Society" (Time.com, November 25, 2014).

We have seen the infiltration of secularism into our schools and the collapse of Biblical values. John Dewey, the father of modern education, a humanist, and drafter of the humanist manifesto, was successfully able to eradicate the Bible from modern education. In 1947, the term “separation of church and state” was ruled a law. The average American thinks it is part of the Constitution.³¹ As secularism entered the schools in the sixties, morals collapsed: Teen pregnancy rose 400%; SAT scores plummeted by 100 points; Teen suicide tripled. Americans have one of the highest divorce rates, and the highest incidence of teen motherhood in the world. The United States has more people in prison than all the other countries combined (David Barton, 1988, *America: To Pray or not to Pray*).

We have seen Eastern Mysticism engulf the church. In July 2000, commentator Paul Harvey said that psychology had taken such a foothold in the American church that Christianity should no longer be called, “Christianity” but “the Religion of Therapy.” Psychology replaced theology. Psychologists are now the high priests of society. The goal of therapy is to make people feel better about

³⁰ The united States Constitution is not "inspired" nor is it a Christian document, but it was a triumph in the progress of civilization as it attempted to limit government, and a limited government with defined powers has Biblical support.

³¹ Board of Education, 330 U.S. 1 (1947).

sinning, and to blame parents for their troubles. The gospel of “self-esteem” has replaced the gospel of Christ esteem. There is hardly a Christian in the fifty states that doesn’t use Freudian terms like “id,” “ego,” “victim,” and “self-realization” on a daily basis. Twelve step programs, group therapy, and psychoanalysis have become mainstream. I was recently in a church (Albuquerque) and noticed a sign above a staff door, “Therapy Center.” Many Christians no longer study Moses, David, and Paul. The new prophets are Freud, Adler, Rogers, Maslow, Crabb, Minirth and Meier (Jim Owen, 1993, *Christian Psychology’s War on God’s Word*).

We have seen contemporary theology embraces radical inclusivity. The Foundation for Contemporary Theology puts it this way:

Foundation for Contemporary Theology is an autonomous educational organization. We do not proselytize in any way and we are not affiliated with a denomination, church, synagogue, mosque, or any other religious or secular group. We encourage nominal and skeptical believers of all faiths and of no faith to join us on a journey that embraces and promotes radical inclusivity and comprehensive compassion in working together for the common good (<http://www.contemporarytheology.org>).

Syncretism leads to compromise. When Christians are not different, they are not effective. Vance Havner, the great Baptist preacher, used to say, “*When the Lord’s white sheep become dirty gray, the black sheep feel more comfortable.*” Christians are more into anthropology than theology; more interested in humanism than theism. “We the People” have replaced “Thus saith the Lord.” The ideas of the “ungodly,” “sinners,” and “the scornful” saturate education, music, movies, and the media. How can a godly man or woman remain unspotted from the culture? Only by saying “No!” to the wisdom of this age.

Do not misunderstand the psalmist. The psalmist is not saying we cannot have pre-Christian friends. Scripture does not promote Christian isolationism. We must learn, however, to penetrate the unchurched world with the gospel for Christ’s sake. *We must take holiness to hedges without hedging on holiness.* We must socialize without compromise. How else will Christians be able to fulfill their mission to reach the lost?

19.3 Condition Three

Psalm 1:2 But his delight is in the law of the LORD; and in his law doth he meditate day and night.

Is there a lion in the house?

The third condition for blessing is developing a dynamic relationship with God’s law-order. This is very specific. It is not a love of learning, but a love of God’s law that is brought into view here.

The word “delight” (*Acp.x*, chephets) means “to take pleasure in.” It is the same word is used of Shekem’s intense desire to marry Dinah, Jacob’s daughter in Genesis 34:19. The text says, “he lost no time” in making a proposal. We all know why! There are few human desires more wonderful and more intense than anticipating a wedding night. And, this is the kind of desire one should have for the Word of God.

The word “meditate” is the Hebrew word *yahgah* (*hG<h.y<*). The word is translated "roar" in Isaiah 31:4 ~ “Like as the lion . . . **roaring** on his prey." As a lion growls over his food, fathers are to roar over God’s Word. *Has your wife heard you roaring around the house lately?* Have your children heard you growling over God’s Word recently? When the Word of God is as sweet as honey, the amusements of men are as bitter as gall. When you walk with God above, you will be less enamored with man below.

And, what is the subject of his meditation? It is the law, the Torah, the Ten Commandments, and Christ, the living Torah—the One who came to fulfill the law (Matthew 5:17ff).

God’s blessed man is a lion roaring over God’s law. "Oh, how I love thy law," shouted David (Psalm 119:97). It is modern heresy that holds that the law of God has no meaning nor binding force on men today. Because God’s law is good for all men, it is good for me. The law cannot save men (or society), but it can sanctify men. It is the standard of right and wrong. It is the canon by which all matters can be judged.

Modern man is antinomian and humanistic in that he sees man as "the measure of all things." Mao Tse-Tung said, “our God is none other than the masses of the Chinese people.”

Likewise, American paternalism sees "We the People" as the source of all law. But, the strength of Christian man is the absoluteness of His God. The goal of the gospel is that “the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us" (Romans 8:4). The purpose of grace is not to set aside law but to fulfill the law and enable man to keep the law. Thus, the Christian man looks to the Word of God as his guide and the law for all men and all of man’s institutions.

Conclusion: God wants to bless us and make us like a well-watered tree, but he cannot bless us like this if we are not living under the instruction of His Law-word. The blessed man of Psalm One is a blood-bathed man, an unspotted man, a man roaring over God’s Word. If we want to be blessed, we must meet three conditions: Come under the blood of Christ and trust Him as our Savior; reject the wisdom of this age; and, feed on God’s Word like a hungry lion.

20 The Family Creed

1 Corinthians 15:1-12

20.1 Adoption of the Apostles' Creed

I believe in God, the Father almighty, Creator of heaven and earth.

I believe in Jesus Christ, God's only Son, our Lord, who was conceived by the Holy Spirit, born of the Virgin Mary, suffered under Pontius Pilate, was crucified, died, and was buried; he descended to the dead. On the third day he rose again; he ascended into heaven, he is seated at the right hand of the Father, and he will come to judge the living and the dead.

I believe in the Holy Spirit, the holy catholic Church, the communion of saints, the forgiveness of sins, the resurrection of the body, and the life everlasting. Amen.

20.2 Adoption of the Nicene Creed

We believe in one God the Father Almighty, Maker of heaven and earth, and of all things visible and invisible.

And in one Lord Jesus Christ, the only-begotten Son of God, begotten of the Father before all worlds, God of God, Light of Light, Very God of Very God, begotten, not made, being of one substance with the Father by whom all things were made; who for us men, and for our salvation, came down from heaven, and was incarnate by the Holy Spirit of the Virgin Mary, and was made man, and was crucified also for us under Pontius Pilate. He suffered and was buried, and the third day he rose again according to the Scriptures, and ascended into heaven, and sitteth on the right hand of the Father. And he shall come again with glory to judge both the quick and the dead, whose kingdom shall have no end.

And we believe in the Holy Spirit, the Lord and Giver of Life, who proceedeth from the Father and the Son, who with the Father and the Son together is worshipped and glorified, who spoke by the prophets. And we believe one holy catholic and apostolic Church. We acknowledge one baptism for the remission of sins. And we look for the resurrection of the dead, and the life of the world to come. Amen.

21 A Great Woman with Great Faith



*2 Kings 4:8 And it fell on a day, that Elisha passed to Shunem, where was **a great woman**; and she constrained him to eat bread. And so it was, that as oft as he passed by, he turned in thither to eat bread.*

Our subject is about greatness. The trouble with being great at anything is one has to travel the road to greatness. And, the road to greatness is filled with great trials, great troubles, and great tribulations. But, people who persevere on this journey seem to have great triumphs.

The holy text describes this woman at Shunem as "great" (gadol). How many great women do you know? There is not another woman in Scripture who is called "great" outside the Shunammite woman. There is a "great" distress. Jesus said of a Canaanite woman that she had "great faith." There is a "great" prostitute in Revelation 17, but who can find a "great" woman in a good sense. The term "great" is not employed carelessly. A great woman is difficult to find.

The Spirit of God is neither maudlin nor miserly in his compliments. The Scripture is efficient and true. Therefore, when the Spirit calls the Shunammite woman "great", it should be noted and studied.

So, in what way was this woman great, and what lessons does it have for Christians today?

First, this woman was great in wealth. The fact she and her husband were able to build a guest house specifically for Elisha and furnish it with basic comforts informs us that she was a woman of means. But, let us not confuse power with greatness. Many people possess great wealth, but are spiritual poor. The Shunammite woman was also great in spirituality; that is, besides her material wealth, she was rich in virtue, in excellence, and in perspicuity. She seemed to be endowed by her Creator with skills of observation and sensibility. The deeper we go into the text the larger her dignity appears. How many women do you know that the more you study them, the more you appreciate their depth of character?

Second, this woman was great in hospitality. Shunem is located between Samaria, the capital of Israel, and Mt. Carmel, a training center for prophets. Travelers would find Shunem a natural place to rest on their journey. However, this woman noticed Elisha traveled through her region frequently. Out of the goodness of her heart, she "constrained him to eat bread." That is, she took the initiative and

she did so "without grudging" (1 Peter 4:9). You don't get the sense that Elisha expected this of people or that he courted assistance. Further, you don't conclude that Elisha overindulged his business. She did not know that he was a great prophet or that he was destined for greatness. She had no reason to do this outside of the fact she possessed the gift of genuine hospitality. How many women do you know that are ready to open up their home to strangers?

Third, this woman possessed great discernment. After several visits by Elisha, she observed the character and caliber of the man. She recognized that he was head and shoulders above other men who passed by. There was decency, depth, and dignity in this man. She perceived Elisha was "a holy man of God." She did not call him a "nice man" or "an interesting man," but a "holy man." She did not call him "educated" or "talented," but a "man of God." Apparently, she knew the true God and valued holiness and devotion to the Almighty. As she studied Elisha, she discerned his true character. How many women do you know who can discern a man's spiritual disposition or even appreciate the caliber of a "holy" man?

Fourth, the Shunammite woman was great in thoughtfulness. Having discerned Elisha's character, she considered how she might be of assistance to him and make his pilgrimage on this earth a little easier. This is when she entertained the idea of building a special guest house for the prophet. There are many women interested in making their own life more comfortable, but this woman lived outside of herself and entertained thoughts on how to enrich the life of God's man. The Spirit shines light on her attention to detail and what she provided for Elisha: a room, a roof, walls, a bed, a table, a chair, and a lamp. How many women do you know that are attentive to the detailed needs of others?

Fifth, this woman was great in owning her husband's authority. Notice that she was not self-regulatory nor did she usurp her husband's leadership. She brought the idea of building a guest room before her husband for his consideration. She knew her place. She understood the role of her husband and prevailed on him for his input and decision. How many women are you acquainted with that know how to arrange themselves under their husband's authority?

Sixth, she was great in contentment. When Elisha saw how generous she was to him, he wanted to return some kindness to her. He offered to introduce her to the king and thus improve her status among the nobility of the land. But, she said to Elisha, "I dwell among my own people." That is, she did not desire the plastic pageantry of court life or the temporal pleasure of political prestige. She was humble, content, and lacked the "gold digger" attitude of so many. Climbing the social ladder was not one of her ambitions. We are all acquainted with women who shuffle relationships to get to the top of the political ladder. In contrast, how many women do you know that are satisfied with their state in life and are content to live out their lives around normal people?

Everything about this woman informs us that she knew the LORD God and was one of his people. She lived among apostates as a flower in the midst of thorns. This woman offered bread to Elisha. In oriental custom, eating bread meant much more than providing a meal to a person. Rather, it signified communion, a bond of friendship and fellowship. In Elisha, she found a true Israelite indeed.

Virtue has its reward. Elisha must have been impressed not only with her generous hospitality but with her contentment. Because she refused his offer to be introduced to King Jehoram, Elisha was pleased to mention her to the King of kings . . . and, in so doing obtained for her the one blessing that had been withheld from her--a child. Thus, it was God's good pleasure to honor Elisha's prayer and to give this great woman who ministered to His servant the gift of a son. Though not without difficulty, this great woman was destined to experience greater grace and more blessings in years to come.

Seventh, the Shunammite woman was great in faith.

By faith . . . Women received back their dead by resurrection" (Hebrews 11:35).

The road to greatness is filled with great trials. Great trials can build great character, expose great character, or reveal the lack of it. The Shunammite woman was destined for greatness, but not before she faced life's greatest trial--the sudden and tragic death of her beloved son.

After her son had grown into a young boy, he went out into the field where the harvesters were working and came down with a sudden and unexpected headache. He complained to his father, "My head, my head." Thinking it was only a temporary illness, the father ordered his servant to carry the boy to his mother. The Shunammite took her son and did what devoted mothers do. She held him in her lap where after a couple of hours he died in her arms. How can one put into the words the shock and trauma that rippled through her soul as she saw her son breathe his last breath? Suddenly, the warm blessing of her motherhood vanished and the cold chill of death invaded her soul.

God promised her a son through His prophet. Now, He suddenly takes away the joy of her life before he reaches manhood. Oh, the strange hand of providence! Who can understand it? One minute the boy was full of smiles, skips, and hops, and the next minute he is a motionless corpse. Where was God? What kind of God would give a gift and then take it away? Why? Where is Elisha? Why didn't this happen when he was present? These and other questions must have raced through her mind.

Notice what she did not do? She did not despair. She didn't wail uncontrollably or fly into hysterics. She didn't murmur against the providence of God. She didn't succumb to depression or fear or anger. Neither was she superhuman. She had the

concerns any mother would have if their only child stopped breathing. Immediately, her faith went to work. Her every movement and every word reflects faith.

In faith, she laid the boy in Elisha's bed . . . for Elisha was the prophet of the promise. Thus, hope springs into action. No funeral preparations are made. Neighbors are not informed of the crisis. She intended to find Elisha . . . miles away.

In faith, she called her husband, informed him of the tragedy, and prevailed upon him to grant her permission to go to Mount Carmel in search of Elisha. Again, she did not act independent of her husband, but sought his counsel and permission. There are no secrets between this couple. She does not scheme behind his back or attempt to manipulate him. She is direct and truthful. Though the situation was desperate, she did not act unseemly outside the authority of her husband, but submitted to him. What a jewel of a woman on the black velvet of hard times!

Without a doubt, her husband was in a state of shock and could not totally understand the urgency or practicality of her journey. In fact, he questioned the wisdom of the quest which also tested this woman's faith. Quite possibly, he was working through his own grief, and he certainly did not possess the quality of faith of his wife. This is often the case with couples. Each has their own measure of faith. Though filled with grief, she was able to grant a word of comfort to her husband. She put her hand on his chest and whispered, "Shalom,"-- All is well!

In faith, she embarked on the arduous journey to Mt. Carmel. Elisha recognized the Shunammite at a distance and courteously sent his servant to inquire of the well-being of her household. Upon arriving in the presence of the prophet, she threw herself at his feet to plead her case. Gehazi tried to restrain her--another test. Further, Elisha seems totally unprepared for the crisis. This woman of peace and dignity was overcome with grief. The news of her son's death must have overwhelmed this man of God as well. He blurts out, "The Lord has hidden it from me, and has not told me." Thus, the LORD was testing Elisha, and the prophet's unpreparedness must have sent another ripple of uncertainty through the Shunammite's soul.

In faith, she rejected Elisha's offer to send Gehazi with his staff to cure her son. She did not trust Gehazi or the staff, but only in Elisha, the servant of God. She prevailed. The two of them headed back to her home . . . and the corpse of her son.

Gehazi complied with Elisha's order . . . and when the Shunammite and Elisha arrived, Gehazi, having traveled before them and having placed his staff on the dead boy, informed Elisha that his remedy had failed--another test.

Elisha went into the guest house alone. There was no fan fair, no ostentatious ceremony. This was holy business that demanded all of the prophet's faith and focus. Elisha prayed . . . and oh, how he must have prayed! But, God did not answer

him immediately. Remembering Elijah had a similar battle with death regarding the son of the widow from Zerephath, Elisha arranged his body on top of the dead child and breathed. God gave him an encouraging sign. Warmth and heat returned to the corpse . . . but, the boy had not come back to life. Elijah arose. Possibly frustrated and bewildered, he paced back and forth. The man was human . . . like us. Again, he stretched himself out over the boy with a different result. This was no shallow prayer or phony exercise. Elijah was fully engaged. He applied all his knowledge and energies to solve man's greatest problem. Sneezing seven times, life returned to the child. The lad opened his eyes and was restored to his mother. Thus, this woman passed the test of faith and made it into God's hall of fame (Hebrews 11) as one of two women that experienced the resurrection power of Almighty God.

Betrayer

Final victor

Terrifying, chilling, stealing

Man's most unyielding enemy,

Death!

The Lord God's power is greater than the power of death as seen in the glorious gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ and as foreshadowed here in this story. Death is not lord. God reigns. Life prevails. Elisha exonerated! The Shunammite woman comforted. And, the saints are now assured that there is a God in Israel that can not only raise the dead, but Who's gifts are without repentance.

Finally, we have to grapple with providence. Why would God promise this woman a child and then suddenly take him from her? It doesn't make sense! The answer may be found in the following text: "That the testing of your faith, being much more precious than of gold that perishes, though it be tried with fire, might be found unto praise and honor and glory at the appearing of Jesus Christ" (1 Peter 1:7). God loves faith! In His sight, faith and the testing of that faith is more valuable than gold. The Shunammite's faith in Christ brought Him much joy, and it was His pleasure to record this woman's greatness for our own growth and encouragement. Are you under great pressure? Take heart, God is producing something precious.

Men are not born great, but all great men travel the road of greatness. The road to greatness is uphill and brimming with fiery trials. The road to Mediocreville is downhill and smooth as butter. It is a rough road that leads to greatness, and a road less traveled. Dream of greatness! Take risks, and bend history imitating the greatness of the Shunammite woman and her faith.

22 The Ideal Wife

"Far Above Rubies"- Proverbs 31

Before us is the Biblical model of an ideal wife. She is a queen in her home and a gift of God to her family.

22.1 She is a Good Woman

31:13, 14, 19 She is a diligent worker with her HANDS.

31:24 She is a smart, thrifty, quality-coupon shopper.

31:25 She is strong and dignified and honorable.

22.2 She is a Good Wife

31:12 She does her husband good all the days of his life.

31:11 She keeps her husband's secrets; she is tight lipped.

31:23, 24 She assists in making her husband successful.

22.3 She is a Good Mother

31:21 She clothes her children well: smart, modest, fashionable.

31:15, 17 She is an early riser at work for her family.

31:14, 18 She is a woman of excellence appreciating quality products.

22.4 She is a Good Neighbor

31:20 She helps the poor.

31:20 She is aware of the needs of the elderly and assist them.

31:26 She speaks well and the law of kindness is on her tongue.

To me, a lady is not frilly, flouncy, flippant, frivolous, and fluff-brained, but she is gentle, she is gracious, she is godly, and she is giving. You and I have the gift of femininity--the more womanly we are, the more manly men will be and the more God is glorified. Be women, be only women, be real women in obedience to God ~ Elisabeth Elliot, "The Gift of Femininity."

23 Who Can Find a Faithful Man?



Proverbs 32 for Men

by Jo Ann Stockton

Published in Interest Magazine-1991

His value is worth more than all the stocks and bonds in Wall Street.

The heart of his wife desires to make him happy, because he tries to fulfill her needs and wants even above his own.

He will do her good and not dwell on her shortcomings all the days of his life.

He is out in the business world only to provide the best he can for his family.

He rises from his knees after starting the day in intercession for his loved ones, friends, and associates.

He provides spiritual and physical food for his family on a daily basis, and makes it fun to learn from Dad.

He considers business transactions and makes wise investments. With the fruit of his labor, he saves for the future.

He is strong in spirit because he allows God to have full reign in his life, and strong in his body because he regularly exercises and takes care of it.

He perceives that the way he handles his family, his time, and his life is a glory to God.

The direction he is taking gives him great confidence and peace.

He puts his hands on rakes and shovels, and his arms often push the lawn mower.

He is touched to give to the poor and the homeless, and gets personally involved with the social issues of the day.

He is not anxious about hard times ahead, for he has clothed his household with insurance, retirement plans, wills, funeral arrangements, and a preparation for eternal life.

He likes to relax by making things in his workshop.

He has hobbies that enrich his life.

His reputation in his walk with the Lord is above reproach.

He is well-known and highly respected in the community.

He is a good steward of everything he buys and sells, and he delivers a quality product to his satisfied customers.

Strength and integrity clothe him, and he rejoices in his hope about the future.

He speaks with discerning wisdom, and his words are a well of life.

He is always looking for ways to be a better husband and father, and is a hard worker (but not a "workaholic").

His children have a firm walk with God, and they stand up and lovingly extol their father;

His wife does the same, and she praises him.

"Many men have done very well, but you are the cream of the crop!"

Fame and fortune are deceitful and dashing good looks are vain, but a man that submits to Christ as his Lord is to be praised.

Give him his eternal rewards, and let the ones he led to the Lord receive him at the pearly gates.



24 The War on the Family

Avoiding Capture by the “Isms.”

*Colossians 2:8 Beware lest any man spoil you through **philosophy** and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ.*



When I was a boy, we use to play a game called “Escape and Evasion.” Each side would have a flag and the goal of the war game was to capture the enemy’s flag before they stole your flag or captured you and put you in their prison. The key was to avoid being captured by the opponent’s police force while aggressively trying to steal the opponent’s flag (a symbol of

sovereignty).

Did you know that a big horn sheep can see a predator approaching three miles away? Unfortunately, most Christians can’t recognize an enemy three feet away. But, it is much worse than this. The average liberal believes that wolves, coyotes, and big horn sheep can live together in peace if we just pass enough legislation to regulate mankind. That is, many Christians have been captured by the predators of this age we call the “isms.”

24.1 The Order:

The first word in Colossians 2:8 is “Beware” and it was an order given to sentries who guarded the walls of a city during war. It means, “Keep your eyes open!!”

“Christian families are under attack in America! The Communists, Masons, Atheists, Humanists, Evolutionists, and other Godless sickos want to destroy the family. Parents beware, the government wants your child! (Lester Roloff, Evangelist)

24.2 The Danger:

Thus, Christians engaged in war must be on guard and put up a defense. The word “spoil” means “to capture.” Thus, Paul warns Christians to be alert and avoid capture in this war for the hearts and minds of men. A danger exists that Christian soldiers might be indoctrinated in the “politically correct” propaganda war.

24.3 The Historical Background

Intellectual Greeks targeted the small church at Colossae wherein clever men employed artifices to enslave the Colossians with a philosophy of law. The word “tradition” (*paradosis*) in verse 2:8 refers to man-made laws that competed for the devotion of men (Matthew 15:2). These “traditions” or precepts are the “rudiments” of man; i.e. they are man-made rules designed to control men and utilize them for political ambitions. These Greek philosophies dealt with the nature of evil that had worked their way into the church. Secondly, these errors contained a Jewish element that called for dietary restrictions and festival observances. These Judaistic traditions and Greek philosophies merged with the gospel to produce a weak, hybrid Christianity that threatened the vitality and purity of the church. To the false teachers, Jesus was one of many religious teachers with no more authority than an ordinary philosopher. In order to preserve the health of the church, Paul sought to de-couple the gospel from the chains of religious and civil barratry. Thus, we have the antidote to enslavement by law—the pre-eminence of the Lord Jesus Christ.

24.4 The Enemy’s Weapon

Paul warned the church to post guards and to make sure they were not captured in a propaganda war “through philosophy.” The word “philosophy” refers to an *intellectual movement* that competed for the affections of the people. Good soldiers know the enemy uses flim-flam to mislead advancing armies. “All warfare is based on deception,” said Sun Tsu. The means of this falsehood was “vain deceit” or what we would call a “slick sales pitch.” The source of these charming “intellectual movements” was germane to man (“tradition of men” and “rudiments of the world”) and not from God.

The Christians at Colossae were engaged in a war for their hearts and minds. The danger was that the Colossians might believe the enemy’s propaganda, syncretize them those ideas with their Christian faith, and weaken the gospel. Several intellectual movements won adherents in the first century.

24.5 The Intellectual Movements of the First Century

Gnosticism: Gnosticism was an intellectual movement that attempted to help save the soul by delivering it from the material world. To the Greek, material things were evil and spiritual things were good. Evil was “out there” and “not within us.” Ideas could save man from evil; therefore, education was the great savior of mankind.

Stoicism: The Stoic sought to save the soul from destructive emotions or “feelings” that resulted in errors of judgment. The Stoic, therefore, sought to remain calm, deny feelings, and emphasize rational behavior. Thus, the Stoics initiated an intellectual movement that assaulted pleasure with rigorous rules and regulations

about foods, sex, thoughts, and pleasure in general. Stoics tended to deny man's humanity. Bethlehem is the cure for Stoicism as well as Gnosticism.

Epicureanism: Epicurus initiated an intellectual movement that taught pain was bad and the pleasure was the greatest good. In one sense, Epicureanism was the opposite of Stoics who denied their humanity. The way to obtain pleasure was to live modestly, free of pain, and to give full expression to desire. The extreme result of this application led to an anthropomorphic, hedonistic man.

Judaism: Judaism was a perversion of the Hebrew faith that developed into an intellectual movement among Jews—a movement that rejected Christ and demanded strict adherence to Jewish case law and legal decisions—decisions that nullified the Ten Commandments and the original intent of God's law. In short, Judaism believed that law could regenerate society. Therefore, Jews advocated absolute law and controlling men by law-- not to be confused with the rule of law. Furthermore, the authority for Judaism was not the Torah, but the "oral law" that was eventually codified in the Talmud. The same legalistic mind is present today among attorney, judges, legislators, and the media. They are the new Pharisees you see.

Merkabah Mysticism: "Merkabah" means "chariot" and was related to a pursuit of God through fasting, harsh treatment of the body, and a quest for visions. Merkabah Mysticism developed into a spiritual, transcendental quest for the presence of God through spiritual translation into the heavenly realm – a leap from earthly restraints to heavenly revelation through hallucinatory experiences.

The danger at the time of Paul was that these young Christians might be seduced by these attractive intellectual movements and either forsake the faith or compromise the gospel by syncretizing them into the Christian faith. The LSD psycho drug movement today is akin to this transcendental ambition.

24.6 A Few of the Intellectual Movements of our Time:

The "isms" of Paul's day have evolved into seven headed monsters of our time. Christians must be more diligent "see to it" that no family member is taken captive by the apostate intellectual movements of our day.

Papism: Papism reached its peak in the 14th and 15th century wherein papal authority not only dominated Christendom, but monarchs. As the church became a huge, wealthy corporate conglomerate, authority crystallized in the papacy. The papacy saw itself as God's vice-regent on earth with authority equal to or greater than Christ and the Bible; that is, papal decrees are infallible and even superior to the Word of God. There was no Bible for the common folk. The illiterate looked to Rome for guidance. Papism is the belief that the pope and church canons have authority above or at least equal to the Scripture. John Wycliffe, John Huss, John

Knox, William Tyndale, Martin Luther, and John Calvin confronted absolutions of the Pope, corruption in the papacy, and insisted that Christians understand the Bible as the only authority for faith and conduct. Thus, the term “Sola Scriptura” became one of the mottos of the Reformation era.

Jesuitism: Following the Reformation and the Back to the Bible Movement during the 16th Century was the Counter-Reformation centered around the Jesuits. The founder of the Jesuits was Ignatius of Loyola (Ignio) a radical Romish zealot totally committed to the authority of the papacy. The Jesuits took an oath to defeat Protestantism by whatever means possible including but not limited to deceit, misinformation, assassination, and the poisonous cup.

*I furthermore promise and declare that I will, when opportunity present, make and wage relentless war, secretly or openly, against all heretics, Protestants and Liberals, as I am directed to do, to extirpate and exterminate them from the face of the whole earth; and that I will spare neither age, sex or condition; and that I will hang, waste, boil, flay, strangle and bury alive these infamous heretics, rip up the stomachs and wombs of their women and crush their infants' heads against the walls, in order to annihilate forever their execrable race. That when the same cannot be done openly, I will secretly use the poisoned cup, the strangulating cord, the steel of the poniard or the leaden bullet, regardless of the honor, rank, dignity, or authority of the person or persons, whatever may be their condition in life, either public or private, as I at any time may be directed so to do by any agent of the Pope or Superior of the Brotherhood of the Holy Faith, of the Society of Jesus (This oath is taken from the book **Subterranean Rome** by Carlos Didier, translated from the French, and published in New York in 1843).*

The Jesuits became the black robed assassins for the white Catholic Pope. These zealots are not lambs, but wolves. Ignatius developed a spirituality called “the encounter movement” whereby he encouraged followers to practice retreats and fasting exercises in order to encounter themselves and to seek an experience that would validate God’s presence in their lives—an experience that became the pillar of authority of their spiritual journey—an experience that was superior to the authority of the Word of God. Thus, the Jesuits are not only malicious, they seek inward spirituality; a spiritual experience that becomes the authority for life and conduct.

Secularism: Secularism is an intellectual movement that believes religions are contradictory; and therefore, cannot solve the problems of mankind. Secularism declares itself to be free of religious ideology and the fair, reasonable umpire of religious conflicts; that is, only the secular, atheistic man can properly govern society and provide equal protection for all people. However, secularism has caused

more violence and suffering in history than anything else. The Reign of Terror in the French Revolution and Lenin's Marxist Zionist slaughter of 20 million Russians come to mind.

Humanism: Humanism is a movement that believes man is the measure of all things; that man is capable of managing his own affairs apart from the supernatural; that man through reason, education, and legislation can save society. Humanism is opposed to theism, and Christianity is its main opponent.

Humanism teaches that man is born good. If children have a problem, it is because of their environment; that is, it is their parents' fault. Humanism does not acknowledge the fruits of the Poisonous Tree; therefore, the remedy for adolescent problems is not Christ, but psychological counseling, "public education," and mind control.

Public Education: Public education has morphed into a monster by the State claiming total jurisdiction over the total man. John Witherspoon (1723-1794), founder of Princeton, said the following:

Cursed be all that learning that is contrary to the cross of Christ; cursed be all that learning that is not coincident with the cross of Christ; cursed be all that learning that is not subservient to the cross of Christ.

Among modern nations, America ranks 36th in education. Modern education is man-centered, not Christ-centered. Public education is about anthropology not Theology. It is about State indoctrination and brainwashing, not investigating God's universe. History is no longer history but what the State wants you to believe about history. Students will have to spend the rest of their life unlearning the lies taught to them about the American Revolution, the Civil War, World War One, World War Two, science, freedom, and history. Under the pile of humanist rubbish, you will find a Bible that has been maligned and slandered by statist critics. Moses didn't recommend families in Israel send their children to the Philistines for an education. But, this is what Christian parents are being forced to do.

Deuteronomy 6:7 And thou shalt teach them diligently unto thy children . . .

Homeschooling under the LORD God is a bright star among the galaxies of American institutions. These dedicated Christian parents love their children and are doing their best to bring them up in the knowledge of the LORD God. But, there are tremendous forces at work against Christian education in the home. In Germany, homeschooling is illegal. This nation has retreated to the Stalinist propaganda demanding that all Christian parents and their children submit to State indoctrination and be good statist . . . and these forces are at work in America.

The MIAC Report, (March 2009) listed the enemies of the United States. On the list were "veterans," and "homeschoolers." An eighteen year veteran of law enforcement published an article at James Rawles' Survival Blog detailing how perceptions in law enforcement are being molded to fit the new paradigm. Enemies of the State included "terrorist," those with "Second Amendment-orientated views," "homeschooling," and those clinging to the "Declaration of Constitutional rights and civil liberties." (Mac Slavo, April 6th, 2011: http://www.shtfplan.com/headline-news/do-you-qualify-as-a-domestic-terrorist_04062011).

Freedom does not defend itself. Freedom must be guarded by each family.

Pop Psychology: Pop Psychology is a composite intellectual movement(s) that believes man's problems are unique to the individual and his experiences; that man's problems can be resolved by taking archaeological journeys into one's past to establish blame points for behavior. It is germane to Hinduism where solutions to problems are hidden deep within the inner divine self. Use of term like "self-esteem," "wounds" and "hurts" and "abuse," "victim," and "inner child" reveal the captured mind. During the Baltimore riots (2015), Dr. Keith Ablow, Fox News psychiatrist, said the reason the hoodlums burned and looted malls was because of a lack of self-esteem. What nonsense. The problem was they had too much self-esteem and not enough esteem for God Almighty and His Law-order.

Statism: Statism is an intellectual movement that believes government is the highest authority on earth and that more government is the solution to all of man's social problems; that devotion to the State is man's highest calling; that government is god and all men are required to pledge allegiance to the state and pay a tithe called their "fair share." Statism is strongly supported by churches which have turned over their sovereignty to the state and maintain a compliant policy to submit to all its rules, regulations, and statutes. Worship of the state is often promoted by a confession, "I pledge allegiance . . ." Statism is perhaps the most cruel of all the isms because it imprisons men for decades who defy its authority. It is cruel because of its commercial schemes to plunder the wealth of the nation through franchises and taxation schemes.

Today, the government claims jurisdiction over the total man including his marriage, children, and income. To claim as the modern State does to be able to demand 35% of a man's wages is a claim to be a god. Every god describes the way it will be worshipped, and the modern god/state expects its worshippers to tithe / tax to it as a god walking on earth. In requiring a thirty-five percent of a man's income, the modern state not only considers itself more important than God by receiving its tithe first before the citizen can tithe to the church, but more worthy than God because it demands a third of a man's income . . . and that doesn't include hidden taxes, sales taxes, state taxes, phone taxes, and utility taxes!

"The art of taxation consists in so plucking the goose as to obtain the largest possible amount of feathers with the smallest possible amount of hissing." (Jean B. Colbert)

The power to tax is the power to destroy.-John Marshall

Democratic Fascism: Fascism is an intellectual movement among Statists. It is not called "fascism," rather it is called "liberalism" or "progressivism" or "democracy." Fascism conceives of the State as an absolute. Individual value is determined by the individual's relation to the State. The Fascist State is itself conscious and has itself a personality. The State has a will and the individual must surrender to it or be punished by fines, fees, imprisonment, and even death. Democratic Fascism believes the will of the majority has the right and power to enforce the will of State over the individual man.

Militarism: Militarism is another term for a police state where in the State exercise arbitrary power over the people through police powers. Police today are not trained to be "peace officers" but to be "LAW ENFORCEMENT OFFICERS." That is, police are being trained to force you to comply with the State's ten zillion laws allegedly created by the democratic, fascist State.

Who cannot see that the U.S. is a police state? Where are the jack-boot Nazi Gestapo thugs breaking down doors and hauling people off to death camps? Where are the SS thugs brutalizing women and children? They have moved to America. Present-day conditions in America do not have to be exactly identical to Nazi Germany in the 1930s and 1940s for America to be a police state and a fascist dictatorship! If we examine the essence of a police state--destruction of Constitutional rights, police assassinations, deliberate criminal acts by government officials--then America in the twenty-first century is unquestionably a police state!

And, largest supporters of the police state come from the neo-sheepie Christianity that believes Romans 13 governs all of Scripture and that Christians are supposed to submit to the State regardless of its character.

Government Commercialism: Modern governments have morphed from a servant of the people into for-profit corporations feeding off the American people. By turning rights into privileges, and travel into driving, these corporations have been able to charge fines and fees to non-violent people to create income for the mercenary State. What we call government is in reality a "monopoly of force"--political power wielded by private individuals working for commercial organizations with profit as the primary incentive of the organization. The Christian man would do well understand the difference between a legitimate state and these corporate pirates.

Evolution: Evolution is a pseudo-scientific intellectual movement that believes mankind is a product of time-plus-chance and that life came from rocks. If there is no God, there is no right or wrong; there are no moral absolutes. Right is determined by might. Whoever has the most guns has the right of way. Evolution has given birth to monsters: abortion, pornography, lesbianism, Freudianism, federalism, liberalism, revolution and lawlessness. Modern political revolutionaries believe that society must revisit the gods of chaos and that out of social disorder comes order.

Feminism: Feminism is an intellectual movement that believes women have been severely mistreated in the Christian west; that there is a real war on women to suppress them; that women are superior to men; and that society would be better off if women would lead the family, business, and politics. So effective has been the propaganda of feminism that society has granted sole power to a woman to decide the life and death of a father's unborn child.

Naturalism: This is an intellectual movement called "going green" that worships "Mother Nature" as the earth god, the source of all living, and that nature is the standard for human behavior. Social engineers indoctrinating society into the mother cults: the Mother land, Mother Earth, and Mother Nature. Naturalism believes man should look to nature for its ethical guidance. If the animals do it, man should do it.

Pragmatism: Pragmatism is an intellectual movement that believes man's behavior should be determined by what works; that is, there are no moral absolutes; that the only standard for human behavior is positive results (John Dewey; George Santayana). It is good if it works; it is bad if it doesn't work. Winners of wars are always right; the defeated are always wrong. The North was right because it defeated the South; the South must have been wrong because they were defeated. The rich who can buy votes are good people, and the poor who cannot buy votes are evil people. Medicine that clears up symptoms must be good even if it doesn't cure the disease. Likewise, a sermon is good if the pastor quits before noon; it is bad if the pastor goes overtime.

Legalism: Legalism is a political movement that believes in rule by law; that is, that law can regenerate society; that the passing of more laws can create a human utopia free of vice, corruption, and greed. The main adherents to this religious belief are lawyers, politicians, legislators, and the Zionist media.

Liberalism and Demoralization: This is movement that seeks to replace moral absolutes and Christian Ethics with moral relativism.

2 Timothy 3:2 In the last days . . . people will be unholy.

For the last forty years there have been powerful forces at work to weaken Christian virtue among our youth by introducing young Americans to obscenity. No longer do we see blushing modesty among American girls. As "shy as a schoolgirl" has no meaning to people. Today's girls have no girlhood. They have no sweet season where they are half angel, pure in thought with white-robed innocence as a shield of power. No longer are our boys filled with courage where they are half-man half-boy, eager to tackle the world and to defend faith and liberty. Rather, we find men confused about their sexual identity. Fewer people are getting married. Twenty-five percent of homes with children are absent a father. Homes are matriarchal. Young boys are being told that real men are like James Bond hopping in and out of bed with every girl with mercury-red hair tumbling over her shoulders or clean-shaven, sissy boys on sitcoms.

America is such an open society, it has no defenses. We are lied to by such euphemisms as "diversity is our strength" and America was built on the "Judeo-Christian ethic." Consequently, Americans don't believe Christianity is worth fighting for. Americans are forced to tolerate fornicators, Sodomites, pornographers, Moslems, communists, black racists, and foreign patriots (Cinco De Mayo Days) that stir up hatred and division.

Russian defector, ex-KJB Yuri Bezmenov, explained the planned demoralization of America.

*I know that intelligence gathering looks more romantic.... That's probably why your Hollywood producers are so crazy about James Bond types of films. But in reality the main emphasis of the KGB is NOT in the area of intelligence at all. According to my opinion, and the opinions of many defectors of my caliber, only about 15% of time, money, and manpower is spent on espionage as such. The other 85% is a slow process which we call either **ideological subversion**, active measures, or **psychological warfare**. What it basically means is: to change the perception of reality of every American that despite of the abundance of information **no one is able to come to sensible conclusions** in the interest of defending themselves, their families, their community, and their country.*

*It's a great **brainwashing process** which goes very slow and is divided into **four basic stages**. The first one being "**demoralization**". It takes from 15 to 20 years to demoralize a nation In other words (for) these people the process of **demoralization is complete and irreversible***

(<http://www.crossroad.to/Quotes/brainwashing/2007/bezmenov.htm>)

Misogamy:

2 Timothy 3:6 For of this sort are they which creep into houses, and lead captive silly women laden with sins, led away with divers lusts,

Fewer people are getting married. Why marry when women are willing to be an uncompensated mistress who will pay half of the rent on an apartment? Consequently, marriage rates have hit the lowest point in a century. In 1960 one-in-ten people did not marry. Today, one-in-five adults never marry. According to the Centers for Disease Control (CDC) half of women age 15-to-44 years-old cohabit outside of marriage (2006-2010) where 20% became pregnant. According to the CDE 40 to 48 percent of births are by unmarried women. American society is “on the verge of ... a new demographic reality where the majority of first births in the United States precede marriage.” These are the fruits of the Poisonous Tree and they are for sale in the marketplace where our youth shop for meaning and purpose. (<http://www.aleteia.org/en/politics/article/as-marriage-culture-collapses-liberals-want-to-sterilize-poor-and-minority-women-5850437190156288>)

Divorce: Another way the State declares war on the family is through "no fault" divorce. Easy divorces divide the family and makes divorced women and their children dependent on the tax system.

Corporate Capitalism: Capitalism is not all bad, but there is a form of capitalism in Western civilization where power-hungry men seek to declare ownership over all things they discover. Because of corporate power and greed, there is no longer any need to enslave the human race with whips and chains. These fictitious entities acting without a conscience have figured out how to create a web of virtual rules (patent laws) that don't really exist in the real world, but can still enslave the populations of the earth. If we continue to allow corporations to claim ownership over our money, our medicines, our seeds, plants and genes, then make no mistake about the outcome: We will all end up as worker slaves in an elitist plutocracy run by corporations (Mike Adams, natural news).

Constitutionalism: This is an intellectual movement that believes the Constitution of the United States is an inspired, Christian document and that an out-of-control government can be corrected by devotion to this secular instrument— a.k.a. the highest law in the land. But, it is not a “Christian” document. There is no once mention of the “Grace of God” or “God” or the “Lord Jesus Christ.” It’s source of law is not in the LORD God (Exodus 20), but in “WE THE PEOPLE.” Few things are more idolatrous than law is in the masses.

Prisons: In America, we have seen the rise of the prison industrial complex that is involved in human trafficking and jailing Americans for profit. Freedom is no longer the rule, but the exception. Imprisoning Americans in private prisons run by mega-corporations has turned into a cash cow for big business. Author Adam Gopnik reports for the *New Yorker*:

[A] growing number of American prisons are now contracted out as for-profit businesses to for-profit companies. The companies are paid by the state, and their profit depends on spending as little as possible on the prisoners and the prisons. It's hard to imagine any greater disconnect between public good and private profit: the interest of private prisons lies not in the obvious social good of having the minimum necessary number of inmates but in having as many as possible, housed as cheaply as possible. (The Rutherford Institute, Rutherford.org)

Prisons are unbiblical. The acceptance by Christians that prisons are normal has created a crisis. Because men do not know how to confront officers who have the power to turn rights into privileges, the freedom of every family member is now at risk.

Patriotism: There is a healthy view of patriotism wherein neighbors protect neighbors, but there is an unhealthy patriotism that believes government is always right and that men should be loyal to the State regardless of its character. Pledging loyalty to a country that murders babies, promotes globalism, taxes its people into poverty, and advocates Sodomy is misplaced loyalty at best and apostasy at worse.

Marxism: This is another Jewish intellectual movement that believes in the abolition of private property and the redistribution of wealth; that is, that the government has the right to steal a rich man's property under color of law and give it to the poor; that the state should rule man from cradle to grave; that service to the state is man's highest good. It is also called "socialism" or "communism" or "health care."

Neo-Liberalism: Liberalism is a seven-headed monster that morphs itself every day. If the definition of sanity is a mind governed by the Ten Commandments, then liberalism which denies God's law-order is insanity. It is a mental disorder to believe that each man should choose his own values, that there are no absolutes, and that men should practice tolerance toward diversity of values accept those who advocate absolutes. The key slogan of liberalism is "Diversity is our strength." Thus, liberals promote giving equal protection to all religions, multiculturalism, adoption of Sharia law, protection of Islam, infanticide, homosexuality, and other destructive human ideologies.

Syncretism: Syncretism is an intellectual movement that believes "all truth is God's truth" and that a Christian should incorporate all the truth in the "isms" supra on par with the Word of God. It is opposite of Jesus' teachings: "**Sanctify (make them holy) in thy truth: thy Word is truth**" (John 17:17). Syncretism is perhaps the most dangerous of all the "isms" because it believes that wolves, coyotes, and big horn sheep can live together in peace through the rule of law. The whole idea that Christians can happily live side-by-side with child molesters, baby-killers, Sodomites, and Statists is absurd.

Zionism: This is an intellectual movement that believes the Ashkenazi Jews are the people of God who should rule the world; that men should pray for the “peace of Jerusalem” (on earth); that “Israel” becoming a nation in 1948 is a fulfillment of Biblical prophecy; that Christians should give money to the State of Israel because they are favored of God and destined to rule the world. The main slogan of this movement is promoted under the phrase “Judeo-Christian ethic.” Zionism arose late in the 19th Century, and was the cause of the majority if not all the misery of 20th Century. Zionists are called “Jews,” “communists,” “socialists,” Bolsheviks, liberals, or leftists. Take your pick, they are all the same. It was the Jewish Bolsheviks who viciously murdered, raped, tortured, and crucified 20 million Christians in Russia; Who murdered the Tsar and introduced revolutionary communism in Russia; they were traitors to Germany; the instigators and the cause of WWI; the traitor-communist who boycotted German industrialization; the assassins of German diplomats; the cause of WWII; Gulf War I and Gulf War II and the destruction of Libya.

The Zionist control the Federal Reserve, the banks, the media, television, Hollywood, the porn industry, the car companies, and the shadow government in the United States. Feminism, liberalism, socialism, abortion, Roe v. Wade, homosexuality, communism, socialism, taxation of the gay find their source in the proponents of Jewish Zionism. In fact, it was the Jews in Britain and New York that financed the communist revolution in modern Russia. Their main tool for mastery of the human race is the manufactured Holocaust. Though 50 million Indians were destroyed by Americans in our history and 60 million Russians extinguished in Russia, the death of around a million Jews in WWII became the propaganda weapon of Zionists. The Jews were quick to play the victim and to blame the Nazis, Germany, and the whole world for their casualties in the war. The Holocaust is the gagging tool to prevent criticism of radical Jewish political policies not only here in America, but around the world. Criticize Jews in Germany and you are looking at jail time even if the criticism is 100% justified. So powerful has been the propaganda and indoctrination by the Jewish media, that it totally controls the church in America wherein Christians can be found worshipping at the feet of Christ-rejecting, Torah-hating Ashkenazi Jewish Zionists. Even Christians call the traitors “God’s chosen people” forgetting that the Scripture calls them “members of the synagogue of Satan” (Rev. 1:9: 2:9). Jesus said they follow their father the Devil. No wonder the apostle said, “Beware of the circumcision.”

24.7 The Biblical Solution for the Isms

The solution to all the “isms” of our age is twofold:

First, those who have trusted Christ as their Lord and Savior must “beware” of the “isms” and resist capture. Know your enemy! Freedom is a high calling and the Christian must do everything in his power to avoid capture by the “isms” that seek his affection and his finances. Resist, resist, resist!! Put up a fight. Hide (Sun Tsu)!

Stop submitting to the billions of statutes called “tradition of men” and “rudiments of the world” (Colossians 2:8). Christians believe in the rule of law (the Golden Rule); i.e., the rule of God’s law. But, no Christian should be taken captive by those hell-bent on controlling all mankind by zillions of man-made laws enforced by a zombie police force who worship the state!!! (See Colossians 3:20; Psalm 94:20).

Second, the believer needs to realize that he is under a higher authority than the State. He has been “transferred” out from under the authorities of this age and placed under the authority of Christ who is the Head over all rule and authority (Colossians 1:13; 2:1). He has citizenship in the kingdom of God (Colossians 1:13), and has been made complete in Christ (Colossians 2:10). The term “complete” or “fullness” is a naval term referring to a ship that has a full crew with supplies for all. “In Christ,” the Christian has all that he needs to navigate his way through the sea of “isms” in our time. When a Christian surrenders to the authority of the “Lord Jesus Christ” (Used 81 times in the NT), he is not only “complete,” he is a threat to no man. But, he is a threat to all the “isms” that seek his devotion and allegiance. He is not “lawless” because he is “in-lawed” to Christ.

The family is involved in war! “Escape and Evasion,” is no game. Predators are prowling through the media and the educational system taking captives. A big horn sheep can see an enemy approaching three miles away? Likewise, discerning fathers will see the enemy and move his family into safe pastures.

25 The Fifth Commandment-- the Key to a Long Life

Remembering the Fifth Commandment

Exodus 20:12 Honor thy father and thy mother: that thy days may be long upon the land which the LORD thy God giveth thee.

25.1 Plead the Fifth



Do you want to live a long and prosperous life upon the earth? **Then Plead the Fifth!** The Fifth Commandment is the first commandment with a promise; that is, it contains the benefit of health and life for those who vigorously honor their parents. Consequently, it behooves a mature man to earnestly expand his knowledge of the word "honor" and to do all within his power to vigorously honor his mother and father.

25.2 Notes on the Purpose and Scope of the Fifth Commandment

The 5th Commandment is law for a family under God. It is not a wish or a suggestion or advice. It is law because it contains natural and judicial punishments for its violation. The Fifth Commandment is the foundation of a family under God and if the foundation is destroyed, the family shall not long endure.

Psalm 11:2, 3 For, lo, the wicked bend their bow, they make ready their arrow upon the string, that they may privily shoot at the upright in heart.

If the foundations (of the nation) be destroyed, what can the righteous do?

The command to honor parents is absolute and was not repealed like the cultic Levitical practices. The 5th Commandment is good for my family because it is good for all families. It is for all men in all nations. It is from this trunk all case law regarding the family branches.

It was spoken to adults, not toddlers; to mature men with their own families, not just teenagers; to husbands and wives with in-laws; to fathers and mothers with young children whose aged parents were still living.

The 5th Commandment doesn't command parents to honor their children! It doesn't order youth to honor their friends! It doesn't say, "Honor politicians and professional athletes." ***But, it does command parents to honor their parents!***

The 5th Commandment implies a parent-centered home, not a child-centered home.

Importance: Notice the importance of this command. In addressing holiness, honoring one's mother and father is **first required** in Leviticus 19:1-3. **Note that the Sabbath keeping was connected to holiness and the honor of parents.** God and Parents were to be honored on the same day.

Notice that case law reinforced the duty to honor parents. The first duty of a man is to protect life; the second duty of a man is to protect honor (Exodus 21:17). In the Mishnah, if one bird was killed; the other had to be set free. . . "that it may be well with thee" (Leviticus 14:4; Deuteronomy 4:40). In case law, a hunter could not kill a mother sheep and her young on the same day; that is, this rule reinforced the lesson on honoring parents (Leviticus 22:28).

The marriage of adult children to their spouses does not nullify the duty to honor parents. While adult children are no longer under a direct duty to obey their parents as they were as little children, they are always under a direct duty to honor them even in their adult life.

Why did God give this command? Because mankind has partaken of the fruit from the Poisonous Tree, all children are infected by sin. It is the nature of adult children to neglect their parents, reject their parents, rebel against their parents, despise their parents, and in some cultures to "kill their parents." This command is designed to prevent drinking hemlock from the Poisonous Tree that children may prosper long on the earth. Sane adults respect and care for their parents; insane adult children abandon their parents.

In relation to children, it is the most important command because it is the key that unlocks all the blessings of obedience to God's law-order.

Ephesians chapter six reads, "obey³² your parents in the Lord, for this is **right**."

³² Paul is dealing with the general rule for children in the home. He is not addressing exceptions; that is, he is not counseling children with difficult parents. Yes, there are limits to obeying a miscreant parent, but that is not Paul's concern here. He is announcing the law order for the home, a

Young children fulfill this command by obeying their parents; adult children have the duty to honor them. Obedience is commanded because it is "right." Honor is commanded because it is health to the bones--a promise of life. Honoring parents is right because it conforms to the rule of law and because it leads to physical and mental health. Honor is the essence of sanity. A person in their right mind honors their parents, a psychotic humiliates their father and mother. Do you want good health? Honor your parents.

Meaning of the word "honor."

Dictionary.com defines honor as "honesty, fairness, distinction, high respect as for worth, merit, or rank; respect manifested, high public esteem; fame; glory; the privilege of being associated with or receiving a favor from a respected person, group, or organization, to hold in high honor, revere, treat with honor, to a courteous regard for."

Synonyms for honor are attention, celebration, confidence, credit, dignity, distinction, esteem, faith, fame, glory, recognition, reputation, tribute, trust, adulation, deference, exaltation, fealty, homage, rank, reverence to mention a few.

The Hebrew word for "honor" is *kabad*. It means "to be heavy, be weighty, be grievous, be hard, be rich, be honorable, be glorious, be burdensome, and be honored."

It (*kabad*) is translated as follows:

Genesis 12:10 And there was a famine in the land: and Abram went down into Egypt to sojourn there; for the famine was grievous in the land.

Famine grips every thought, feeling, and action. All a starving person can think about is food. Likewise, a godly man constantly thinks about how to better honor his parents.

Genesis 13:2 And Abram was very rich in cattle, in silver, and in gold.

Abraham was rich in wealth; likewise, a godly adult child will make sure their parents are rich in honor.

ESV Exodus 5:9 Let heavier work be laid on the men that they may labor at it and pay no regard to lying words."

law-order well established in the Old Testament. The majority of problems in the home are not due to delinquent parents, but due to delinquent children.

The word "heavier work" is the Hebrew word *kabal*. It refers to the mass and burden of moving massive stones. Likewise, honor means to give your parents weight and expend energy in an effort to honor them.

ESV Exodus 8:24 And the LORD did so. There came great swarms of flies into the house of Pharaoh and into his servants' houses. Throughout all the land of Egypt the land was ruined by the swarms of flies.

One can only imagine what it would be like to be tormented by thousands of flies. The duty of honoring parents should concern a person as much as being harassed by a swarm of flies.

ESV Exodus 9:18 Behold, about this time tomorrow I will cause very heavy hail to fall, such as never has been in Egypt from the day it was founded until now.

Respect: Respectful adult children proudly and carefully choose their words when introducing the parents to others. They say notable things about them when introducing them to friends. Parents are given the place of honor at the dinner table. The young boys assist their Nana with her cane, offer her a place on the sofa, or pull out a chair for her to sit at dinner time. Candles come out. Kids ask questions and then listen. Nana and Grampa have come to visit. "I love you Mom . . . Dad," are heard in every conversation. In sickness, adult children are present, and those that cannot be there are represented by the care of one. On a death bed, children arrive to say "goodbye" and to give comfort and support for their surviving parent. "Never alone" is the mantra of a family under God. Never alone! It is the curse of old age, and loved parents are shielded from it.

Loyalty: Statists have indoctrinated children into saying Bellamy's Pledge of Allegiance. Bellamy was a Bible critic and skeptic--a statist who despised the Biblical south, their manners, their codes of honor, and state rights. He proposed every youth should work for the government for twenty years before they launched a business in the private sector. But, what business is it of teachers indoctrinating kids to pledge allegiance to the United States Government? The family, yes; the government, "No!"

What? No pledge of allegiance to the family? No pledge of allegiance to the LORD God? The word "honor" is so heavy, why aren't children taught a pledge allegiance to their parents and to the LORD God? Isn't it because the Fascist State has spurned the 5th Commandment and trained its citizens to be statist?

The family under God acknowledges the family as originating under God's plan and subject to His Divine purpose. The family is under God, not under

CONgress.³³ The Biblical view of the family is opposed to humanistic, man-centered, government controlled "family units" within the collective society.

The 5th Commandment is a positive command calling for expended energy on the part of adult children. Being a positive command, it demands clear, decisive, specific, concrete, vigorous action on the part of adult children. Spirit-filled children are in touch with their parents and are a source of joy and happiness for their parents; carnal children are a grief to them.

The 5th Commandment is not a cultic observance, ancestor worship, or merely a mundane duty of preventing them from starving to death. Their position in the family commands respect. The fact they provided life, knowledge, wisdom, and necessities of life demands they be respected.

Honor includes the duty to care for parents when they are older. It has been said that one man can support a wife and eight kids, but eight kids can't seem to support one parent. Jesus observed the twisted logic of lawyers who devised ways to ignore the stone on the path of duty for adult children by pronouncing "Corban" on their property. The Lord quickly condemned this jitterbug across the dance floor of duty when he said, "Why do you break the commandment of God for the sake of your tradition?" One can only imagine what words the Lord would have to say about Americans who trash their parents and worship a youth driven culture (Matthew 15:3).

Honor means obedience for younger children; but, honor means investment of time, energy, and in some cases money from older children toward their parents. The word "obey" in Ephesians 6:1 comes from the Greek word *upakouete* which is an imperative. It means "to hear" or "to listen" to your parents. Younger children are called "to hear" their parents in order to obey them. Adult children are called "to hear" their parents not only for their own growth and protection, but to bring joy and laughter into the home.

The opposite of honoring a parent is "cursing" a parent. The Hebrew word for "curse" (*qalal*) means "to slight," "belittle," "to esteem lightly," "to treat with contempt," and "to shake" or "to shock" or "to shame" them with irreverent words and behavior. It includes striking a parent with slanderous words and or with a fist. The penalty for slandering a parents is the death of prosperity and happiness . . . and, in some cases "physical death" as in the case of Absalom who cursed his father with his eye (2 Samuel 15-18). To stay alive in Israel, one had to speak tenderly of their parents.

³³ Congress was given 18 powers and not one of them includes regulating American families.

Exodus 21:15 "Whoever strikes his father or his mother shall be put to death.

Exodus 21:17 "Whoever curses his father or his mother shall be put to death.

No parent is perfect. In fact, most are quite flawed. The 5th Commandment does not say, "Honor parents who make you happy . . . or who are likeable . . . or who are rich . . . or who are without fault." The command to honor parents must be applied to less than perfect parents . . . even senile parents.

A family under God does not judge their parents. They do not have "roast parents" at evening meals. God has not assigned adult children the duty of judging their parents and putting them on trial. It is not their duty to set up a personal court and to indict, criticize, belittle, humiliate, and publish their personal judicial decision against their parents. To judge a parent is to dishonor a parent and to invite death into the family. Judging parents is a fruit of the Poisonous Tree especially when adult children have a judicial ophthalmological disease (Matthew 7:1). To judge a parent is to kiss the hissing serpent and to eat the fruit of the Poisonous Tree.

The family under God has no attorneys, no jury, and no judges sitting on the bench. Honor, honor, and more honor is the trinity of goodness that dwells in the Christian home. There are no harsh rebukes by adult children to their parents. Even those adult children who know that their parents have deep flaws choose a course of honor by default; that is, they honor their parents by silence and what is not said.

1 Timothy 5:1 Do not rebuke an older man but encourage him as you would a father.

This does not mean that adult children are not to learn from their parent's mistakes. They must or risk repeating their sins and errors. But, honor does mean that adult children must reserve judgment and not condemn their parents. When Robert E. Lee was giving a lecture at Washington College after the Civil War, he was speaking on principles of military success. One proud student said to him, "But, you failed!" Lee's response was, "I hope you do better than I." Likewise, life tests all men . . . and may the Lord help you to be a better, more dedicated Christian and parent than they.

Parental Support: Parents have a duty to provide for their children; children have a duty to provide for the care of their parents. Even Christ provided for the care of his mother before He died. The child who supports and cares for parents is the main true heir.

More and more, the State has unlawfully expanded its jurisdiction over the family **and its property. The State is progressively making itself the only heir**

above all others as the State assumes both the dual role of parent and child—a complete overreach of State authority.

The family had responsibility for the care of its members. The family is the basic economic unit, and no society can long survive that weakens it. Thus, when the state removes responsibility for education or care from the family to the state or by confiscating property that could be used to support the family, the State weakens the family.

Education: The family, not the state, is the anchor for a stable society. With a duty to educate children in the law of God and in the family business, parents under God are His tools to shape the destiny of a nation (Deuteronomy 6:4; Proverbs 1:7).

The man under God seeks to arrange his family under God’s rules for the family as the fundamental educational unit in God’s plan: loving male leadership, happy submission of the wife, obedient children, administration of duty with diligence and thankfulness. God’s man follows one principle: “*Seek first the Kingdom of God.*” that is, to arrange his family under God’s purpose and God’s law order (Matthew 6:33).

The home is the institution of education (Proverbs 22:6): The home is the place of a child’s first language course, first course on law, first health lesson, first cooking class, first conflict resolution class, first grooming course, his first church, his first vocation, and first in everything that is important. Thus, parents have a duty to provide a godly education for their children, and a child has a duty to obey his parents.

Biblical education was intensely practical. Teaching a child a trade was the chief duty. Gamaliel observed, “Not learning, but doing is the chief thing.” Learning was not the accumulation of knowledge, but learning to produce was the aim of a biblical, family education.

The greatest school is the family. Torah and a Trade were the main subjects of parental education. The truest and best educators of children are parents under God—not the state; not public schools. The surest way to ruin a child is to take them out of the home and to put them in a herd of lusty, frothy, frivolous, undisciplined, irresponsible adolescents. Once so indoctrinated, the child will be a fool for life.

26 The Family and the Tenth Commandment

Exodus 20:17 You shall not covet your neighbor's house; you shall not covet your neighbor's wife, or his male servant, or his female servant, or his ox, or his donkey, or anything that is your neighbors.



The 5th, 7th, 8th, and 10th Commandment is in place to protect family property. A family without property is nothing more than a touchy-feely social club. In the Biblical mind, there is no such thing as a family without property. Property is essential to the health and survival of the family. *Getting property is one skill; keeping it another.* Thieves are among us, and

the family under God must do everything in its power to gain assets and to protect them.

The family under God operates under the dominion mandate and is subject to the original jurisdiction of Genesis 1:26. Authority comes from God, not the State; that is, it is the family's duty to possess, control, and subdue a portion of the earth (land) and rule it under the laws of God.

God did not give the Earth to the State, but to families. Every attempt of the State to enlarge its control of property is a product of the Poisonous Tree. To view the family as merely human resources for the State **is a doctrine of the hissing snake.** And, the property tax is the most venomous of all taxes. The modern property tax is nothing more than a revival of the old feudal order wherein the serfs worked for the lord and were permitted by his grace to keep a portion of what they earned. The property tax increases the power of the State while weakening the power of the family.

The only taxes approved by God were the poll tax on males which amounted to about three days income, and the tithe, a tax **not** on the land, but on the produce of the land.

God gave the earth to the families, not governments. The acquisition of property is a natural right (See the Declaration of Independence).

Exodus 9: 29 And Moses said unto him, As soon as I am gone out of the city, I will spread abroad my hands unto the LORD; and the thunder

*shall cease, neither shall there be any more hail; that thou mayest know how that the **earth** is the **LORD'S**.*

*Psalm 24:1 The **earth** is the **LORD'S**, and the fulness thereof; the world, and they that dwell therein.*

*Psalm 115:16 The heaven, even the heavens, are the **LORD'S**: but the **earth** hath he given to the children of men.*

In some Christian circles, property is frowned upon as being worldly or carnal. The spiritual man is seen as possessing nothing. Churchmen who believe the pastor should be kept poor so he can learn to trust God is a form of theft. The command, "You shall not muzzle an ox when it treads out the grain" is case law to prevent churchmen from stealing from their pastor (1 Corinthians 9:9).

Property is not a luxury, but power for the family. Property means wealth, income, and security for families. Socialistic democracies seek to abolish private ownership of land, tax it, and place all land, water, and resources under the control of the state. The State, not the family, must survive.

26.1 Introduction to the Tenth Commandment

Exodus 20:15 Thou shalt not steal.

The 8th Commandment is about protecting family property from people who eat fruit from the Poisonous Tree. Not only is a man not supposed to steal, he must be on guard and not be stolen from! He must not only be committed to the Ten Commandments, he is not safe unless his neighbors are committed to the Ten Commandments. In 2012, the FBI estimated there were 8,975,438 property crimes in America. Total losses were calculated at \$15.5 billion. One in thirteen senior citizens will be victims of fraud, vandalism, or theft. And, the main thief that one must fear is the gluttonous State and their enforcement thugs.

Socialism and its abolition of private property is an enemy of the Divine order. In the Marxist system, the family is irrelevant if comrades are not serving the "good" of the collective whole. American law is Fabian and has evolved into a Fascist³⁴ socialistic order. In the U.S. Code, the law is primarily about the "individual" (corporations) not family-owned property. The concept of "family" is virtually absent except in terms of "medical leave" for government jobs.

³⁴ Fascism: a form of government where the State is absolute and where the individual's value is estimated by his contribution to the State; that is, the State is viewed as a god and an individual's happiness, prosperity, values, education, beliefs, and power are derived from the State.

The Marxist concept (and American Marxist's Democracy) of transferring all property to the control of the State makes any discussion of family fantastic. In communistic countries, the State has legal title and equity interest in all property. In democratic Marxist's states like America, the State holds legal title to all land and automobiles, and the "owner" holds equity interest in property. As long as the state owns it and taxes it, the American family is involved in *ryot tenure*,³⁵ the worst of all kinds of slavery.

In colonial New England the covenantal concept of church and state was applied. Everyone went to church, but only a limited number had voting rights in the church and therefore the state, because there was a coincidence of church membership and citizenship. The others were no less believers, but the belief was that only the responsible must be given responsibility. One faith, one law, and one standard of justice did not mean democracy. The heresy of democracy has since then worked havoc in church and state, and it has worked towards reducing society to anarchy.

The Institutes of Biblical Law, p. 100

Both the 8th and the 10th Commandment are designed to protect family property. If all men practiced these Commandments, then everyone is safe; but, if Christians are ignorant of God's law-order, no one is safe! Thus, theft in society is directly proportional to the weight it gives to the Ten Commandments. *To disparage God's law order is to entertain an alien law order that permits legal theft.* In the Jewish Talmudic order, the rabbis left loopholes to increase the assets of Jews: Such an order was condemned by our Lord Jesus Christ, *"And why do you break the commandment of God for the sake of your tradition?"* (Matthew 15:3).

Sanhedrin 57a . A Jew need not pay a gentile the wages owed him for work

Baba Kamma 37b. If an ox of an Israelite gores an ox of a Canaanite there is no liability; but if an ox of a Canaanite gores an ox of an Israelite...the payment is to be in full.

Baba Mezia 24a . If a Jew finds an object lost by a gentile ("heathen") it does not have to be returned.

³⁵ **Ryot Tenure:** a system of land-tenure where the government takes the place of landowners and collects the rent by means of tax gatherers (IRS). After slavery, it is considered the worst of systems because the government at what pleases it without a direct vote of the people. The difference between the ryot tenure in India under British rule and America is the difference between spirit and form. In America, the government promotes the illusion of freedom by while threatening it citizens with imprisonment or seizure of property if they don't pay the tax.

Sanhedrin 57a . When a Jew murders a gentile, there will be no death penalty. What a Jew steals from a gentile he may keep.

Baba Kamma 37b. The gentiles are outside the protection of the law and God has "exposed their money to Israel."

The purpose of gospel of Christ is to regenerate men and to re-establish man under the creation mandate-- to exercise dominion over the earth. The earth is indeed the Lord's, as is all dominion, but God has chosen to give authority over the earth to man subject to His law-word with property as the central aspect of that dominion.

When Christians are antinomian, pit law against grace, or are hostile to God's law-order, the State is permitted to expand its taxing powers.

26.2 Theft from Parents

Proverbs 28:24 Whoever robs his father or his mother and says, "That is no transgression," is a companion to a man who destroys.

This proverb is a reference to the abolition of robbing parents by children who twist the law or the courts to their advantage. Only a twisted man sues his parents. The extortionists and oppressors create a social order which will ultimately destroy them also.

Theft is taking another man's property by coercion, fraud, or without his uncoerced consent. Cheating, defacing property or destroying its value is also theft. Theft can be simple or complex. Theft can be accomplished by indirect and legal means; i.e., by passing a law which steals from the rich, the poor, or the middle-classes, to shift wealth to a particular group. The state becomes the agency whereby theft is accomplished under pseudo-moral cover arising by legal enactment. When the State cannot pay its bills, it simply plunders the family to increase its revenue. However, when the family can't pay its bills, it goes without.

Necessity does not justify theft. The idea that *a man can steal to meet his self-defined "needs"* gives man's wants priority over God's law-order. In the humanistic order, necessity knows no law. Theft is more than an offense against another person; it is an offense against God's law.

The Puritan Ethic taught the Ten Commandments were absolute and that it was always wrong to steal. It is wrong for an individual man to steal and it is wrong for the collective State to steal under color of law. Among Roman Catholics, a man is not permitted to steal unless he is hungry; that is, the Catholic system left one hand in the cookie jar. And, this is the difference between Christian America and Catholic Mexico.

26.3 Theft by Failure to Make Restitution

We steal when we don't make restitution to victims. Restitution is necessary to make victims whole. In the Bible, to steal a sheep was not only to steal the present value of the sheep, but its future value. When Sarah was seized from Abraham by the Egyptian totalitarian state due to the doctrine of eminent domain, there is not the slightest hint of any condemnation of Abraham. Pharaoh escaped the judgment of the Sovereign God only by making restitution to Abraham (Genesis 12; Leviticus 7).

A plea for FORGIVENESS does not nullify a man's duty to make restitution.

When forgiveness is separated from law and made a matter of feelings, the end result is sentimentalism (Rushdoony). Many modern theologians and Christians insist on an unconditional forgiveness for all men, irrespective of repentance and restitution. There is no such thing as "unconditional forgiveness" in Scripture.³⁶ Such a position is simply a subsidy for thieves and an acceptance of evil as evil.

The biggest thief is the State because in criminal cases, it is the State that profits from the crime. In cases where restitution is an order of the court, the invisible State is declared a victim wherein the Court orders restitution to the State. The entire judicial industry is built on the fiction that the State is somehow a victim in traffic offenses and other *mala prohibita violations*. In cases where the true victim is awarded compensation for damage received, predatory lawyers end up with the lion's share of the award. Thus, the State permits theft under color of law through multiplication of commercial "crimes."

26.4 Theft by Negligence

We cannot rob a man of his property by our neglect; we must act as good neighbors even to our enemies and to strangers. Lost or strayed animals, property, or clothing must be protected and held in ward with every public effort at immediate restoration (Exodus 23:4).

An assaulted woman must be given aid (Deuteronomy 22:24). The Rabbis considered the plight of an unaided maiden a reason the Sun would not shine (dark horror), and linked it along such sins as sodomy and forgery. It was rated as worse than giving a false witness because silence is a crime when one has a moral duty to speak and crime (Proverbs 24:11, 12).

American law has become contradictory since the old common law has been superseded by statutory law. The law today, says Judge Napolitano, does not require you to call the cops even if someone is burning your neighbor's house down.

³⁶ Unconditional forgiveness is an invention of modern preachers wherein these men attempted to explain the wonders of God's love and forgiveness. As wonderful as forgiveness is, it is not unconditional. God's forgiveness is not free gratis. It cost Him His Son!

While the civil legal situation may be equivocal one; the Biblical legal requirement is not. Misprision, concealment of a crime, is a serious offense. The inactive bystander is a party to the crime according to the law of the LORD God.

In the parable of the Good Samaritan, the religious parties “passed by on the other side.” It was easier to tithe mint and cumin than it was to exercise moral courage and to assist a victim. It is thus a ***serious error to reduce this parable to the level of feelings alone***, or to a matter of charity; these things are subordinate to the law in this case.

26.5 Theft by Deception

Deuteronomy 25:13 Thou shalt not have in thy bag divers weights, a great and a small.

Differing weights and measures is essentially fraudulent money. Dishonest merchandising is a serious matter especially by dishonest judges and courts. *Caveat emptor, let the buyer beware*, is not Biblical. The law cannot encourage irresponsibility on the part of either buyer or seller. Honest goods are necessary, but also honest payments. The state, as a ministry of justice, has a duty to maintain justice in the marketplace.

Again, the State is the biggest offender. The value of the U.S. dollar changes faster than a chameleon creeping on a plaid shirt. Further, printing money and inflating it is another ruse to steal the value of the dollar. Moreover, because the State confuses justice with charity, it robs from the people.

26.6 Theft by Charging Interest

NAS Exodus 22:25 "If you lend money to My people, to the poor among you, you are not to act as a creditor to him; you shall not charge him interest.

Charging interest on a commercial loan with lawful money, gold and silver, is acceptable under God's law order (Luke 19). Charging interest on a loan to a neighbor recovering from financial stress is strictly forbidden in Israel. But, charging interest on NOTHING (FRNs/credit) is blasphemy.

Further, banks rob people by creating money out of nothing and then charging interest on it. The modern system of monetizing contracts, creating money out of thin air, calling it a "loan," and mislabeling the signer a "debtor" instead of a "creditor" is fraud on the highest order. The Bible calls these "tricks of the mind" or "sorceries" germane to mystery Babylon—an enemy of God (Revelation 18:23).

"What they (banks) do when they make loans is to accept promissory notes in exchange for credits to the borrowers' transaction accounts.

Loans (assets) and deposits (liabilities) both rise by (the amount of the "loan")." (Modern Money Mechanics, Federal Reserve Bank of Chicago, p. 6)

26.7 Theft by Permissiveness

The law "Thou shall not steal" applied to family members. Sons and daughters are warned not steal from parents either through laziness or neglect or juvenile "borrowing." Where an irresponsible juvenile is tolerated by a lawless parent, other members of the family are robbed of their due. It is a violation of God's law-order to "forgive" theft without making a child pay for his irresponsibility (Exodus 21:28-32).

26.8 Theft by Human Trafficking

Voluntary slavery is not a crime, but kidnapping and man stealing is criminal theft (Exodus 21:16; Deuteronomy 5:19). "Thou shall not steal another man's freedom by forcibly enslaving his person or his property." To kidnap a man and enslave him is to rob him of his freedom and purpose under God. Likewise, a believer has no authority to make himself slave of men or the State.

Thus, a **compulsory draft** on young men to go fight wars for lusty, ambitious politicians is nothing more than human trafficking and man stealing for the purpose of war (1 Corinthians 7:23; Colossians 4:1). The riots in the sixties and protests against Lyndon Johnson's Insane War in Vietnam was perfectly justified. The War Protest Movement of the 1960s was a good thing, not a bad thing.

26.9 Theft Through Prisons

The greatest offender of this prohibition is the United States Government. America has more laws than any other nation and has more people in prison than all the nations combined. Over 7.2 million persons were on probation or parole or incarcerated in jail or prison at yearend 2006. "About 3.2% of the U.S. adult population, or 1 in every 31 adults, were incarcerated or on probation or parole at yearend 2006." American prisons and jails held 2,304,115 inmates in 2008. Approximately 1 in every 18 men in the United States is behind bars or being monitored. The United States has the highest documented incarceration rate in the world at 738 persons in prison or jail per 100,000 (as of 2005). The United States has 5% of the world's population and 23.6% of the world's prison population (Probation and Parole in the United States, 2006, by Lauren E. Glaze and Thomas P. Bonczar. U.S. Bureau of Justice Statistics (BJS), U.S. Department of Justice; U.S. Bureau of Justice Statistics;

In Biblical law, the goal of penal laws is ***not punishment, but restoration***. Where criminals were unable to make restitution, bond-service was mandatory in order to work out the required restitution. However, humanism being hostile to God's law, blamed society for man's crimes and demanded that society make restitution to the

criminal for his actions. Humanistic restitution is anti-law in that it is fundamentally hostile to any concept of absolute law. Absolute law is replaced with the absolute person.

The Puritans asserted every man had an obligation to know the law by means of the Bible. The jury system, based on common law, was strong as long as the law was common law of Scripture. But, woe to the innocent man who has a jury of humanists trained in the public school system. When lawyers turned instead to positive law (statist law) and statute law (in place of Biblical law), they cut themselves off from the people. A lawyer-society had replaced a law-society

26.10 Theft by Taxation

Property is basic to a man's freedom. A man's labor is his sacred property. The fruits of a man's labor belongs to the man, not the State. Caesar is not God nor does Caesar have a claim upon any man or his possessions. Caesar only has a claim on what he creates and lawfully controls.

"The property that every man has is his personal labor, as it is the original foundation of all other property so it is the most sacred and inviolable...to hinder his employing (it)...in what manner he thinks proper, without injury to his neighbor, is a plain violation of the most sacred property".

Butcher's Union Co. v. Crescent City Co., 111 U.S. 746.

Taxation Key, West 933 – "The Right to receive income or earnings is a right belonging to every person and realization and receipts of income is therefore not a "privilege that can be taxed".

Modern day American taxation is no different than the Mafia offering protection. The government is saying, "Give me your money or we will come and beat you up!" Give us your money or we will send our IRS Gorilla to pound on you.

A tyrannical state always limits a man's use of his property, taxes it, or seizes property under doctrines of imminent domain or accusation of an "unpaid debt." Such a system is an effective means of enslaving a man without necessarily touching his person. Theft is more than stealing property, ***it is at the same time an assault on a man's freedom.*** Neither the state nor an individual has any right to transgress the 8th Commandment.

But, the state does transgress this law, not only by acts of confiscation, manipulation of money, inflation, deflation, and by taxation, but also by any and ***every undercutting the Biblical faith of Christian families.*** State controlled education is theft because it robs Christian families of the capacity to fund their own Christian education program by compelling them under force of law to fund Government schools and their godless, secular humanistic education programs.

"I'll say this plainly, I've said it before - Taxation is theft. It presumes the government has a higher claim on our property than we do," says Judge Andrew Napolitano, the host of Fox Business' Freedom Watch and the author of the new book, It Is Dangerous to Be Right When the Government Is Wrong: The Case for Personal Freedom.

Thus the government, by virtue of its compulsory tax on education, destroys competition in the marketplace destroying the public character of a godly society. So accepted was the maxim, "thou shall not steal," that mishpat homes in Biblical had cloth over their doors, and that just for privacy. No man dared entered into another man's threshold without permission. It was law! And, all homes were safe.

26.11 Theft by Seizure of Property

In Israel, landmarks could not be moved (Deuteronomy 19:14). To remove a landmark was a double crime: ***It is both theft and false witness—a violation of the whole law*** (See James 2:10). The modern influx of illegal immigration into this country is theft of property. . . and American families are made to pay for the government's generosity through heavier taxation, higher food prices, and higher housing costs. Thus, when the government offers amnesty to illegal immigrants who have stolen their way into this country to reap the benefits of what Americans have built, it no longer serves God's law-order because it protects thieves.

The whole practice of the IRS that can claim a debt owed without a sworn assessment, and then seize a man's bank account or car or house without a trial by jury is nothing more than a sophisticated scheme of constructive theft in flagrant violation of the 10th Commandment. Calling the legislative branch of government CONgress is not an over statement, but a sad fact of American life. Thus, it is the duty of every Christian to oppose the D.C. government schemes to steal property.

26.12 Theft by Fraud

Exodus 20:17 "You shall not covet your neighbor's house; you shall not covet your neighbor's wife, or his male servant, or his female servant, or his ox, or his donkey, or anything that is your neighbor's."

Leviticus 19:13 Thou shalt not defraud thy neighbor, neither rob him: the wages of him that is hired shall not abide with thee all night until the morning.

The difference between the 8th Commandment and the 10th Commandment is the difference between simple theft, and complex schemes by powerful men to seize a man's property. The word "covet" refers to "fraud" or "clever schemes" or "loan sharking," or "false advertizing," or "bait and switch" programs or taxation plans.

The law deals with the faults of power, the “conversion of might into right,” and the particularly undue retention of a working man’s wages. Biblical law requires the just treatment of a laborer; it forbade fraud in foods, measures, money, drugs, patents, property, and intellectual property like copyright laws. The State by multiplying regulations and charging fees for violations not only turns every man into a criminal, but is big business for the lusty State.

The basic intention of this law, since it deals with the “faults of power,” is *to legislate against the various forms of legalized robbery* which so often accompany the control of the State by one class or another. “*Rob, not the poor, because he is poor: neither oppress the afflicted in the gate (locative of civil administrators)*” (Proverbs 22:22).

Biblical law represents an ultimate order, which is written into the texture of all creation. Civil statutes represent only the will of the state, not an objective and absolute moral order. When the state refuses or otherwise to punish evil *mala en se* but creates acts *mala prohibita* for their commercial interests, the State serves evil. Civil statutes that represent only the will of the state, is not an objective and absolute moral order. **Statutory laws create lawlessness, because society is then no longer governed by absolute standard of justice but rather by the arbitrary and capricious will of the State.**

There are thieves among us.

Sometimes, we don’t realize that many of the financial problems we face are due to “others” violating God’s Commandments. And, this is the case with the 8th and the 10th Commandment. Piestic Christians truncated the law of “Thou shall not covet a man’s property . . .” to matters of heart and desire while separating it from man’s actions and behaviors. *A true understanding of the Tenth Commandment appears to be missing from the Christian mind.* This command not only applies to the Christian family but to all men and **all of man’s institutions.**

Failure to advocate for God's law in the marketplace of ideas creates a greenhouse of lawlessness. The success of humanists to gain control of public schools and their victory over God's law order has made public schools a training camp for criminals. Not because there are not "good" people in the system, but because man has become the measure of man, not the Word of God.

For this reason, leftist assault the Ten Commandments. Forbidding the teaching of God’s law-order in schools guarantees safety for men of power engaged in theft through the State. Fraud grows in the valley of ignorance.

26.13 Theft by Tax Schemes

The term “covet” refers to sophisticated schemes designed to acquire another man's property. The 10th Commandment differs from “common” theft, in that

“covetousness” here prohibits *constructive fraud*. While any man can plan a heist, the greater problem is enacted legislative theft.

The 10th Commandment prohibits commercial schemes by bankers, merchants, and government agents designed to deprive men of their property under color of law, color of contract (adhesion contracts), and color of procedure (government enforcement of the theft).

Today in America we have: Accounts Receivable Tax, Building Permit Tax, Capital Gains Tax, CDL License Tax, Cigarette Tax, Corporate Income Tax, Court Fines (indirect taxes), Dog License Tax, Federal Income Tax, Federal Unemployment Tax (FUTA), Fishing License Tax, Food License Tax, Fuel permit Tax, Gasoline Tax, Hunting License Tax, Inheritance Tax Interest expense (tax on the money), Inventory Tax IRS Interest Charges (tax on top of tax), IRS Penalties Tax, Liquor Tax, Local Income Tax, Luxury Tax, Marriage License Tax, Medicare Tax, Property Tax, Real Estate Tax, Septic Permit Tax, Service Charge Tax, Social Security Tax, Road Usage Tax (truckers), Sales Tax, Recreational Vehicle Tax, Road Toll Booth Tax, School Tax, State Income Tax, State Unemployment Tax, Telephone Federal Excise Tax, Telephone Federal Universal Service Fee Tax, Telephone Federal, State and Local Surcharge Tax, Telephone Minimum usage surcharge tax, Telephone recurring and non-recurring charge tax, Toll Bridge Tax, Toll Tunnel Tax, Traffic Fines (indirect taxation), Trailer Registration Tax, Utility Tax, Vehicle License Registration Tax, Vehicle Sales Tax, Watercraft Registration Tax, Well Permit Tax, Workers Compensation Tax and now Obama wants to pass the biggest tax hike in history on universal health care.

Not one of these taxes existed 120 years ago. Our nation was the most prosperous in the world. We had absolutely no national debt. We had the largest middle class in the world, and Mom stayed home to raise the kids. Today, we have more taxes than any nation in the world. We have the greatest debt of any nation. Our middle class is shrinking, and mom and the teenagers have to work to keep the family afloat. **WHAT THE HELL HAPPENED?** I'll tell you what happened! Liberals (Zionists) banished the Ten Commandments from being taught in the public schools in order to undermine the Christian influence in America. Churches stopped teaching the Ten Commandments in church. Pastors treated the law of the LORD God as irrelevant; i.e., belonging to a former dispensation.

If Christians understood the prohibition of this command, America would not now be a nation of serfs with an “income tax” or a “property tax”. Gold and silver coins would be our currency. But, because Americans are gullible and not Biblically or constitutionally literate, Americans are easily deceived by the sophistry coming out of Washington D.C. The majority of Americans do not truly perceive taxing schemes as covetous acts prohibited by the Tenth Commandment. Consequently, the average American works from January to May, not for himself, but to pay his “income tax.”

Why should a man have to work one day for the government, much less four or five months for the government?

Take for example the “inheritance tax.” What gives the government any right to demand a share of a father's inheritance? Where does God’s Word give any authority to Caesar to seize a son's inheritance given to his family? Where in the Constitution did the People give the government any power to take any property without just compensation? Where? The clever bureaucratic thieves promote the fraud by perpetuating the lie that “we have to redistribute the wealth” or by simply repeating the phrase, "the taxes you owe," "you owe," "you owe." Propaganda Hogwash! The Tenth Commandment, therefore, was meant to protect the family from crafty, powerful politicians who command men through the power of the State.

What is an American supposed to do when the government he is indentured to support is involved in schemes to shift wealth from the family to government workers? What is the Christian supposed to do when the government wages war against God’s law-order by replacing God’s laws with man’s laws? What is an American supposed to do when the whole W-4 Form, 1099 requirement, and 1040 tax program is nothing but an unconstitutional, clever scheme to steal a man’s income?

The 10th Commandment forbids the use of force, threats, intimidation, and coercion to deprive a man of his property. Have you ever noticed how the 10th Commandment "thou shall not covet thy neighbor’s (property)” condemns the government from organizing itself into a system that plunders the people through fraud, trickery, legalese, presumptuous contracts, the color of law, and a system of legalized banditry by coerced taxation?

The 10th Commandment forbids banditry (by gun or law) and the use of force, coercion, and intimidation to pirate a man’s property under color of law and color of authority.

The 10th Commandments targets devious action that exploits man through **trickery, legalese, and entrapment** often found in contracts. Think of how many Chinese girls were offered jobs in America and when they arrived were sold into prostitution. Think of how signing a Form W-4 legally makes you a government employee subject to its taxation schemes.

26.14 Theft by the Doctrine of Eminent Domain

In June, 2005 Americans were stunned by a 5-4 Supreme Court decision enabling the doctrine of eminent domain in New London, Connecticut thereby granting power to the state to seize and demolish private homes in order to promote commercial development in the region.

Eminent domain is the claim to sovereignty by the state over all the property within the state, and it is the assertion of the right to appropriate all or any part thereof to any public or state use deemed necessary to the state.

Eminent domain is an assertion of sovereignty, and in Scripture sovereignty is ascribed to God alone (Isaiah 46:10; Ephesians. 1:11; James 4:12; Psalm 146:6).

Because of His right of eminent domain, God brought judgment upon Egypt, “that thou may knowest the earth is the Lord’s” (Exodus 9:29).

Deuteronomy 10:14 Behold, to the LORD your God belong heaven and the highest heavens, the earth and all that is in it.”

Eminent domain was the doctrine Ahab and Jezebel used to kill and seize the vineyard of poor, but righteous Naboth (1 Kings. 20).

“It was the theory of Grotius that the power of eminent domain was based on the principle that the state had an original and absolute ownership of the whole property possessed by the individual members of it quoting Seneca to the effect that to kings belongs the control of things, to individuals the ownership of them” (William M. McKinney and Burdett A. Rich, Ruling Case Law, 10 R.C.I., 10).

Because God's man, Elijah confronted the king for seizing the property of Naboth through fraud, he was labeled an enemy of the state by King Ahab. Are you an enemy of the State? Why not?

There is **no** express delegation of eminent domain to the federal government in the Constitution. If the Tenth Amendment to the Constitution means anything, it means that **imminent domain was prohibited to it**. The Constitution at no time uses the word “sovereignty.” In any claims to sovereignty by the State is a presumption of power not granted by the people to Congress.

26.15 Theft by Robbing God

Every crime is an offense against God’s law order, but certain acts are in particular singled out as especially offensive. One of these is the failure to tithe.

Will a man rob God? Yet ye have robbed me. But ye say, Wherein have we robbed thee? In tithes and offerings. Ye are cursed with a curse: for ye have robbed me, even this whole nation. Bring ye all the tithes into the storehouse, that there may be meat in mine house, and prove me now herewith, saith the LORD of hosts, if I will not open you the windows of heaven, and pour you out a blessing, that there shall not be room enough to receive it (Malachi3:8-10).

Review of three laws: (1) the civil/poll tax (Exodus 30:15); (2) the prohibition against mortgaging one's future through continual debt (Deuteronomy 15:1-4); (3) the tithe as required of all men (Leviticus 27: 30-32; I Corinthians 9:12-14; Numbers 18:21-28; Proverbs 3:9-10; 11:24; Matthew 23:23; Hebrews 7:1-8).

In summary, the acquisition of property is foundational to the institution of the family. A man under God will do everything in his power to acquire assets in order to carry out the dominion mandate of Genesis 1:26-28. But, acquiring property and keep property is a Herculean challenge. There are thieves among us. The greatest threat to the family, however, is not the petty thief down the street, but constructive fraud by the government and unscrupulous men who have no commitment to the law of the LORD God. Find a golden goose; then guard the goose.

BY WAY OF APPLICATION, consider how you should apply this commandment in America:

First, get committed to truth. Truth is always the best place to find safety. However, realize that government is not about truth, it is about power. Truth protects the individual man, if he knows it, but the State relies on power to crush the opponents of tyranny. Furthermore, the State relies on presumption and propaganda to fleece the American people. If the American people ever woke up and realized how they have been defrauded by Washington D.C., there would be a revolution.

Second, understand the limited taxing power of the United States under its own constitution. Get familiar with direct and indirect taxes. Congress cannot tax anything it wants. Its powers are limited by law. It is not law that is the problem, it is the ultra vires acts of an overreaching State that produce migraines. You prevail when you demand the government obey its own law and stay within its limited taxing powers. Fraud thrives in the presence of ignorance.

Third, develop a strategy to preserve your earnings. The perceived "income tax" is a scheme to enrich the State and lacks constitution authority. I do not know of a single law that requires the average man to pay an income tax (gains separated from capital), but that does not mean the IRS will not employ every dirty trick in the book to capture 30 percent of your working wages each month. Therefore, you will need a godly and lawful strategy to deal with the government's 900 pound gorilla. The IRS rewards those who cooperate with its taxing scheme, and targets those who slap its hand in the cookie jar. Sometimes, it is better to give them a cookie than risk seizure of your stash of cookies. If you operate within the law, you will have a clear conscience, but that does not mean the gorilla will do the same. So, learn the law, avoid presumption, and develop an honorable strategy to avoid this monster.

27 The Family and Delinquency

Deuteronomy 6:2 that you may fear the LORD your God, you and your son and your son's son, by keeping all his statutes and his commandments, which I command you, all the days of your life, and that your days may be long.

*Deuteronomy 6:24 And the LORD commanded us to do all these statutes, **to fear the LORD our God**, for our good always, that he might preserve us alive, as we are this day.*

Deuteronomy 21:18-21 If a man have a stubborn and rebellious son, which will not obey the voice of his father, or the voice of his mother, and that, when they have chastened him, will not hearken unto them: Then shall his father and his mother lay hold on him, and bring him out unto the elders of his city, and unto the gate of his place; And they shall say unto the elders of his city, This our son is stubborn and rebellious, he will not obey our voice; he is a glutton, and a drunkard. And all the men of his city shall stone him with stones, that he die: so shalt thou put evil away from among you; and all Israel shall hear, and fear.

The family is God's first line of defense to prevent the growth of delinquency in society.



God's law-order was in place that the whole nation might learn to fear God and His punishments. When the family is healthy, the whole nation is safe; when the family is permissive and undisciplined, society is plagued with crime.

When men cease to believe in the wrath of God and discard law and righteousness, moral standards deteriorate and conduct becomes lax and loose. When families develop a distorted view of God as some type of a jolly old fellow who forgives every sin and takes everyone to heaven, judgment becomes meaningless. As people ignore and neglect the LORD God to whom they are responsible and under whose eye they live, discipline and order disappear from all relationships in life. A man who does not live a life of obedience soon ceases to be concerned about the fact that his children do not honor and obey him. The result is that permissiveness replaces discipline and children no longer respect their parents. Quite frequently, children become tyrants . . . and when children become tyrants, parents often fear

their children more than they fear God. The result is a generation of self-indulgent youth on steroids who are a law unto themselves.

*Genesis 20:11 And Abraham said, Because I thought, Surely the **fear** of **God** is not in this place; and they will slay me for my wife's sake.*

At Gerar, Abraham entered into a neighborhood where there was no fear of God, and that paucity of spirit cause Abraham to fear for his life.

The most important value in the OT was the "fear of the Lord" as litanized in the Shema: "That you may fear the LORD your God . . ." "Hear, O Israel, the LORD our God, is one LORD." The most important value in the NT is Christ-esteem, not self-esteem. On the Mount of Transfiguration, the Father commanded, "This is my beloved Son, hear ye Him." (Deuteronomy 6:2, 4; Luke 9:35). Paul said, "for me to live is Christ." He did not say "for me to live is self-actualization." Religion in a godly Hebrew home was Torah in action, not a once-a-week Saturday-Sabbath school lesson at the synagogue. *Thus, the Biblical home is Christ-centered, not child-centered; Bible focused; not amusement focused.*

A man that feared the LORD God earned ultimate trust, and could be counted on to administrate Israel's judicial system fairly. In fact, the "fear of the Lord" was a prerequisite to hold office in the nation (Exodus 18:21).

The first rule in the Israelite home was "honor your father and mother." The success of the whole nation depended on adult children obeying his parents (Exodus 20:12), honoring the aged (Leviticus 19:32), honoring authority (Exodus 22:28).

In God's law-order, there is zero tolerance for rebellion.

God's law-order proceeds upon the fact that children are born sinners.

Psalms 58:3 The wicked are estranged from the womb; they go astray from birth, speaking lies.

Romans 5:12 Therefore, just as sin came into the world through one man, and death through sin, and so death spread to all men because all sinned-

Proverbs 20:9 Who can say, "I have made my heart pure; I am clean from my sin"?

The greatest tragedy that can strike a home is children who do not fear the Lord or their parents. When the LORD God says, "Thou shall not . . ." He is addressing man's sinful nature and his tendency to indulge his evil desires. Children are born sinners and go astray from the womb unless taught and restrained by God-fearing

parents. There is none of this humanistic nonsense that children are born angels or that they are corrupted by their environment.

The rabbis noticed a peculiar deviation in the word "formed" in Genesis 2:7.

Genesis 2:7 And the LORD God formed (rc,yYIw:)(ya-a-sar) man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul.

The Hebrew word "formed" (rc,yYIw:) contains two "yodhs" instead of one. The word is used again in verse eight and verse nineteen without the second *yodh* but in verse eight the word *ya-sar* contains two yods and is pronounced *ya-a-sar*. Why the two letters? The rabbis believed the two *yodhs* indicated a truth that man is born with two proclivities; i.e., a good inclination and a bad inclination. His bad inclination is called a *yet-ser-ra* (bad) and his good inclination is called a *yet-ser-tov* (good). Whether this was the intended purpose of the extra yod may be debated, but the truth is that after the fall, children are born in the image of God with a flawed, sinful nature.

Children are born sinners that need to be redeemed by our Lord Jesus Christ. A child born into this world knows nothing about God and if "left to himself brings shame to his mother" (Proverbs 29:15). The greater spoiler in any family is sin that causes a member of the flock to feed near the Poisonous Tree. Thus, all Biblical parenting is designed to corral sin and to saddle righteousness; to lead a child to Christ that they might fear God and keep his Commandments.

God's law-order does not permit the development of a professional class of juvenile delinquents.

Deuteronomy 5:29 Oh that they had such a mind as this always, to fear me and to keep all my commandments, that it might go well with them and with their descendants forever!

Deuteronomy 21 ~ "And all the men of his city shall stone him with stones, that he die: so shalt thou put evil away from among you."

In God's law-order, there is zero tolerance for rebellion. Just to stay alive in Israel, one had to obey God's law-order. One's life and health depended on it. The incorrigible was tried and then executed. Knowing this weighed heavily on parents. Each father worked diligently to prevent delinquency in the home. A family under God focused on training their children, not tolerating their tantrums; on honoring parents, not honoring children; on imparting life skills, not playing god with their children's souls; on godly discipline not fleshly indulgence. Law, not "magical, touchy-feely" love, ruled the home. Because law defines love, the Biblical home feels the power of real love when all members keep the law. The Christian home is filled

with love and laughter, but it does not tolerate disrespect for parents nor disobedience to fundamental law; that is Biblical parents exercise limited tolerance and maximum enforcement. Permissiveness could get a young man stoned! Permissiveness could get a young man stoned! (Romans 13:8; 1 John 5:2-3; Leviticus 20:2; Numbers 15:36)

The purpose of the law was to eliminate a professional class of delinquents. When law is properly applied, it purges evil from society. Law purges out evil; grace regenerates repentant souls. A proper application of both is necessary for the health of a nation.

Law is a form of warfare. The family as well as civil authority was called to wage war on rebellion. Obey the law of the home or die! Thus, the law protected all that was good and punished that which was bad for society. The war against drugs, sexual promiscuity, abortion, pornography, homosexuality, and adultery are all but lost in this country because humanistic man tolerates lawlessness. Thus, liberal, humanistic man promotes a professional class of delinquents. And, the jural society with all its legal and psychological baggage subsidizes evil by making discipline in the schools and convictions in the courts difficult.

God's law-order did not permit a rebellious son to live.

A rebellious son forfeits his inheritance in the family as well as a place among those of faith. The phrase “a glutton and drunkard” became a proverb for rebellion; that is, this behavior confirmed the character of a rebel. The rebel is not weak in character, but strong in his rebellion and commitment to evil. To renounce the godly order is to renounce life itself and the habitual lawbreaker was excommunicated in the church (Deuteronomy 21:20; 2 Thessalonians 3:6; 1 Corinthians 5:11-13).

No father or mother in Israel would dare say, “Well, blood is thicker than water; so, we’ll stand behind our son no matter what!” A religion that believes family ties are more important than devotion to God is a fruit of the Poisonous Tree. A son that expects his parents to protect him from the law is asking his parents to join the rebellion against God's law-order. Such loyalty is idolatrous--a reversion of God's law order and a perversion of love. It places children above God and delinquency before justice

God's law-order requires all family members to align themselves with the law of God and not the sinful member of the family.

Placing affection for a child above devotion to the LORD God is idolatry. The temptation is for a parent to commit treason to God's law by developing a perverted emotional attachment to a rebellious child. Parents are called first and foremost to surrender themselves to God's law order and then to train their children to do the same. Having an incorrigible family member placed a responsibility on Biblical

parents to operate in justice and file a complaint with the city elders who had the authority to judge and execute professional delinquents.

Deuteronomy 21:20-21 and they shall say to the elders of his city, 'This our son is stubborn and rebellious; he will not obey our voice; he is a glutton and a drunkard.' Then all the men of the city shall stone him to death with stones. So you shall purge the evil from your midst, and all Israel shall hear, and fear.

Knowing that a father had a duty to submit a complaint to civil authorities regarding an incorrigible son or daughter also motivated the Father to marshal all his energies to correct a family member with godly force and appropriate discipline in order to save him from stoning. To not file a complaint with the local officials was to condone the delinquency of the youth and to be complicit with crime.

Intermarriage with pagans (non-Christians) was strictly forbidden (Deuteronomy 7:3).

Child sacrifice to a religious cult or to the State was clearly condemned (Deuteronomy 18:10).

Permitting a daughter to be a temple prostitute or pole dancer to collect a dowry was outlawed (Deuteronomy 23:17).

The father under Torah was expected to exercise TOTAL INTOLERANCE for a fornicating daughter. A health community promotes and honors virginity; a society in decline tolerates "consensual sex." The father under God was to guard and train his daughters to be pure and holy. If a father claimed his engaged daughter was a virgin while in fact she was guilty of fornication, the law required the men of the city to assemble and stone the woman to death at the doorstep of her father's house--a brutal reminder to fathers of their duty to protect and train their daughters to be pure. During periods of law and order a whoring daughter could not remain alive. A daughter who became a prostitute was called "an alien" or "foreigner," meaning she was disinherited and excluded from the commonwealth of the family and nation for that matter--literally. When an entire nation tolerates women to bitch themselves to men, judgment is no longer particular, but national (Deuteronomy 22:20-21; 23:17).

God's law-order instructed parents to discipline their children just to prevent their death.

The Biblical home rewarded responsibility and punished irresponsibility. God's law-order did not permit a professional class of delinquents to set up camp in society. A mishpat family dwelling had no locks on their doors. In fact, they had no solid doors in their houses--only curtains and that for privacy, not security. The security of the home rested on the confidence that every family trained their children to respect the

property of others. God's law-order was pounded into children night and day. Hebrew children wouldn't even think about burglarizing a neighbor's home. It was wrong. It was law. Its violations severe: public trial, shame, restitution, fines, flogging, and even capital punishment for incorrigible youth.

Israel was not immune from robbers and thieves among them. But, a thief working at night could be clubbed with immunity. Protecting one's home was the duty of every man. Thieves by day were identified, tried, and made to pay restitution. Sometimes they were publically flogged (Deuteronomy 22:2-3).

There were no jails in Israel. Such cruelty that dehumanizes a man and steals his freedom was unknown among Israelites. Punishment in Israel was by fines or flogging. Public floggings, however, resulted from judicial action. Flogging was measured and employed to educate the stubborn and recalcitrant. Further, God permitted fathers to use limited and measured corporal punishment³⁷ for their sons' training, but this was accompanied by tender affection and instruction. Beatings, hitting, slapping, and a conk on the head is not Biblical discipline but physical abuse (Exodus 22:2-3; Deuteronomy 25:2; Proverbs 10:13; 13:24; 14:3; 22:15; 23:14; 26:3).

The main way parents developed parent-honoring, God-honoring, neighbor-honoring sons and daughters was by day-to-day instruction, discussion, and family chats. Israel had no amusements (T.V.). Talking was the entertainment.

Deuteronomy 6:7 You shall teach them diligently to your children, and shall talk of them when you sit in your house, and when you walk by the way, and when you lie down, and when you rise.

Deuteronomy 6:20-24 "When your son asks you in time to come, 'What is the meaning of the testimonies and the statutes and the rules that the LORD our God has commanded you?' Then you shall say to your son . . . (history of Israel) . . . he LORD commanded us to do all these statutes, to fear the LORD our God, for our good always, that he might preserve us alive, as we are this day.

Discipline in the home included three types:

Verbal correction and godly instruction formed the lion's share of a child's education (Proverbs 10:17; Proverbs 15:5, 31-32; 17:10).

³⁷ Punishment here is used loosely. Strictly speaking, discipline must be distinguished from punishment. Godly discipline has the motive of instruction; punishment has the idea of payment for a debt owed.

Physical discipline with instruction. Biblical parents are not shouters and yellors. They do not talk their children to death. While good parenting requires coaching, it also calls for crisp discipline; that is, action, not just talking. One rule for the home is "stop talking," and "act;" stop talking and assign a drill (Proverbs 29:15).

Corporal punishment by itself: the lowest form of discipline is "corporal punishment." A measured spanking is used to establish immediate boundaries or to correct rebellion. While used less frequently in a Biblical home, it is an approved and necessary form of education and the prevention of delinquency (Proverbs 10:13; 13:24; 22:15; 23:13),

Strictly speaking, discipline in the home is not the same as civil punishment. Both feel the same, but the motivation is different. Punishment involves some type of suffering with the intent of making a child pay for his bad conduct. Discipline involves some type of suffering for the purpose of preventing a future repetition of the bad behavior. The former is punitive; the latter is corrective; i.e., motivated by love for the future well-being of the child. The theology of discipline in Christian law is always for good and never punitive. If Christ took our punishment on the cross, how much is left for you and me? The answer is "None!" For this reason, Christian parents do not punish their children. But, they do apply the necessary force to correct behavior.

*Hebrews 12:10 For they disciplined us for a short time as it seemed best to them, but he disciplines us **for our good, that we may share his holiness.***

Discipline is not a beating. God forbid a father beat a child. A bonk on the head or a fist in the arm is not Biblical discipline. That is child abuse. Discipline is education through pain. A spanking is a decision made by the family court. Discipline is measured and limited to fit the violation.

Discipline is NOT child abuse. Humanists, by expanding the term "abuse"³⁸ to include "unhappiness" of any kind, makes "child abusers" out of every parent. Even in the best of Christian families, children are often unhappy when they do not get their own way or have to do an unwanted chore. Such a broad definition that includes "everything a parent does" is only useful to the ACLU and those who have

³⁸ The term "child abuse" is not a Biblical term but a concoction of modern psychology. In my research, I discovered "child-abuse" is a "catch all" term that included anything that caused "anxiety" or "depression," or "unequal treatment of siblings," anything that caused "unhappiness," or made children feel "sad." It included "any recent act or failure on the part of a parent," that caused harm. The term was so broad, it gave the courts power to charge even good parents with crimes against their children.

declared war on God's law-order. The use of the term "abuse" is therefore abusive and harmful to good parenting. If the term "abuse" was narrowed to refer to "permanent physical and bodily injury," or "radical trash-talk" that permanently damages the soul, then use of the term might be helpful. But, it is not. The use of the word makes victims out of every responsible parent who must spank their children.

*Measured discipline is part of God's plan for children, but in and of itself cannot change the heart of a child. **Sweet reasonableness must always rule the home.***

Intoxicated with psychology, modern Christian parents have become spiritual masseuses trying to manipulate their child's feelings rather than concentrate on training their child's behavior: yelling is preferred to law-enforcement; shouting to godly discipline; marathon lectures to crisp instruction. Modern parents are more concerned about their child's reaction to discipline than they are about correcting their behavior. God has not called parents to fondle their child's soul; rather, God has called parents to train their child's behavior. A parent may teach their child, train their child, rebuke their child, and spank their child, but they are not permitted to manipulate their child. A child's spirit is the property of God; a child's behavior is the responsibility of parents.

Perfect parenting is no guarantee of producing moral children. The Biblical father does not put pressure on himself to be a perfect dad. He relies heavily on God's grace and God's blessing upon his effort to be a successful parent. From a human perspective, there is there no such thing as a perfect parent. Even the best parents have prodigal sons. God is a perfect parent, and He has lots of prodigal sons. Children go astray, not because their parents are flawed, but because the children themselves are sinners--because they do not accept responsibility for their own attitudes and behavior. Humanists blame parents; Christian law encourages personal responsibility even for bad things that happen in life. The godly dad seeks the excellence of wisdom and grace, not perfection. Perfection is God's job; excellence is man's job.

A word about attitudes: Godly parents seek to instruct children to develop good attitudes, but they discipline bad behavior. Biblical parents are not psychologists or mind readers or propagandists or emotional manipulators. Biblical parents do not emotionally blackmail their children. They do not discipline attitudes because God has not given them punitive jurisdiction over a child's mind. Parents can instruct the mind, but not punish negative thoughts of the mind. The mind is the property of God, not parents. But, parents do have jurisdiction over a child's behavior, and it is behavior that is the target of discipline.

You cannot discipline an attitude!! You can see lip curls, wrinkles, and cheesy smiles, but you can't really see an attitude. God has not called parents to discipline attitudes, only actions. Instead of a command, "Change your attitude or I'll . . . ", it

would be better to say, "Wipe that frown off your face . . ." Parents can train attitudes by wise instruction, but they can't discipline attitudes. They can correct behavior, but how can a parent correct an attitude they can't see? The mind is the property of God and the only way a parent can know how his child thinks is by asking him to express what he is thinking--even then understanding an attitude is dependent on a child's limited vocabulary. Teach attitudes, but train speech and behavior.

God's law-order focused parents on training behavior not pillowing up a child's emotions.

Biblical parents are not on constant call to service the food cravings of children, rather children were on call to service the needs of the family. Good parenting aims at producing service orientated children. Children learned to play by themselves and be happy by themselves. King David, as a young boy, was educated in the fields of Bethlehem shepherding the family flock on many a lonely night. Alone he learned to compose songs, sing, use a sling and a sword. There was no coddling of David; no concern about what working alone might do to his self-image; no cushioning him from the terrors of a lion charge. A teenager, David was expected to endure the cold, brave the night, and risk life and limb to protect the flock against predators. **Modern man would call this child abuse; a family under God calls it man-training.**

The Biblical home was not a kindergarchy but a patriarchy where children honored their parents, not parents their children. The goal of parenting was to prepare children to be adults, not to promote prolonged adolescence.

While feelings were not unimportant, the focus was on godly-behavior--not refereeing spats between siblings doing laps around the kitchen table. The relentless, unhappy pace of American parenting focuses too much on how children feel rather than what their children do.

Proverbs 20:11 Even a child makes himself known by his acts, by whether his conduct is pure and upright.

Proverbs 22:6 Train up a child in the way he should go; even when he is old he will not depart from it.

The word "train" in this passage does not mean "teach." There is a difference between telling a child what is right and training them to do what is right. The Hebrew word is "chanack" and it means "to train" or "to dedicate" for a specific purpose. "The way he should go" (derek) is defined by law; that is, obedience to law is the way a child should go. David prayed, "Lead me (derek) in the path of your commandments" (Psalm 119:35). The word *derek* means "to march" or "to bend" or

"to lead" or "to tread." David asked God to shout the cadence and march him into a life of obedience to His Law-word.

God's law-order did not permit the use of prisons.

There were no prison sentences in God's law-order. The incorrigible could repent, make restitution, accept a public flogging, or be executed. Forgiveness did not include not paying restitution. Jail is not Biblical. Jail is intensely vicious in that it not only steals a man's freedom, but robs him of the dignity of making complete restitution for his crime. Cruel and unusual punishment, jail is a product of the Poisonous Tree. Furthermore, the brutal punishment of solitary confinement is as barbarous and lawless as quartering a man. Fines and death are marshmallows of love compared to the cannon balls of meanness inflicted by solitary confinement seventeen stories below ground.

Since America has more prisons than all the other countries in the world, and since prisons are unbiblical, America is perhaps the captain of nations in rebellion against God's law order. America has more laws than any other nation in the world and has more people in prison than all the nations combined. The goal of a legislative society is to make criminals out of everyone. The U.S. has five percent of the world's population and twenty-five percent of the world's prison population. Over 7.2 million persons were on probation or parole or incarcerated in jail or prison at yearend 2006. "About 3.2% of the U.S. adult population, or 1 in every 31 adults, were incarcerated or on probation or parole at yearend 2006." American prisons and jails held 2,304,115 inmates in 2008. Approximately one in every eighteen men in the United States is behind bars or being monitored. The United States has the highest documented incarceration rate in the world at 738 persons in prison or jail per 100,000 people (as of 2005). The United States has five percent of the world's population and 23.6% of the world's prison population (Probation and Parole in the United States, 2006. By Lauren E. Glaze and Thomas P. Bonczar. U.S. Bureau of Justice Statistics (BJS), U.S. Department of Justice; U.S. Bureau of Justice Statistics; U.S. Department of Justice, Office of Justice Programs, Bureau of Justice Statistics. pp. 13. <http://www.ojp.usdoj.gov/bjs/pub/pdf/p05.pdf>.; Walmsley, Roy (2009). "World Prison Population List. 8th edition" (PDF). International Centre for Prison Studies. School of Law, King's College London.

Thus, the clear purpose of the law was to cleanse society of incorrigible youth by death. Death was preferred to *los tres delinquentes* addicted to drugs or alcohol or prostitution or robbery or violence. But, God did not multiply laws like modern man. God's laws could be summarized under three principles: Be faithful to God, justice and mercy toward man; i.e., don't harm your neighbor or his property. No god ever asked so little of man (See Micah 6:6-8).

Furthermore, swift and crisp discipline is always preferred to being "grounded." No discipline is pleasant. However, the parent who has a "jail" mentality and relies

upon "grounding" creates an environment where frustration and bitterness can grow. The Biblical parent would do well to limit grounding and think of more crisp, creative ways to imprint a lesson on a child's heart.

God's law-order did not permit misplaced pity.

Pity for criminals involving capital crimes is a human weakness, not a strength. Pity should be reserved for victims, not criminals; for the offended, not the offender. Americans misplace pity by failing to make the criminal pay restitution. Further, Americans are cruel and inhumane by supporting lengthy prison sentences and by use of solitary confinement. Torture is forbidden in the Bible, but U.S. officials and Judges apply it every single day turning miscreants into hardened criminals and defeated human beings.

Deuteronomy 7:16 And thou shalt consume all the people which the LORD thy God shall deliver thee; thine eye shall have no pity upon them: neither shalt thou serve their gods; for that will be a snare unto thee. 6 If thy brother, the son of thy mother, or thy son, or thy daughter, or the wife of thy bosom, or thy friend, which is as thine own soul, entice thee secretly, saying, Let us go and serve other gods, which thou hast not known, thou, nor thy fathers;

Deuteronomy 13:7-9 Namely, of the gods of the people which are round about you, nigh unto thee, or far off from thee, from the one end of the earth even unto the other end of the earth; Thou shalt not consent unto him, nor hearken unto him; neither shall thine eye pity him, neither shalt thou spare, neither shalt thou conceal him: But thou shalt surely kill him; thine hand shall be first upon him to put him to death, and afterwards the hand of all the people.

Deuteronomy 19:11-13 But if any man hate his neighbor, and lie in wait for him, and rise up against him, and smite him mortally that he die, and fleeth into one of these cities: Then the elders of his city shall send and fetch him thence, and deliver him into the hand of the avenger of blood, that he may die. Thine eye shall not pity him, but thou shalt put away the guilt of innocent blood from Israel, that it may go well with thee.

Deuteronomy 19:21 And thine eye shall not pity; but life shall go for life, eye for eye, tooth for tooth, hand for hand, foot for foot.

Deuteronomy 25:11-12 When men strive together one with another, and the wife of the one draweth near for to deliver her husband out of the hand of him that smiteth him, and putteth forth her hand, and taketh

him by the secrets: Then thou shalt cut off her hand, thine eye shall not pity her.

Pity for the evil Canaanites was forbidden.

Pity for the subverter of faith was forbidden.

Pity for the murderer (pre-meditated) was forbidden.

Pity for victims of crime is Godly and humane.

In God's civil, criminal sanctions, punishment must fit the crime. Lessening the punishment or increasing its weight was not permitted. Unlike America, wherein public officials grant themselves immunity from prosecution, God's law applied to all men . . . even public officials. Rulers who broke the law were punished (See Leviticus 4:22).

Lawless assistance of a husband in a fight was forbidden. The woman must always operate under God's law. She cannot resort to lawless love as Joab learned in his service to King David. A lawless hand or lawless helpmeet was no help at all (Deuteronomy 25:12).

God's law-order did not permit the use of profanity.

There is no such thing as absolute free speech in God's law order. Cursing God, blasphemy, or using the LORD's name in vain was met with the full force and fury of law. Just to stay alive in Israel, a man has to censor his own speech. The man who spoke blasphemy was stoned. No society can long endure which permits an assault on its gods. Likewise, an interpretation of the First Amendment of the U.S. Constitution, freedom of speech clause, that permits blasphemy and obscenity is completely perverted (Leviticus 24:10-16).

To strike a parent with the hand or fist was a capital crime punishable by death (Exodus 21:15).

A man who rebelled against the command to honor parents and pronounced a verbal curse on them would be wiped off the face of the earth by having his skull crushed and his bones broken (Exodus 21:17; 33:28; Leviticus 19:14).

From a Christian point of view, the increase in swearing and profanity is a sign of cultural degeneration; the use of the G-word, d-word, f-word, and s-word are a sign that society is moving away from a Christian order to the cults of chaos.

When true religion is denied, false religions emerge. Vitality comes from decadent hearts rather than from the recognition of the risen Christ. A righteous society

invokes the name of God to substantiate truth while a profane society invokes the obscene, illicit, and perverted images of primate nakedness.

Ephesians 4:29 Let no corrupt communication proceed out of your mouth, but that which is good to the use of edifying, that it may minister grace unto the hearers.

Ephesians 5:4 Let there be no filthiness nor foolish talk nor crude joking, which are out of place, but instead let there be thanksgiving.

Profanity is a barometer that indicates society is changing its gods; that a revolution is in progress. The first time “damn” was used in a Hollywood movie was “Gone with the Wind” in 1939. Seventy years later a movie without vulgarity is as rare as a virgin in Hollywood. Vulgarity is not slipping into our culture gradually; the dam is broken, and society is a vulgar flood zone. Instead of consulting the creative power of God, modern man explores his own sexual creative powers. Degeneracy abounds: drug use, fornication, prostitution, homosexuality, vulgar rap, abortion, infidelity, and adultery mark our society. As obscenity increased so did the assault on Christian values; that is, obscenity is subversive to Christian values.

God's law-order limited parental authority.

A war on parental authority was akin to a war on God's authority seeing that God established the authority of parents. Parents had a duty to teach their children the law of the LORD God and to discipline stubbornness. But, parental authority had limitations. Parents could not execute their rebellious teenager. In such cases, civil authorities were summoned to deal with incorrigible youth. The city elders became involved with incorrigible youth because a professional class of delinquents threatened the broader civil order. Seeing that obstinacy is akin to blasphemy, both rebellion and profanity received the same punishment.

In the Biblical model, all life in the family is under God. In Roman law, the parent was the source of law and life. Thus, a Roman father could order the abortion of his child. In Torah, the LORD God was the Source of law. God empowered fathers to lead their home, but limited the authority of the Father. He could discipline his sons, but he could not execute an incorrigible son or an immoral daughter. Sons were the property of the father, not the mother. Dad was in charge and in authority, but his authority did not include capital punishment.

Abortion and capital punishments are inseparable. To grant a woman the authority to abort a child *is to endow her with the powers of a god*--to grant her authority over the life of another human being. The modern State has declared war on God's law order and committed idolatry by adopting Roman law which grants an unwed, fornicating, pregnant woman the power to murder her child. Furthermore, the modern State instead of enforcing God's law order by executing justice upon

murderers (abortionists) shields and protects lawbreakers. Thus, the United States has joined the rebellion of Psalm 2 and must be resisted.

Liberals promote abortion and at the same time condemn capital punishment. There is no inconsistency here *as modern man believes in killing the innocent and freeing the guilty* (Rushdoony).

27.1 List of Capital Crimes in Torah

27.1.1 For Sexual Crimes

- Adultery (Leviticus 20:10-12)
- Lying about virginity (Deuteronomy 22:20-21).
- The daughter of a priest practicing prostitution (death by fire) (Leviticus 21:9)
- Rape of a virgin who is engaged. If she is not engaged you only have to offer to marry her and give her father 50 shekels. No mention is made of the girl's opinion, and no punishment is specified for raping a single non-virgin female. (Deuteronomy 22:25) Being the victim of rape, if one is an engaged female virgin and the rape occurs in a city. If it takes place in a field, the victim is spared because nobody would have heard her screams. (Deuteronomy 22:23-27) Presumably, virgins who scream for help inside a city will always be rescued.
- Men practicing bestiality. (Both man and animal die). (Leviticus 20:15)
- Women practicing bestiality (Both woman and animal die). (Leviticus 20:16) [4]
- Having sex with your father's wife, as distinct from "your mother", as it was common practice for men at the time to have several wives. (both die) (Leviticus 20:20)
- Having sex with your daughter-in-law. (Leviticus 20:30)
- Incest (Leviticus 20:17).
- Sodomy (Leviticus 18:22).
- Marrying a woman and her daughter. Being particularly egregious, they are all burnt to death. (Leviticus 20:14).
- Polygamy is not on the list of criminal offences.

27.1.2 For Treason Against God's Law-order

- Worshiping idols (Exodus 22:20; Leviticus 20:1-5; Deuteronomy 17:2-7).

- Blasphemy, cursing, desecration (Leviticus 24:14-16,23).
- Breaking the Sabbath (Exodus 31:14; Numbers 15:32-36).
- Practicing sorcery magic with the intent to control the future (Exodus 22:18).
- Practicing as a medium or spiritualist. (Stoning) (Leviticus 20:27).
- Subversive acts to overthrow God's law-order (death by stoning). Private beliefs were not punished, but subversion was prohibited (Deuteronomy 13:1-11, Deuteronomy 18:20).
- Apostasy - If an entire town converted to a different god, the whole town and their animals was killed. The town was burnt to the ground (Deuteronomy 13:12-15)[5]
- Worship of Molech through human sacrifice (Leviticus 20:2).
- Infringement on tabernacle law a.k.a. trespassing (Numbers 1:51).
- Inciting revolution against God's law-order (Deuteronomy 13:5; Deuteronomy 18:20; Zechariah 13:2-3)

27.1.3 For Violations Against Parents and Family Law

- Striking or slugging your parents (Exodus 21:15).
- Cursing your parents: slander, defamation, aspersion (Exodus 21:17; Leviticus 20:9).
- Practicing stubbornness and rebellion. And being a profligate and a drunkard. (stoning) (Deuteronomy 21:18-21)

27.1.4 For Crimes Against Humanity

- Murder, abortion, homicide. However, if a slave is beaten to death the owner is “punished” — not necessarily killed. If the slave survives the beating then there is no punishment-unless the slave's tooth or eye is damaged (Exodus 21:26-27). This is part of a wide range of slavery laws in the Old and New Testament. (Genesis 9:6; Exodus 21:12; Numbers 35:16-21)
- Kidnapping and Human Trafficking (Exodus 21:16).
- Perjury (in certain cases) (Deuteronomy 19:15-21). Perjury destroyed the integrity of the legal system. Deuteronomy 19:20 explicitly identifies that the purpose: "The rest of the people will hear of this and be afraid, and never again will such an evil thing (malicious and false testimony by one

man against another) be done among you." Presumably all the other death penalties are assumed to be for deterrence as well.

- Contempt of court: rebellion against the verdict of a judge – (or a priest!) (Deuteronomy 17:8-13).
- Criminal Negligence: Not penning up a known dangerous bull, if the bull subsequently kills a man or a woman. Both the animal and the reckless owner of the dangerous bull are to be put to death. (Exodus 21:29)

In conclusion, God's law did not permit the development of a professional class of delinquents in society. It was the duty of parents to extinguish delinquency in the home and to report recalcitrant youth to civil authorities; and if confirmed, it was the duty of society to stone rebels. Likewise, it is the duty of a Christian family to train their children to honor their parents in order to just stay alive. A rebellious child signs his own death warrant, and the permissive parent contributes to his undoing. A criminal society is the product of godless, lawless, permissive families.

28 What If I Can't Have Children?

There is a “peace that passeth all understanding” – Philippians 4:7

THE PAIN OF INFERTILITY



Infertility can be a crushing blow to couples who love each other and want to hear the pitter pat of little feet and laughing of children in the home. In fact, the weight of infertility can be like trying to swim the English Channel with a cannon ball tied to your neck—especially after some preacher gives a

sermon on “Children are a gift from the Lord” or “blessed is the man who hath his quiver full of them” (Psalm 127:3, 6).

Imagine with me for a moment, the intense struggle couples have when the baby factory is closed. Some couples can just look at each other and get pregnant; others, however, after years of “trying” are filled with disappointment. After going to a half-a-dozen specialists, they are diagnosed with “unexplained infertility” and are labeled “reproductively impaired.” Ug! Even the term “reproductively impaired” sounds so sterile and dehumanizing, doesn’t it?

Infertility can attract negative emotions like the frustration common to a red headed Irish woman. Angry at their spouse, themselves, and even God, a Christian can slingshot between nice and naughty.

Infertility can be a bunkmate with guilt. In researching this subject, one of the first sites that came up was a “Women and Men who overcame infertility in the Bible.” Listed were Abraham and Sarah, Isaac and Rebecca, Rachael and Jacob, Manoah and his wife, Hannah and Elkanah, the Shunammite and her husband, and Elizabeth and Zachariah. Articles like this seem to suggest that if you really have faith, God will give you children . . . and anything else you want. And, if you don’t get pregnant, well, you must be some kind of leper in the kingdom of God.

Interestingly, the article didn’t discuss Paul’s thorn in the flesh that God didn’t remove (2 Corinthians 12:7). Nor did the article discuss how God answered Hezekiah’s prayer for a longer life and that during this time Manasseh was born—a son that brought nothing but shame and grief to the nation of Israel (Isaiah 39).

Infertility can wreak havoc with one's relationship with God. If God is sovereign and children are a gift from God, why hasn't he given us children? "All things are possible to him that believeth," so what's wrong with my faith? Question like these can haunt the soul like a monster at scream park.

Infertility can dampen romance. Marshall and Sonja shared how infertility was like throwing a bucket of ice on their love life. After years of "trying" to get pregnant, desperation set in. Tonya would calculate the perfect time to get pregnant according to her cycle, grab her husband, and mechanically conduct insemination sessions when the clock struck twelve. The forced love making made Marshall feel like a machine and not a husband. The marriage had deteriorated into "a petri dish for baby making." Add to this anger, doubt, fear, frustration, and a demanding spirit and you have a witch's brew strong enough to hex even the best Christian marriage.

Infertility can interfere with Christian fellowship. Christian groups are often hostile to childless couples, and have about as much compassion for human defects as Vortigern the Viking Warlord. Imagine what it's like to be in a women's class where you are the only one who doesn't have children. The ladies will sit in circles discussing their nursing tips, menstrual challenges, the funny things their children did that week, and their latest struggle with their hormonal teenage daughter. Being the odd girl out isn't much fun. I know of couples who simply won't attend church on Mother's Day or Father's Day because the preacher is oblivious to the pain of infertile couples. Who can blame them? The isolation caused by the insensitivity of Christians is like Luke Skywalker being aboard Darth Vader's Starfighter.

Then, infertility can be just plain embarrassing. Imagine going to a fertility clinic where you have to dress and undress and where doctors poke, probe, and inspect the most private regions of your pelvic regions. In the information gathering stage, nurses and doctors ask the most sensitive and private questions possible. And, it is even more embarrassing if you are as shy as a schoolgirl. Who has the guts to discuss these kinds of details with a doctor they barely know? You feel emotionally and physically violated-- kind of like you've being raped by a hoard of unshaven, toothless hillbilly quacks.

28.1 Peace with Infertility

Some couples, by the grace of God, overcome infertility through faith and the help of science. Yes, with God all things are possible, and He can make the barren fruitful. By all means pray and exercise faith. He is the God of the impossible.

But, I want to address those couples who are on edge because of childlessness. How can they cope with the stress and frustration of infertility? If I

couldn't have children and I heard "just believe God . . ." or "God is in control," or "you don't have children because you are sinful," I think I'd throw up.

If you are one of eight couples in America that have difficulty getting pregnant, you can obtain God's perfect peace by developing more accurate Biblical thinking. There is truth in Scripture that can bring peace to your soul so you can lead a happy, productive life for His glory. There is a peace that "passeth all understanding." It is from Christ, and not from man (John 14:27; Philippians 4:7).

Consider your infertility is there for the glory God. The reason for human suffering has challenged philosophers from the beginning of time. Buddha made a religion out of it. When the disciples saw the blind man, they asked Jesus, "Who sinned this man or his parents?" In Jewish theology, there were only two reasons for the problem of evil: the sin of the man, or the sin of others. But, Jesus infused hope into history by adding a third explanation for our consideration: "It was not that this man sinned, or his parents, but that the works of God might be displayed in him" (John 9:2-3). Yes, even your infertility provides a chance to glorify God. The affliction forces one to go deeper into Christ to discover the all-sufficient Savior and to find the "peace that passeth all understanding." (Philippians 4:7).

Consider the fact that God created you. You are not a confection of time plus chance. Infertility is not an accident. You are the result of God's creative act wherein all your members were written in his book before the foundation of the world. Even with the problem of infertility, you are an engineering marvel. It is not infertility that mars your character, but "grievous ways" at work in your soul (Psalm 139: 16, 24).

Consider the magnitude of the fall: While you are a product of special creation, you are also fatally impacted by Adam's fall—a spiritual and physical tsunami that engulfed all mankind. We are born with death bonded to our genes. As soon as we see the light of day, we begin to decay. For "in Adam all die" (1 Corinthians 15:22). Like a ticking clock, the body is programmed to stop . . . and some parts wear out before others. Furthermore, everyone is born with something defective: Some people have poor eyesight, hormonal imbalance, cleft lip, and other congenital disorders. Who hasn't wished they had more brain cells and were a little bit smarter, or taller, or faster, or stronger? To use a card-game analogy, everyone has to play with the hand they are dealt. Infertility is just one of thousands human conditions men and women face in this journey called "Life." And, each of us can learn to cope for there is a "peace that passeth all understanding." Christ is greater than our affliction.

Consider working on your marriage relationship: Again, Marshall and Sonja come to the rescue. After years of frustration and forced lovemaking, God showed them that they had to focus on love outside the bedroom; that is, they had to make their marriage a greater priority. God calls the wife to love her husband, and the husband to love his wife (Titus 2: Ephesians 5:24ff). Showing kindness, tenderness,

and compassion is far more important than mechanically trying to manufacture babies.

*“Often, infertility deals a deathblow to a marriage, as a couple deals with years of disappointment and turns against each another. But it doesn’t have to be that way. Through a recognition of God’s sovereignty, an emphasis on prayer and making the marriage—not conception—**the number one priority, infertility can draw a couple closer instead of destroying them.**” (<http://marriagemissions.com/married-without-children/>)*

Consider sins in the heart a greater challenge than infertility. Infertility does not disqualify a person from fellowship or service any more than blindness prevents one from singing in church. But, one’s own bitter reaction to infertility can sever fellowship with God and poison those you love. Infertile couples have their own battle with particular sins: idolatry, doubt, anger, bitterness, etc. It is far more important that couples are at peace with Providence rather than wrestling with a frantic quest for procreation. It is sin that defiles the man (Isaiah 59:2; John 13:8; Matthew 15:18-20).

Consider the particular problem of idolatry. Yes, a focus on baby production can become an idol. Children are important to couples, but they are not all important. Marshall and Sonja explain: “We had to make our marriage a greater priority than our baby, which was easier said than done. In our experience, infertility can easily turn a baby—or even a pregnancy—into a form of idolatry” (Ibid, above). A child-centered home, instead of Christ-centered is its own tragedy. The temptation for infertile couples is to drift away from a walk where “Christ is all in all” to a home where my “baby is my all” is idolatry, plain and simple. If getting pregnant is the ultimate objective of the marital relationship, your ship is way off course.

Consider the importance of being a soul-winning Christian. Rachel cried to Jacob, “Give me children lest I die.” Without a doubt, she was stressed and desperate to be a mother. In her anguish she made impossible demands on her husband, and isolated his affections for her. But, few Christians are as desperate as Rachel to be spiritual parents. How many Christians do you know today that pray, “God give me spiritual children lest I die?”

It is far more crucial to win souls to Christ than to parade children around through the local supermarket. About 8% of couples today are infertile, but according to the church growth institute, about 85% of adult Christians never lead anyone to Christ. Furthermore, according to LifeWay, 61 % of Christians have never shared the faith with another soul. Spiritual infertility is far more of a crisis than barren couples; that is, consider what a great privilege it is to lead someone to the Lord and nurse

them to maturity: “that on the day of our Lord Jesus . . . we will boast of you.” (2 Corinthians 1:14).

Consider the sorrow than many parents are forced to endure. God is sovereign. Yes, he can heal you, but maybe his plan for you does not include babies. Children can bring great joy into a home, but they can also suck all happiness right out the chimney. Many a child has broken their father and mother’s heart. Cain murdered Abel. Canaan shamed his father. Ishmael persecuted Isaac. Esau nursed murder in his heart for Jacob. Reuben committed incest. Simeon and Levi were two hotheads that committed genocide. Jacob’s sons hated Joseph. Samuel’s sons did not share their father’s spiritual ambitions and were not only a grief to him but to the whole nation.

Maybe, in his grace, God is sparing you from this heartache. While children are called a “gift” from God, not having children may be an undetected blessing. The apostle Paul announced celibacy as a gift of God (1 Corinthians 7:7). Childlessness can also be a gift from God. Paul sought the Lord and begged him to heal him of his physical impairment. God answered, “My grace is sufficient for you, for my power is made perfect in weakness.” (2 Corinthians 12:3). Have you considered that God wants to use your infertility and show himself powerful through you? Perhaps, He wants to use you to show others that Christ is greater than your infirmity, and that there are things more important in life than having babies. If you obtain the “peace that passeth understanding,” you will have a ministry that other Christians can’t resist.

Consider medical treatment. Medical science has made leaps and bounds in this field. However, as Marshall and Tonja remind us, science sometimes fails and leaves a couple with “unexplained infertility.” Children are a “gift.” Even science has no remedy for certain infirmities. And, if infertility is a gift, thank God for it.

Consider adoption. Because “God is a Father of the fatherless and Protector of widows,” you should consider adoption. Adoption is a noble ambition and worthy of consideration. You may be God’s gift to some child in need of love. But, adoption has certain disadvantages. The predisposition of orphans has their own barriers to overcome. The costs and commercialization of adoption today is enough to discourage childless couples from seeking this remedy. It is not an easy road. Much prayer is needed.

Finally, reject lies. Daily we are bombarded by propaganda from advertisers and government making promises that aren’t true. Most of the things we think are important today aren’t that important tomorrow. We are a people in love with fiction, and the truth is, that while children add dimension to life, they are not the key to happiness or significance. Reject the lie that God doesn’t love you; or, that you are not as important as couples that have children. Reject the lie that getting pregnant or having babies will make you happy. Happiness is found in communion

with your Creator and being in the middle of His will and nowhere else. Because His truth will set you free there is also a “peace that passeth all understanding” (John 8:32; Philippians 4:7).

If you are a couple that has children, avoid a child-centered home. Be sensitive to childless couples and fellowship with them on things of faith; and, if you are a couple that is experiencing infertility, think more Biblically . . . and “be transformed by the renewing of your mind” in the Word of God.

29 The Family and Its Pets

*Proverbs 12:10 A **righteous** man regardeth the life of his **beast**: but the tender mercies of the wicked are cruel.*



The word "righteous" refers to man under the command of God who has a right relationship to his animals. You can tell if a man is a true Christian by the way he treats God's creatures. A righteous man cares for his pets; unregenerate men neglect animals under their care.

The word "regardeth" (yada) means he knows and understands the needs of animals. He is contrasted with the wicked man who has no empathy.

A righteous man will play with, walk with, and train his dog. A wicked man will pen his dog in the backyard for days on end. Men who chain their dogs to a stake 24/7 need to be taken out and horsewhipped until they feel the pain of their neglected animals.

A righteous man has empathy. He lives outside of himself and can feel the pain in people and in animals. He walks his dog early in the morning and plays with him after work. A wicked man is self-centered and has no feeling for neglected pets. He works, comes home, feeds himself, and sits on the couch watching the tube.

A righteous man will train his children to feel the needs of their family pets. ***Without feeling, children are totally ruined!*** Dogs owned by a righteous man will be walked and trained. Dogs need to be challenged every day. Cats are hunters and love "capture games." Parakeets like challenges and human interaction. Chicken coops need to be cleaned and fresh hay installed. Horses need to be ridden and groomed. All need fresh water, healthy food, challenge, and rest.

A righteous man assigns his children chores to care for the family pets. An unrighteous man lets his children do whatever they want where the healthy care of animals on the family farm are often neglected.

The key is empathy. Feel the needs of your pets. Show compassion. Have pity. Be responsible. Show mercy. A righteous man takes his pets to the vet and gives them the best life he possibly can. And, yes, it will hurt when they die. But, isn't twelve years of joy and happiness worth a few days of pain? And, when they die, he cries. And, then, he goes out and gets another pet to experience another twelve years of joy. And, the righteous man teaches his children to do the same.

30 The Tale of Two Sons

(a.k.a. “The Story of the Prodigal Son” (Luke 15:11-32)



We have here the story of “the Prodigal Son,” but it is really the story of two sons. Charles Dickens called it the greatest short story ever written and modeled his masterpiece, “The Tale of Two Cities” upon this drama. However, the most stunning and attractive figure in the story is not the son, but the father. Why? Because this is a story about the treasury of grace in the heart of a father! It is a love story, not between a man and a woman, but love from a father showered on an unworthy son.

Part I: The Prodigal Son

Background: “Now all the tax collectors and the sinners were coming near Him to listen to Him” (Luke 15:1).

Unlike the rabbis, Jesus mingled with these revenue agents and sinners. Is there anything lower than a tax collector? They are bottom-feeding, scum-sucking criminals acting under of color of law to strip men of their wealth and to deprive them of happiness. His shoulder-to-shoulder interaction with riffraff baffled his adversaries. Yet, our Lord interacted with them and graced them with his sunbeams of truth in order that they might know the Father, repent of their scarlet sins, and have everlasting life.

Three stories are told: the shepherd in search of the lost sheep which is a picture of our Savior, the Lord Jesus Christ (15:1-7); the story of the woman who lost a coin on her headband which is a type of the Holy Spirit searching for lost men and women (15:8-10); and, the story of the Father looking for the return of his wayward son which dips us into the ocean of God’s love for sinners (15:11ff). We will look at the latter.

“A man had two sons” (Luke 15:11)

In the words of Dickens, these were the best of sons, and the worst of sons, in an age of wisdom, in an age of foolishness, in an epoch of belief, in an epoch of incredulity, in a season of light, a season of darkness, in a season of hope, and in a winter of despair. The sons had everything before them, yet had nothing before them. They had the best of fathers, yet they appreciated none of his virtues. They were both going direct to heaven, they were both going to hell. In short, their age was so much

like our present age, that some noisy expositors insist on its being received, for good or for evil, in the superlative degree of comparison only.

We don't know the name of the man or the names of his two sons. It is not the names that are important, but their character. The father is the central figure in the story, not the mother. The modern trend to make the mother the central figure of the home is nothing but a disaster of modern humanism and their rejection of Biblical authority. Scripturally speaking, sons were named after their father because it is fathers that bring sons into the world and have the obligation to care and provide for their children. "Ben-David" meant "son of David." It is the father that has the duty to guide and shape his sons.

The two sons are polar opposites with contrasting sins. There is no blame placed on the father for the twisted waywardness of his sons. The best of fathers have prodigal sons. And, the greatest father of all, our Creator God, is the wisest of all fathers, and He has lots of delinquent children. The fault in Christian homes is usually not in the leadership style of the father, but in the reactions of sin-bent sons lusting after the fruit on the Poisonous Tree. And, this is the case here.

30.1 The Prodigal

Luke 15:12 And the younger of them said to his father, 'Father, give me the share of property that is coming to me.' And he divided his property between them.

There was a day in this home the younger son demanded his inheritance immediately in advance of his father's death. It was an unusual demand by a son. We are not told why. We can only speculate, given human nature, that the boy had wanderlust burning like a blazing fire in the hearth of his heart. No doubt, he's heard stories of caravaneers that boasted of faraway nightclubs, breweries, live music, and dancing girls. Bored with farm life and chores, this sensual, senseless, selfish young man-made plans to visit the world's hotspots and experience the high life.

Amazingly, the father did not equivocate. "He divided his property between them." The father knew the spirit of his age. He understood young men. He knew his son. There was no point in arguing. He did not want a sycophant servant, but the heart of a devoted son. He let him go even though he was headed straight for the Poisonous Tree. Pain is a great instructor, and the father knew his son had to be tutored by the masters of misery.

As to the younger son, call him "stupid or "rebellious" or a "progressive idealist," he was all these and more. Here is a young man that wanted to retire at age twenty and live the "good life." Let's look at **his downward steps** and plunge into poverty and agony.

“He gathered all he had.” He foolishly collected all his resources and dedicated them to his pleasures here and now.

He **“took a journey in a far county”** with no accountability where no one could see what he did.

Instead of working hard and saving his money, he “wasted his substance in reckless living,” unbounded merrymaking, and mischievous deeds. He kicked up his heels, gambled, and no doubt was the “life of the party” at local pubs.

Sensually omnivorous, he **“spent everything”** he had. Can you say, “Nada, nothing, bankrupt?”

For the first time in his life, he experienced necessity: **“. . . a severe famine, and he began to be in need.”** Necessity is a great teacher, but a cruel taskmaster. This boy was hungry and out of money to buy breakfast. As the rose faded, and the thorns of hunger pierced his gut, he became desperate.

He **“went and hired himself out to one of the citizens of that country.”** An alien in a foreign land with tapeworms in his stomach screaming for food, this “Jew boy” contracted his labor to a gentile hog farmer. Oh, the shame of it all!

His job was **“to feed pigs.”** Who can put into words what it would like for a Hebrew raised under rabbinical law to feed swine owned by a gentile? For a Jew to work for a gentile is extremely humiliating, but to tromp through muck and manure to feed swine? What could be worse? To a Jew, a pig is the most disgusting of all animals—the ultimate symbol of loathing.

“And he was longing to be fed with the pods that the pigs ate, and no one gave him anything.” In those days there was no welfare system or safety net. There were no food banks or Salvation Army or Gospel Rescue Missions. Young and an alien in a foreign country, compassion was as rare as gold nuggets on Main Street. There was not a single man among these pagans that cared whether he lived or died. Lower than a snail’s instep, this young man hit bottom with a huge thud. It wasn’t the fall that hurt him, but the sudden stop.

“But when he came to himself . . .” At the bottom, ankle deep in pig manure, and with hunger gnawing away at his core, the young man woke up out of his delusional world. He dreamed of Disneyland and the red-light districts of Paris, but woke up in outskirts of some Damascus slum ghetto. He had embraced fantasy and fiction and lost it all. But, feeling the chilling world of hunger and pain, he came to his senses; that is, he saw the world as it really is—under the curse with death stalking every man.

[Note: keep in mind, this young man was not suffering for the gospel, but because of his rebellion against God as evident by his selfish demand upon his father. Our

Lord Jesus experienced forty days of hunger, and many a Christian minister has born the burden of poverty, but the reason for the suffering is totally different.]

Luke 15:17-19 "But when he came to himself, he said, 'How many of my father's hired servants have more than enough bread, but I perish here with hunger! I will arise and go to my father, and I will say to him, "Father, I have sinned against heaven and before you. I am no longer worthy to be called your son. Treat me as one of your hired servants.'"

When sanity returned to the young man's mind, he thought about someone else besides himself. Instead of thinking about "wine, women, and song," he remembered his father. Sane people think of others; insane people are egocentric and self-centered. Of sound mind, he began to reflect on all the love and provision he had in his father's house. When the lights came on, he began to see his home as normal, but more than normal, an exceptional place to live.

Instead of seeing himself as deprived of "fun" in his father's home, he contemplated how wonderful his father had been to him and how comfortable he had it on the farm. Instead of fertilizing the weeds of ungratefulness in his heart, thankfulness blossomed in his soul. One thing was on his bucket list, get home! He even prepared a speech reflecting on his selfishness, sinfulness, and foolishness. He prepared to beg his father to work as a hired servant. He did not see himself as a victim of his environment, but a sinner fully responsible for his folly. His suffering was not because of low self-esteem, but because he had too much esteem for himself. Esteeming his father, he was in his right mind. Making a decision to get things right with his dad was the first right decision of this man's life. This is health! This is sanity! This is Biblical thinking. Oh, that more sons had such common sense!

Part II: The Gracious Father



As said earlier, the story of the Prodigal Son is more about the love of a father than it is about the straying son. The father is the central figure in the story illustrating to us the love God has for his children. Few young men fully appreciate the great love their Christian father has for them, and even fewer are able to grasp the love of God for sinners.

Luke 15:20 And he arose, and came to his father. But when he was yet a great way off, his father saw him, and had compassion, and ran, and fell on his neck, and kissed him.

Before the son made a decision to leave the pig farm and return home, the father was looking for the son. Every day, two or three times a day, the father would look down the road with the hope that the next person he saw coming toward the

homestead would be the son. Day after day, week after week, month after month, the father peered at the horizon. Watching people come and go, grief and disappointment filled the father's heart. The Sun did not shine. Food tasted like chalk. Weakness caused his legs to feel heavy and his back to bend. Longing for his lost son at the core of his being wearied his soul. Black circles formed under his eyes. Morning, noon, and night the father ate the bread of sorrows. Had he lost his son forever?

One can only guess what the lad's return journey was like. Traveling slowly, with head hanging down, the son ambled toward his former home with shame and fear filling his heart. Before the son saw his father, the father saw his son shuttling home. He knew his frame and recognized his gate. Seeing his disheveled boy, compassion filled his heart. The word "compassion" literally means "to suffer together." Willing to absorb his son's pain and to relieve his stress, the father sprinted toward the young man. Arriving in his presence huffing and puffing, with joy in his heart and tears in his eyes, he embraced his son with the strength of ten. Smiling from ear to ear, he affectionately kissed him . . . again . . . and again. The son, however, was unable at the moment to share his father's bursting joy.

Thus, we have a little glimpse into the heart of God and the galaxies of love He has for wandering sinners who repent of their sins and journey back to Him. Who can fully grasp the condescending nature of God's love toward Adam's race?

*The love of God is greater far
Than tongue or pen can ever tell;
It goes beyond the highest star,
And reaches to the lowest hell;
The guilty pair, bowed down with care,
God gave His Son to win;
His erring child He reconciled,
And pardoned from his sin.*

*Oh, love of God, how rich and pure!
How measureless and strong!
It shall forevermore endure—
The saints' and angels' song.*

21 And the son said unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and in thy sight, and am no more worthy to be called thy son.

Though the object of his father's longing, the son hadn't a clue regarding the depth of his father's grace. Most sons do not. He blurted out part of his confession—a confession he had rehearsed all the way home. It was a model confession and as true as true can be. This was no shallow repentance mouthing, "I am sorry," but true repentance, "I have sinned against heaven, and in thy sight." The son knew he

was clearly in the wrong and had played the fool. There was no blame for the father and none of this nonsense that he was a victim of his environment. Though he was unworthy to be called a son . . . he was unable to finish his full speech. The silence of the father and the sparkle in his eye conveyed acceptance. Nothing more needed to be said. Unlike the son, the father had prepared no lecture or word of correction. No discipline, no punishment, just amazing love! Though unable to assimilate it immediately, the son was the beneficiary of his father's greatest asset, pure grace and full forgiveness.

*Amazing grace! How sweet the sound
That saved a wretch like me!
I once was lost, but now am found;
Was blind, but now I see.*

22-24 But the father said to his servants, Bring forth the best robe, and put it on him; and put a ring on his hand, and shoes on his feet: And bring hither the fatted calf, and kill it; and let us eat, and be merry: For this my son was dead, and is alive again; he was lost, and is found. And they began to be merry.

From rags to riches, the father ordered his servants to cloth the repentant son with “the best robe,” a “ring on his hand,” and new pair of sandals. The son was prepared to beg to be treated like a hired servant, but the Father restored all of his privileges and treated him as a prince. Isn't this what God does for penitents? He takes the vilest sinner, justifies him, and clothes him in a robe of righteousness—a robe that covers all his transgressions. Further, He puts a ring on his finger to daily remind him of the Father's love; and, equips him to “walk in truth” (3 John 1:4). Further, the father would not have the son shamed among the Jews (the kezasah). The ring and the robe would convey to others his father's acceptance.

The order for the day was to kill the fatted calf, to eat, and be merry--for a lost son had been found. No longer in dreamland chasing fantasies and fictions, the son was home—united with his father—forgiven, whole, sound, reasonable, and in his right mind. What a triumph!

All of this celebration must have stunned the son. He was ready to grovel in the dust and beg for a job from his father, and what he received was a celebration he could scarcely comprehend.

I am convinced that one of our greatest difficulties as Christians is our inability to take sufficient comfort from the cross and the love of God during our down times in life. It is easy to clutch legalism, but how difficult it is to embrace God's grace. While we feel more like beating ourselves with whips and chains, the command of the hour is “to be merry” (a fatted calf), to accept His love, to rejoice in his forgiveness (a ring), and to claim our righteous standing in His sight (a robe).

Part III: The Proud Son



The story we call “The Prodigal Son” begins with, “A man had two sons.” Both were sinners; both were out of sync with their father; and, both had their own issues to deal with. The younger son was a selfish, sensual rebel; the older son was a selfish, self-righteous, proud mutineer. Of the two, the elder brother was seriously more defective. At least the younger brother could say, “I have sinned.” The older brother did not only not recognize his sin, He found fault with his father saying, “thou never gavest me a kid (fatted calf);” that is, he saw himself as the only righteous man in the family, and a hard one to live with at that. Who can live with a “perfect” person?

30.2 Characteristic of the elder son:

Luke 15:25-27 Now his elder son was in the field: and as he came and drew nigh to the house, he heard musick and dancing. And he called one of the servants, and asked what these things meant. And he said unto him, Thy brother is come; and thy father hath killed the fatted calf, because he hath received him safe and sound.

First, notice that he was dutiful working in the field. Like most “first born,” he carried responsibility well and did what was expected of him.

15:28 And he was angry, and would not go in: therefore came his father out, and intreated him.

Second, when he heard that his younger brother was home and that his father was rejoicing in his safe return, he became angry. He would not participate in the celebration. Here is a man that had no appreciation for grace. He was not glad to see his brother. He was not relieved that his brother was safe. He had no capacity to enter into his father’s joy. Furthermore, he did not understand his father’s grief and sorrow following his brother’s departure. Like the Pharisees, the elder brother despised grace, and would not join the celebration. Do you know people like this?

Furthermore, notice again the goodness of the Father. He saw his eldest son moping in the distance, and went out to encourage him to join the celebration of the homecoming of his younger brother—a lesson on God reaching out to man. That man seeks God is kind of like the quip regarding the mouse hunting for the cat.

15:29-30 And he answering said to *his* father, Lo, these many years do I serve thee, neither transgressed I at any time thy commandment: and yet thou never gavest me a kid, that I might make merry with my friends: But as soon as this thy son was come, which hath devoured thy living with harlots, thou hast killed for him the fatted calf.

Third, notice the narrow, self-centered, self-righteous perspective of the elder son. He uses the pronouns, “I” “me” and “my” five times. Unlike his brother who confessed, “I have sinned,” the elder brother asserted “many years do I serve thee,” and “neither transgressed I at any time thy “commandment.” Here is the “perfect” man who sees himself as the obedient son. At no time, did he confess being out of accord with his father’s purposes. The subject of his sentences is “I.” He seems blind to the goodness, grace, or righteousness of Father. Like the Pharisees, he was hard of heart and out of fellowship with his father. Outwardly, he was respectful and compliant with his father’s wishes; but, inwardly, spiritually, there was foaming rebellion against grace. As the old adage goes, “He was sitting down on the outside, but standing up on the inside.”

Fourth, notice the elder son was full of accusations against his father, “You never slew a fatted calf for me or sponsored a party in my honor.” Unthankful for what the father had given him (the whole farm), all he could see was what the father did not do for him. With no grace operating in his own spirit, and holding his father to idealistic standards, he bitterly accuses his father of not loving him more. To the proud and arrogant, there is no end to the list of what a man has not done. What father can stand before an accuser-son with a catalog of “you have nots?”

Some sons are like this, full of “you did nots,” and “you have nots.” You have not taken me to Paris; you did not give me a red sports car in my senior year of high school like the parents of Sir Gregory the III; you did not take me to Disneyland; you did not cancel your business trip to attend my 8th birthday party; you did not help me with calculus; you did not buy me “Reebok” running shoes; you did not take me on an Alaskan cruise. Graceless sons hold mothers and fathers to impossible standards and then arrogantly accuse them of being horrible parents.

Fifth, notice he was not finished with his accusations. He accurately defined his younger brother’s sins, “thy son . . . devoured thy living with harlots,” and he did. Notice he did not say, “My brother,” but “thy son.” He refused to acknowledge a relationship with his brother and accepted no responsibility for his sibling. Subtly, he blames the father for his younger brother’s promiscuity.

Thus, we have here a son who is out “of sync” (out of fellowship) with his father’s values, his father’s pain, and his father’s joy. He is representative of Pharisees and legalists—as smooth as butter on the outside, but hard as a rock on the inside.

15:31-32 And he said unto him, Son, thou art ever with me, and all that I have is thine. It was meet that we should make merry, and be glad: for this thy brother was dead, and is alive again; and was lost, and is found.

Notice the father’s tender, gracious answer: “Son, thou art with me, and all I have is thine.” The father called him “Son.” He let this son know that he rejoiced every day because of his presence on the farm. Further, the father had given him everything

he had. What else could he do? He did not have much, but everything he had was dedicated to the welfare of his firstborn. Likewise, in sending Jesus to earth to save sinners, God gave everything he had for you and me.

Finally, he let the elder son know the principle upon which he was acting, and that rejoicing in the repentance and return of “thy brother” was the right thing to do. But, the elder son had no appreciation for grace. He was a thankless man seeing only his own righteousness while holding his father to unreasonable standards.

There is a lesson on grace for us. Let us learn to rejoice in grace, the return of repentant sinners, and the dispensing of forgiveness. Let us avoid the proud, self-righteous, accusative spirit of the elder brother . . . and, there is one like him in almost every family. Sometimes marriages are made up of thoughtless, rebel husbands and self-righteous wives.

Further, let us remember that grace is the key to a healthy family. Grace can undo the damage that sin causes. When there is grace to admit wrong, and grace to forgive, reconciliation is always possible. Where there is friction among family members, there is also a lack of grace: a lack of grace to confess sin, or a spirit of pride and self-righteousness not unlike the condition of the elder brother.

Finally, we have a lesson on the gospel. Sin affects men different ways. Some are rebellious sinners, some are self-righteous sinners separated from God. But, there is a Shepherd Who searches for lost sheep (15:1-7); the Holy Spirit Who searches for the lost men (15:8-10); and a Father Who looks and waits for the wayward sons to return—a Father who entreats the self-righteous to enter into His love. The Father has given His precious all for Christians because He sent his Son to die on the cross and shed His precious blood to pay the price of redemption at Calvary. There is grace and forgiveness for those who admit they are lost, repent, and come to the cross to be cleansed of their sins.

Luke 15:7 I say unto you, that likewise joy shall be in heaven over one sinner that repenteth, more than over ninety and nine just persons, which need no repentance.

31 Exploring the Ocean of God's Love



The family under God should be a voyage exploring the ocean of God's love. If the family is in rough waters, navigate on these seas and let heavenly melodies fill the sails.

A friend expressed his aggravation about a series of sermons in his church. So, I asked him why he was so upset with the messages. He said, "I am tired of being chewed out every Sunday."

Immediately, I knew exactly what he meant. In an effort to make a church better, preachers will tell congregations how bad they are and what they need to start doing to be better. Some feel that if they beat the sheep hard enough, they will improve. The more they yell, the better the congregation will be. In my friend's case, he felt beat up and unloved. No man can live without love. We can survive without nice houses and fancy cars, but we cannot be happy without love.

Karl Barth was at Rockefeller Chapel (really a Gothic cathedral!) on the campus of the University of Chicago during his lecture tour of the U.S. in 1962. After his lecture, during the Q & A time, a student asked Barth if he could summarize his whole life's work in theology in a sentence. Barth said something like "Yes, I can. In the words of a song I learned at my mother's knee: 'Jesus loves me, this I know, for the Bible tells me so'" (Patheos.com).

Next to holiness, love is the most beautiful flower in the Creator's garden of virtues. Let us consider God's love and how much He loves us from 1 Corinthians 13.

You can glorify God in your family life by enjoying God's love during your pilgrimage on earth.

31.1 Love is Patient

Have you ever considered how patient God is with you? The word "patient" is a translation of the Greek word "macrothumia." It means "long suffering." It is the ability to count down before blasting off.

Because we are impatient with others, we believe God is impatient with us. We see ourselves as not doing enough. We believe God is not happy with us. We honk the horn in traffic, speed down the highway, rush from store to store, anxiously watch

the clock, and blow our cool when meetings are not on time. But, God is not like this. He is not in a rush. He is not in a hurry. He does not blow his stack when we fail. He is loooooong suffering toward us.

Patience is different than mercy in that the latter shows goodness to the weak. But patience shows mercy toward the transgressor; that is, God is not only patient with us when we are weak, but when we are wrong. Peter tells us that God “waited” in the days of Noah. One hundred and twenty years God endured men that either ignored Him or taunted Him (2 Peter 3). Paul tells us He endured with much patience the vessels of wrath (Romans 9:22).

Think for a moment how patient God is with you. Have you ever watched a little girl thread a needle? As she misses the eye of the needle, aren’t you tempted to take that needle and thread it yourself? But, God is not impatient with you. He waits for you to seek Him; He waits for you to grow in your knowledge of Him; and, He waits for you to obey Him. He knows there is value in struggling and that struggling out of a cocoon of difficulty can produce a beautiful butterfly in spirit. In all your adversities, God is longsuffering toward you.

31.2 Love is Kind

Some people are mean-spirited. I know of a collegiate wrestler who carried a box of nails in his front seat. When an oncoming car did not dim its lights, he would grab a handful of nails and throw them out the window. God is not like this. Though it is His duty is to judge evil, judgment is called his “strange work” (Isaiah 28:1).

One time when General Robert E. Lee was fleeing from advancing Yankee troops, he dismounted his horse and calmly walked over to a nearby tree, picked up a baby bird, placed it gently back in its nest. He walked back to his horse, mounted it, and fled like lightening to avoid being hit by thundering musket fire. In his kindness, Lee was so much like the Savior.

Dr. Hunter McGuire, Stonewall Jackson’s personal physician during the Civil War, noted about Jackson, “As I look back on the two years that I was daily, indeed hourly, with him, his gentleness as a man, his great kindness, his tenderness to those in trouble and affliction . . . impressed me more than his wonderful prowess as a great warrior.” Can’t you say the same about Christ in His dealing with you?

At a wedding the Lord Jesus used his power to provide the finest of wine (a luxury) to a poor bride and groom when only days before He would not use His power in the wilderness to provide necessities of life (bread) for Himself. Christ is good, the greatest good, and the standard of good. He is kind to all His creatures, great and small, rich and poor (Psalm 119:68). He causes the rain to fall on the just and the unjust. He gives us all good things to enjoy. Surely, if He withholds something from us, it must be for a greater good.

31.3 Love Does not Envy

Envy is like an ulcer caused by the inflammation of the wish bone. Love looks through a telescope; envy looks through a microscope.

Though we live so much better than the Savior, our Lord has no envy of us. We have huge homes. But, Jesus said, “The foxes have holes and the birds of the air have nest, but the Son of man has no place to lay his head.” We have closets full of clothes, but Jesus only had one garment. We have comfortable, padded shoes, but Jesus walked thousands of miles in a pair of sandals. Every day, we drive around in nice comfortable cars, but Jesus rode a donkey, and that only once. Jesus’ diet was limited to wheat and barley and a small variety of cuisines common to the Mediterranean. But, we enjoy European delights, French Au Gratin delicacies, spicy Mexican food, Chinese Baijiu and Gobi Manchurian chicken dishes, Texas size BBQ steaks, and the American Hamburger. He had no opiate in His death, yet very few of us will die without morphine. Not only does He not envy us for our luxuries, but it is also He Who provides these things for us to enjoy.

31.4 Love is not Proud

The word “vaunt” means “to boast.” The success of boasters not only goes to their head, but also to their mouth.

Jesus, however, is not a boaster. Though He was God and had much to boast about, He was the humblest of men. He was God on earth, yet only a handful of people knew about His birth. He was a member of a royal family, yet he was raised in the hillbilly country of northern Israel. He was a king, but He was known as a carpenter’s son. He owned the cattle on a thousand hills, yet owned only one robe. He was God Almighty, the Son of God, but was railed as a “Samaritan.” He commanded angels, yet forbid any of them from rescuing Him from cruel cross of Roman humiliation.

If God loved Jacob who was called a worm (Isaiah 41:14), surely he loves you. Do you feel as insignificant as a maggot? God loves small creatures like you and is not ashamed to be your God.

31.5 Love Does not Behave Improperly

Americans have notorious poor table manners. We are an embarrassment to the British and considered unsophisticated by the Chinese. We slurp our soup, chomp our cookies, spill our salt, and belch over a good meal. And while all this slurping, chomping, spilling, and belching can be seen as quaintly humorous, we are no longer living in little wooden shacks in the Ozarks where we prop up our feet on the table and scoot aside to make room for our nineteen cats, dogs, and pet pigs.

It was said of Stonewall Jackson,

“Jackson’s personal character was absolutely without blemish. His habits were the manliest that a Puritan could wish, his honor clean, and his courage superlative; while as a gentleman in expression and action, he had no superior” (Stonewall Jackson’s Book of Maxims, p. 94).

General Lee had one rule at Washington College: *“Every student must learn to be a gentleman.”* (The Maxims of Robert E. Lee, p. 50). Being a gentleman to Lee was never more tested than when the strong have power over the weak, magistrate over the citizen, employer over the employed, the educated over the unlettered, the experienced over the naïve, and the clever over the silly—the forbearing and inoffensive use of power and authority reveals the gentleman in pure light (p. xxi).

The word “proper” means suitable to a purpose. Propriety stays within a purpose. This is another way to say that our Lord is a perfect gentleman in His dealings with us. He has absolute power over you and me, yet He is not harsh or course with us. He is not tyrannical over the powerless, nor is He crude and rude around the socially inept. He does not misuse His power or position. As Lord, he behaves like a king. As a Savior, He is always good and heroic. As our Head, He is always stately. He never raises His voice when a quiet word will do. In all His dealings with us, He is always the Royal Gentleman.

31.6 Love Seeketh Not Her Own

Perhaps you have heard of the man who did not like to read books because reading took his mind off himself. A man who is all wrapped in himself is always overdressed.

When on earth, Jesus served humanity. When He spoke, it was to encourage others. When He was quiet, it was for the benefit of people. The Scripture tells us that, *“He daily loads us with benefits.”* His miracles were performed for the good of men, but not once did He perform a miracle to meet His own need. There was no water, or food, or comfort on the cross, yet He went there for you and me. Even today, Jesus seeks your best, your edification, and your success. Yes now, *“all things are working together for good to those who love God and are called by His purpose”* (Romans 8:28). This is not to say everything that happens to us is good. But in evil times, He is at work bringing good out of evil.

31.7 Love is not Easily Provoked

The word “easy” is not in the text. Love is just not provoked, period. We are easily offended and agitated because we are not perfected in love. Our family members immediately know when we are upset. They are familiar with our tirades when we are miffed. Our frowns and flared nostrils reveal our imperfections.

Are you familiar with the word, “knucklehead?” It refers to a youth who does such stupid things that his parents knock him on the skull to get his attention when he misbehaves. When our sins come before God, he doesn’t get emotional. He doesn’t knock us in the side of the head to get our attention or because He is angry with us. Further, He does not call us “knuckleheads,” but “beloved children.” Though He may discipline us for our good, He does not tie us to the masthead and whip us with a cat of nine tails.

We are easily provoked because we have high expectation of people. It was said of General Lee that He did not expect men to be better than they are, because he understood original sin. He did not expect perfection from his men (though he did expect obedience and excellence). He did not lose heart when the odds appeared to be against Him, because He trusted in providence to make things right because the Word of God taught Him to hope—and no Christian should be bereft of hope (The Maxims of Robert E. Lee, p. xix).

31.8 Love Thinketh no Evil

The word “thinketh” (logizomai) means “to account.” It is a business term that refers to record keeping. Too many of us are in the business of keeping lists of wrongs suffered. We can remember in great detail every offense against us. When our mate offends us, they are likely not only to hear about the recent incident, but be handed a laundry list of how they have injured us over the years.

Not only do we keep lists of wrongs, but we also withdraw love when we are hurt. When wronged, our well of love runs dry. Not so with Christ. When hurt by our sin, His galvanized love took Him to the cross to pay off our debt to the Father.

Because we keep records of wrong, some of us see God as a Sin Accountant. “Ah ha, you did it again!” We see Him as the Great Record Keeper in the Sky making lists of sins, which He intends to punish at the right time. But, our God does not keep records. He does not make lists. He does not keep score. In fact, the Scripture tells us, “He does not remember our sins and iniquities” (Hebrews 10:17). God is not the Great Record Keeper, but the Great Record Forgetter.

31.9 Love does not Rejoice in Wrongdoing, but Rejoices in the Truth.

We love bad news! The media has learned that bad news sells more newspapers than good news. In the dark side of the street, thugs are entertained by violence and lawlessness.

Because some members of our race are like modern terrorists that delight in cutting off the heads of Americans, we may think God derives some sadistic pleasure from our pain. Not only does God not take pleasure in our suffering, but He does also not rejoice in the judgment of the wicked. Have you ever noticed how many movies are about sweet revenge where the bad guy gets what he deserves, or where a mafia

figure gets gunned down, or a violent mate dies from his own weapon? Revenge is sweet, but the Lord is not willing that any should perish (2 Peter 2:9). While His holiness demands justice, His love and grace aches to be expressed in kindness—even to His enemies.

The human eye is the most sensitive part of the human body. Even a hair in the eye can inflict excruciating pain. The Scripture tells us that He who touches you touches the apple of His eye (Zechariah 2:8). Even the hairs of your head are numbered. Though we are often confused by His silence, He takes no pleasure in our aches and pains.

God loves truth and hates deceit. We love playing tricks on one another. We are a people in love with fictions. The bank robber who has mastered deceit and escapes with tons of cash intrigues us. God, on the other hand, is not a trickster. He does not play holy pranks on people. He does not turn people into toads. He loves truth because He knows that lies ruin people. He is totally redemptive in His purposes, and He plans nothing but good for us.

31.10 Love Bears all Things,

The word "bear" means "to deck" or "to thatch" or "to cover." God's love hides us in the cleft of the rock, covers us with blood, and hides our sins and nakedness. In fact, the English word "bless" means "blood covered." The Scripture says that he remembers our sins no more, which is to say that our sins are buried in the depth of sea. God has no drones flying overhead searching out our deepest secrets. Love covers. Love puts a lid on things. Love thatches our roof, so we are protected.

31.11 Love Believes all Things,

You know that you are to believe in God, but do you know that God believes in you? As a father, I would go to every game or choir performance where my children were involved. I was one of those maniac dads in the stands yelling and screaming and pulling for my children. Do you think God is any different? He wants us to flourish. He wants our marriages to be successful. He wants us to be triumphant parents. He wants us to do well in school. He is the great Cheerleader in Heaven wanting the very best for us.

He is called "the God of Jacob" (Psalm 20:1). Why Jacob? Why—because God helped him when all others used him. God made him rich when his enemies tried to impoverish him. God delivered him when others tried to trap him. In his death, the man nobody loved received more respect and more honor than other man in the Bible (See Genesis 50). The "God of Jacob" is an aphorism for grace and goodness. If you are discouraged, let your faith tap into this truth: "This I know, that God is for me" (Psalm 56:9).

31.12 Love Hopes all Things.

Hope is a virtue that swings into action when all visible signs of success have vanished. Hope is the ability to see light in the dark. It is the little bird that chirps in our hearts at night. God is the Great Hoper. Hope, not hurts, must shape the future. Even when we show no signs of cooperation with His plan, God hopes. He hopes we will succeed; that we will obey; that we will do what is right. God simply loves us and can do nothing else. He loves not because of who we are or what we do, but because of Who He is, a God of love. He is a God who never stops seeking us. God is good and never changes his attitude nor forsakes us whatever difficulties settle upon us (Hebrews 13:5).

Before Abraham left Mesopotamia or obeyed his voice or had a child, the Great Hoper said, "I will bless you ... and in you all the families of the earth will be blessed" (Genesis 12:2-3). He changed his name from Abram, "exalted father," to Abraham, "father of a multitude." Before Abraham had one son. God infused hope into his soul.

Saint Paul's understanding is clear: "Hope does not disappoint us, because God's love has been poured into our hearts through the Holy Spirit that has been given to us" (Romans 5:5). Far from being a simple wish for the future with no guarantee that it will occur, the Christian hope is the Presence of Divine love. The Holy Spirit is the current of life that carries us to the ocean of His love so we can enjoy fellowship with Him.

31.13 Love Endures all Things

Some of us need enduring. We are hard to live with. Many of us are cranky and crotchety. Getting close to us is like trying to hug a porcupine. We give up on people because they are not easy to love. Even though we are as rough as sandpaper and as course as carpenter's file, God does not give up on us. Nothing can separate us from His affection declared the Apostle (Romans 8: 30ff). He endures our sins, our weaknesses, our failures, our temper tantrums, our skepticism, our unbelief, our fits of sensuality, our arrogance, and our stupidity. His perfect love endures all our human imperfections. He is the Father of prodigal sons waiting for them to come home.

31.14 Love Never Fails

Despite what we think this statement means, the truth is that love does fail! Many a son has rejected the unfailing love a father or mother. Many a darling has walked away from true love. Having done their best they could to win a heart, many a beau has been rejected. Our prisons are full of people who did not respond to love.

When the text says that love never fails, it is not talking about results, but the source and supply. Because God's reservoir of agape love springs from the artesian well of eternal grace, God's love does not run dry. His love does not have a shut off

valve. It does not stumble. It does not stagger. It can be severed. His love is exhaustless and unending. The Father is totally committed to love us when we are good and when we are bad; that is, in dealing with us, God does not fail by choosing to love us. In taking the path of love in shepherding us, God does not fail. We may quit on God, but God will not give up on us. He will love us to the very end (John 13:1).

In conclusion, John Piper reminded us that ***God is never more glorified than when we delight in Him.*** I am not here to tell us to be better and to do more, but to somehow with the eyes of faith to grasp the unfailing love of God for us. God is not a groupie. He loves us individually, warts and all. We will indeed be better and do more, but not until we understand how much we are loved and accepted by Him.

Let us not forget that man can give without loving, but God did not love without giving. If you are tempted to doubt God's love in the midst of your trials, remember that God so loved you so much that He gave His only begotten Son for you. When you trust Him, you can enjoy that love. Take your family and sail on the ocean of God's love. When you hoist your sails and take a voyage on the ocean of God's love, noble themes fill the sails and tune earthly hearts to hum heaven's melodies.



32 The Power of a Dad's Blessing



God bless you! And, may you be a blessing.

Do you feel the power in these words?

“Do you have only one blessing, my father? Bless me too, my father!” Then Isaac wept aloud” (Genesis 27:38). Do you hear the pain of this unblest son?

There should be no unblest child in a Christian home. To be blest and to be a blessing is the crown jewel for a child of God.

Our lesson comes from a day in the life of Isaac—a day with many twists and turns—a bazaar story that grabs our attention. The word “bless” or “blessing” (*k.r,b, barak*) is used fourteen times in this story (Genesis 27). It is a Biblical word meaning “all that is good.”

Isaac thought the day of his death was drawing near, so he decided to perform his patriarchal duty and bestow “the Blessing” on his son Esau. Since Isaac was forty years old when he married Rebecca (Genesis 25:20), and about sixty years old when Esau and Jacob were born, and Esau was forty years old when he married his two Hittite brides (26:34), he would be over one hundred years old when the events in Genesis 27 happened. Since Joseph was thirty-nine when Jacob was one hundred and thirty (47:9; 41:46, 53; 45:11), Isaac could have been much older—let’s say, a hundred and thirty-five years of age. And since he lived to be 180 years old (35:28), he wasn’t as near death as he thought he was.

Regardless of his age, he planned to pass the patriarchal blessing on to his oldest son against the will of God (25:23). God revealed that the older (Esau) would serve the younger (Jacob). Rebecca overheard the plan, panicked, and plotted to set things straight by inducing Jacob to pantomime Esau so he would receive the blessing in his stead. It worked. But, the fiasco injured everyone, and the family was irreparably divided. Force to leave his mother and father, Jacob sought his fate and fortune in Haran far north of Canaan.

32.1 The Blessing

“The Blessing” was a powerful patriarchal benefit passed on to the family heir. It included not only “the family farm” but the spiritual blessing--the right to become the messianic progenitor. Though the characters in this drama are flawed, we can

learn something from the good and bad in this story about being a blessing to our children.

If you want to be a blessing and bestow a blessing to your children, then learn well the path to blessing.

32.2 Be a Seeker

God revealed his plan for their lives to Rebecca before the boys were born. It was set in concrete: “the older will serve the younger,” i.e. Jacob was to receive the birthright and the patriarchal blessing. And, rightly so! As the boys grew, Esau turned into a worldly, profane fornicator with no heart for the things of God. Jacob, on the other hand, was a responsible, hard-working man with a passion for God’s blessings. Why would a priestly father want to pass on spiritual blessings and responsibilities to an irresponsible son? Somehow, Isaac appeared callous to God’s plan for the two boys. Had he forgotten God’s decree (25:23) or did he intend to supplant the will of God because Esau was his favorite Son? Whatever the reason, Isaac seemed out of touch and about to make a horrible mistake. Isaac’s physical blindness is almost symbolic of his spiritual state—*“not realizing that you are wretched, pitiable, poor, blind, and naked”* (Revelation 3:17)

More problems are caused in families because of a dad’s spiritual weaknesses than for any other reason. When a man is, not in the Word, not in prayer, not in the Spirit, not at home, and not full of faith and hope, he develops spiritual cataracts. He is unable to see the important things in life. When a man is insensitive to God like Isaac, he creates problems in the home. Mom gets frustrated. Kids are neglected. Battles rage. If you want to be a blessing to your family, be a seeker of God.

32.3 Be a Lover

I don’t know what happened to Isaac and Rebecca. It appears from this chapter that the sweet fragrance of unity had long departed from this relationship. Their hearts were separated long before their house was divided.

I believe one of the greatest gifts a man can give to his children is to love their mother. To neglect your marriage is to neglect your children. When carnality replaces spirituality, criticisms replace complements, and wounds replace forgiveness, the whole family is in trouble. Men do not marry witches, but they can certainly turn a woman into one. If you want to be a blessing to your family, love the mother of your children.

32.4 Be a Hugger

Notice that Isaac asked for a kiss from his son—a virtuous eastern custom of which fathers in the west are not always comfortable. Jacob was at least forty years old when he kissed his aged father (27:26).

Touch is a means of showing affection. It seems strange that preachers need to exhort fathers to hug their kids. Somehow, it has been communicated to American males that real men don't eat quiche or hug their kids. Something is flawed. Jesus was as tough as they come, and when He was on earth, he invited the children to him, touched them, and blessed them (Mark 10:16). If a father does not show affection to his children, how will they know they are loved? Touch, squeezes, and hugs are small ways that fathers can communicate love to their children. If you want to bless your children, be a hugger.

32.5 Be an Encourager

When Isaac blessed Jacob he said,

Genesis 27:28, 29 Therefore God give thee of the dew of heaven, and the fatness of the earth, and plenty of corn and wine: Let people serve thee, and nations bow down to thee: be lord over thy brethren, and let thy mother's sons bow down to thee: cursed be every one that curseth thee, and blessed be he that blesseth thee.

32.6 Facts About This Blessing:

32.7 Fact One

Isaac blessed Jacob with powerful words. I believe we should say to our kids every day, “God bless you, and may you be a blessing.”

Often fathers are too quick to criticize and correct their children. They are more ready to predict failure than success. Think for a moment of the power of the words, “God bless you,” or “You are going to be a great musician someday,” or “I know you can do it.”

When Satan wants to destroy a man, he circulates negative, slanderous, hurtful information about him. It need not be true, just mean and dirty. I know a man who tried to drive his van into a semi-truck to commit suicide. If his wife had not grabbed the wheel, he and his beautiful family would have surely been killed. Later, I learned he was haunted by a childhood experience. After his brother died, his mother told him, “I wish you had died instead of your brother.” Wow! Can you feel the pain of that statement? In later life, stalked by his mother's hurtful words, unable to believe what God said about him, he decided to end his life. Oh, the power of negative words! Oh, the power of believing an errant mother.

When psychologists Cliff Notarius of Catholic University and Howard Markman of the University of Denver studied newlyweds over the first decade of marriage, they found a very subtle but telling difference at the beginning of the relationships. Among couples who would ultimately stay together, five out of every one hundred comments made about each other were putdowns. Among couples who would later split, 10 of every 100 comments were insults. That gap magnified over the following decade, until couples heading downhill were flinging five times as many cruel and invalidating comments at each other as happy couples. "Hostile putdowns act as cancerous cells that, if unchecked, erode the relationship over time," says Notarius, who with Markman co-authored the new book We Can Work It Out. "In the end, relentless unremitting negativity takes control, and the couple can't get through a week without major blowups." (*U.S. News & World Report*, February 21, 1994, p. 67).

Have you ever seen the movie, "The Dead Poets Society" starring Robin Williams (1989)? It is the story depicting conflict between an oppressive father and a talented son. The boy wanted to be an actor, but the father wanted him to be a doctor. After, a school play which the father reluctantly attended, the boy received a standing ovation for his performance. Immediately, after his act, the father threatened to take him out of school and place him in a military academy. That night the boy committed suicide. And, in real life, Robin Williams also committed suicide.

Furthermore, if I wanted to make a man successful, I would affirm positive things about him. It need not be blandish and blarney, just wholesome. Such was the case with Billy Graham. A newspaper man heard Billy preach in Los Angeles and said to his boss, "Let's make him a star." They did. The paper printed positive reports about Billy's preaching. News of Graham's crusade spread like wildfire across the country. The rest is history.

Jesus used words to inspire vision in his disciples: "Follow me, and I will make you fishers of men." Likewise, if you want to bless your child, put away the negative criticism, and put words of hope and faith on your lips. You will build or destroy your family by the words you use. Be an encourager. Put away anger!

Proverbs 15:1 A soft answer turns away wrath, but a harsh word stirs up anger.

Proverbs 15:4 A gentle tongue is a tree of life, but perverseness in it breaks the spirit.

Proverbs 18:21 Death and life are in the power of the tongue, and those who love it will eat its fruits.

Remember, God is the great "I Am." Satan is the great "I am not." Whenever we inspire people to "become" something good, we are following God. Whenever we tell

people they “can’t” we are following the ways of the enemy. Say, “God bless you” everyday! Say it to your wife, to your children, to your pastor, to your boss.

32.8 Fact Two

Isaac conveyed physical blessing before he conveyed spiritual blessings. “*May God give you heaven’s dew and of earth’s richness an abundance of grain and new wine*” was Isaac’s way of asking God to bless Jacob’s flock with water and green grass. “Grain” was a necessity and Isaac wished his son no want in life. “Wine” was a luxury, and Isaac wanted his son to enjoy a little of heaven on earth before his time.

I am reminded of the story of the Catholic who bought a Ferrari and wanted to have it blessed. He went to a Unitarian and asked him to bless his Ferrari. The Unitarian said, “A Ferrari! Wow! What a car! But, what is a blessing?” Next, he went to a Presbyterian and asked him to bless his Ferrari. The man went on and on about the virtues of the machine and was also confused about a blessing. Finally, the man went to a Mennonite and asked him to bless his Ferrari. “I would love to pray and ask God’s blessing on your Ferrari,” said the preacher, “but, what is a Ferrari?” This bit of humor suggest that some Christians tend to separate the spiritual from the physical in their effort to be separated from the world. While we do not want to be of the world, we need to be in the world. A little heaven on earth is a blessing, not a curse.

Furthermore, Isaac passed on the spiritual dimensions of the Abrahamic Covenant to Jacob which included authority over nations, the means of mediating blessings to the world:

Genesis 27:29 Let people serve thee, and nations bow down to thee: be lord over thy brethren, and let thy mother's sons bow down to thee: cursed be every one that curseth thee, and blessed be he that blesseth thee.

Likewise, children need a spiritual vision and an understanding of the Word of God. What a blessing it is for children to have a dad that reads God’s Word to them and inspires faith! Bless your children spiritually with superlative thoughts on the greatness of the LORD God and the potential of one who believes God’s Word.

What wonderful words, “God bless you!” No child should live without them. If you want to be a means of blessing your children then be a seeker of God; be a lover to your wife; be an affectionate hugger of your children; and, as an encourager say, “God bless you” to someone every day. Feel the power.

May God bless your family, and may God bless my family!

33 The Strong Son

Genesis 49:23 "The archers bitterly attacked him, and shot at him and harassed him, but his bow remained firm."



Born into a family of misfits, this son was careful to honor his father. He rounded the curves on the racetrack of life like a thoroughbred. Though pelted by darts, he remained on his steed and his arrow hit its mark.

His oldest brother, boiling with lust, committed incest with his father's legal concubine. His sister, Dinah, was a victim of seduction. Simeon and Levi, two older brothers, were a couple of hot heads that only needed a spark to ignite their power keg. His brother, Judah, had two incestuous sons by his sister-in-law who posed as a prostitute. His other brothers were involved in petty jealousies and squabbles like a murder of crows. By the grace of God, he refused to eat the fruit of the Poisonous Tree. At the end of matters, he became the savior of the family. His name is Joseph, the eldest son of Rachael, and the 11th son of Jacob, the strong son.

Mark Twain said that *physical courage seems quite common, but moral courage is quite rare*. He is correct, and Joseph was such a man. He was a tree planted by the waters of life. Our text above says that the archers shot at Joseph, but his bow remained strong--a Levantine aphorism meaning the man was severely tested by the evil within other men, but he fought back with arrows of righteousness. Having learned to say "No!" to sin, iron was fused into his soul. He was the strong son. His life is a testament to power of purity and integrity. Thus, he became one of the greatest men in history capable of leading a nation through a famine while saving his own family from starvation and ruin.

Like a black smith heats up a piece of metal and pounds it on an anvil to shape iron into a tool, Joseph was put in the crucible and hammered into a tour de force for God. Eventually, all the pressures of the nation of Egypt would rest on his shoulders. He was used to save the nation from the terrors of famine and his family from Adamic toxins poisoning the tribe. Those God uses mightily, he bruises deeply. Trials make the man! ***You are not what you do, you are the sum total of your faith responses to trials that God assigns to you.***

33.1 Test of Truthfulness (Genesis 37)

In Bedouin style, Joseph pastured the flocks days away from the central family camp. Upon his return, his father asked for a report. Joseph gave him the truth, the good, bad, and ugly, when it would have been easier to gloss over the behavior of his miscreant brothers. It was a test to tell the truth while knowing his brothers would loathe him for it (37:8). Furthermore, Joseph had a dream about the moon and the stars bowing down to him--a dream from God. He shared this revelation with them, and his brothers hated him all the more (37:9). It's not easy to tell the truth when a lie is more comfortable, nor is it easy to withhold the truth from those who have no claim upon the truth. Joseph seemed to understand the difference. And, it is this devotion to truth that made him stand out from other men. The whole world is in love with fictions, but the godly man loves the truth. Truth will set a man free, but it may burn his hands trying to hold it.

33.2 The Test of Obedience (Genesis 37)

A son should obey his father, but sometimes a father is not always in touch with the real condition of other men's souls. And, this is the case here. Tension mounted in the family. Joseph's brothers knew nothing of a "Hunka, hunka's burnin' love." Like an amber ready to kindle into a wildfire, envy and jealous smoldered in this family of misfits--so much so, the ten brothers, who picked fruit from the Poisonous Tree, had murder cooking on the back burner of their hearts. One glance of Joseph coming to them, and the fire of jealous ignited into attempted assassinate their innocent, younger brother (37:18). The decision was quick and unanimous: Guilty! Kill him! Let him die in a pit! No, sell him to the slave traders!

Though Jacob was not totally impervious to the envy burning in his sons, he underestimated its fury. Foolishly, Jacob ordered Joseph to deliver his orders to his brothers. What is a son supposed to do? Joseph knew his brothers hated him. But, like a good son, he honored his father . . . and the consequences turned out ghastly. It was the right decision with wrong results. His brothers threw him into a pit to die like an unwanted skunk. The amended plan called for him to be sold to slave traders bound for Egypt. It was the obedient son who suffered, not the delinquent sons. Obedience has its own burrs and stickers to bear.

33.3 Test of Purity (Genesis 39)

The archers aimed their darts of destruction at their little brother, but Joseph pulled back his own bow and launched the arrows of integrity at his new circumstances. Sold as a slave, he ended up on Potiphar's farm. Joseph exhibited no self-pity. He seems to have had the ability to see the providence of God and to trust Him in his testy circumstances. Faithful in detail, he learned not only the language of the Egyptians, but the farming trade--skills that proved invaluable in time. A man of integrity and industry, Potiphar appointed Joseph foreman of the farming operations. ***He was becoming a product of his faith and response to difficulties, not a victim of negative circumstances.***

A short time later, the strong son found himself the target of another archer. A strong, virile young man in his twenties, he caught the eye of Potiphar's glowing wife. A prowling cougar, she had the ability to score with men. While Joseph was doing an errand in the back of the ranch house, this she-devil sprang her furtive trap. "Lie with me," was her contract offer. Alone with a salacious vixen that has more curves than the Nile River would be a "freebie" for most Egyptian men. But, with Joseph, it was a test of his devotion to moral purity. Would he be governed by the law of the LORD God or by his own passions? Would he take the road less traveled, or the low road crowded with moral dropouts? ***Physical courage is quite common, but moral courage is quite rare.***

Joseph, having learned the power of "No!" ran away from this silky she-devil as fast as his sandals could slap. He escaped the arrow of adultery, but more darts were on their way.

33.4 Test of Injustice

The strong son made the right decision, but his short-lived victory was pierced through by the arrows of Potiphar's unfaithful wife. Soon, thereafter, Joseph found himself falsely accused of the very thing from which he fled. Potiphar carted Joseph off to court. He had the evidence, Joseph's robe! Guilty! Bam! Slam! The young foreman found himself in jail surrounded by the scum of Egypt. He was alone, out of a job with his reputation ruined. So much for justice! No future ministry for him! The House of God doesn't look for pastors among ex-convicts and jail birds. Thus, another pure white decision blackened by the dark side of men. Where was God?

There is nothing that sours the soul of a man like hemlock justice. In irons, wrongly condemned, would his faith be able to believe in the goodness of God and trust him for victory in this contest of archers? An Egyptian jail was a horrible, rat infested hellhole, but it was God's Ph.D. program for Joseph.

33.5 Test of Resentment

So far, every good decision Joseph made ended badly. Sweet wine turned sour; fresh bread turned moldy. The melody of his life in the major key suddenly and without warning slipped into a minor key. A groan replaced the song in his heart.

Enrolled in this course called "Fiery Trials," Joseph had to think through his principles: "*His feet were hurt with fetters; his neck was put in a collar of iron*" but steel was being fused into his soul (Psalm 105:18). Attitudes adjusted, he soon found favor with the keeper of the prison. He was chosen to serve other inmates.

One day, Joseph saw two prisoners whose faces looked like the front cover on the Book of Lamentations. Both were accused of trying to poison Pharaoh, but Pharaoh couldn't discern the true culprit. Thus, both were in prison. Both had a dream. Both dreams were accurately interpreted by Joseph. Both interpretations came true.

Truth discerned, the butler was set free and baker executed. Believing that the king's cupbearer would be grateful, Joseph requested the butler to remember him and repay his small debt to Joseph after his reinstatement in Pharaoh's court. Just like sinners, the butler forgot. God's man spent another two years in that filthy prison.

What a fiery trial: sold by his brothers, falsely accused, unjustly charged, in prison, surrounded by miscreants, and forgotten by an ingrate! The butler seemed to have amnesia. Had God also forgotten him also? There is nothing that weighs on a man more than the silence of God while charred in a fiery furnace of affliction. It was a test of resentment and bitterness. Joseph was disappointed for sure, but he did not give in to despair or plunge into sensuality and self-pity. ***He was becoming a product of his faith and response to difficulties, not a victim of negative circumstances.***

33.6 Test of Pride (Genesis 41-42):

Having had a disturbing dream, Pharaoh mentioned his bewilderment to the restored butler. Finally, the man that had amnesia remembered Joseph, and recommended him to his king. Pharaoh quickly summoned Joseph from prison seeking his assistance.

After 13 years of bitter trials, this must have seemed like the time for a little self-promotion--for Joseph to toot his own horn sort of speak. Surely, now was the opportunity to advance his cause, proclaim his innocence, and to impress Pharaoh who held the key to his destiny. Notice Joseph's stunning answer and how his finger pointed to God and not himself: "*It is not me. God will give Pharaoh a favorable answer*" (41:16), "*God has told Pharaoh what He is about to do*" (41:25). The arrows of pride whizzed through the air, but none of them stuck. Joseph simply told the truth and trusted God.

He shared the particulars of his dream and Joseph interpreted the vision for him. Pharaoh was shocked, fearful, concerned, and amazed all at once. Seven years of famine, how can Egypt survive? Stunned by Joseph's interpretation and impressed with his skill and stately manner, Pharaoh appointed Joseph to be vice-regent of Egypt in charge of agriculture. Suddenly, Joseph found himself dressed in the clothes of a prince on a chariot being proclaimed the new prime minister of Egypt.

At last, a good decision with a good result! Maybe, God was in charge after all!

"Can we find a man like this in who is a Divine spirit? . . . there is no one so discerning as you are. You shall be over my house . . . took off his signet ring from his hand and put it on Joseph's hand . . . and set him over the land of Egypt" (41:38-43)

". . . God has made me forget all my troubles" (41:51)

33.7 Test of Forgiveness (Genesis 45)

One more test awaited Joseph. *Would he forgive his brothers who caused so much pain and suffering when revenge was within his power?* Would the strong son have the power to forgive the pain they inflicted or would Joseph pluck the sweet fruit of revenge from the Poisonous Tree?

Perhaps, there is no other story in Scripture with so much personal drama as that when Joseph's ten brothers under the stress of famine traveled to Egypt to purchase grain. Joseph's wisdom, tactics, and cunning subterfuge is nothing short of spectacular. You can't compose fictions with this much tension and drama. His gruff treatment of his brothers, cloaked identity, accusing them of being spies, selling them grain, holding Simeon hostage, restoring their money and putting it back into their sacks, and then demanding they bring their youngest brother down into Egypt would rouse the fears of any man. Their guilt surrounding their malicious treatment of Joseph at age 17 rumbled so loud it could wake the dead. A knife entered their heart and they couldn't pull it out.

The silver cup placed in the sack of Benjamin was the straw that broke the camel's back. Burdened by their past guilt, accused of criminal theft, terrorized by the threat of jail, it was in Joseph's power to repay his miscreant brothers with punishments they deserved. He had the power to make them feel every ounce of pain that he had suffered due to their mercenary plot to kill him.

Of all of Joseph's responses, perhaps this one was most amazing!

Genesis 45:3 And Joseph said to his brothers, "I am Joseph! Is my father still alive?" But his brothers could not answer him, for they were dismayed at his presence.

Genesis 45:4 So Joseph said to his brothers, "Come near to me, please." And they came near. And he said, "I am your brother, Joseph, whom you sold into Egypt.

Genesis 45:5 And now do not be distressed or angry with yourselves because you sold me here, for God sent me before you to preserve life.

No punishment, no revenge, no hammer of justice! With the eye of faith, Joseph discerned God's providence. Now he understood that his troubles were appointed by the LORD God for good. Perfectly planned, his difficulties prepared him for this moment. The burden of saving Egypt was on his shoulders, and he had the privilege of saving his own royal family from famine and to restore godliness to the House of Jacob.

Up until this moment, the descendants of Jacob were a family of self-centered, jealous, fornicating, hot-headed, murdering, bickering misfits little different from

the squabbling pagans in Canaan. In the drama of Jacob's family, we see the exceeding advantage of what it means to be a family under God! We are permitted to behold the healing power of grace that yielded confession and cleansing of family sins. *Amazing grace, how sweet the sound, that saved a family like Jacob's. . . lost but found, blind but sees; His word their hope secures, their shield and portion be.*

Psalm 146:5 Happy is he that hath the God of Jacob for his help, whose hope is in the LORD his God:

His was a life of overcoming adversity. A man of moral courage, the strong son's "bow remained firm," so much like the Lord Jesus Christ! Passing the tests, prepared by trials -- the savior of Egypt, the savior of Israel, a family under God!

34 The Greatest Son of All

*Genesis 44:18, 31-34 Then Judah approached . . . It shall come to pass, when he seeth that the lad is not with us, that he will die: and thy servants shall bring down the gray hairs of thy servant our **father** with sorrow to the grave. **For thy servant became surety for the lad** unto my father, saying, If I bring him not unto thee, **then I shall bear the blame to my father forever.** Now therefore, I pray thee, let thy servant abide instead of the **lad a bondman to my lord;** and let the lad go up with his brethren. For how shall I go up to my **father**, and the lad be not with me? **lest** peradventure I see the evil that shall come on my **father**.*

34.1.1 The Amazing Transformation of Judah



What is a great son? An apple tree blooms in Genesis 44. It is one of the most remarkable stories ever penned-- Judah's oral pleading before Joseph, Chief Magistrate of Egypt.

In some ways, Judah was a greater son than Joseph. Joseph ran his course flawlessly. Judah tripped and fell, but recovered beautifully. Both sons had a spiritual journey that led to greatness. Both men were hammered out on the anvil of adversity. Both were Christ-like, but in different ways. Both sons were instruments of God in saving the family of Jacob not only from famine but heartache, shame, and economic ruin. *Both men honored*

their father, but Judah loved him unto death!

Consider the spiritual development of Judah, his transformation, and the greatness of this son.

First, consider the character of the family of Jacob. Jacob's life is about a family under God. At first glance, Jacob's garden looks no different than the weeds growing in Canaanite fields. Fruits of the Poisonous Tree grew in both.

Likewise, Judah had his share of thorns. Uncle Esau's spiritual interests were as dead as a hundred-year-old battery. He even sold his spiritual inheritance for a mess of pottage. And, God hated him for it (Romans 9:13). Brother Reuben was as flaky as crumb-cake. In a fit of lust, he incestuously seduced his father's concubine (35:22). His naïve sister, Dinah lost her virginity to Hamor, the "Don Jaun" of

Shechem. The emotions of Judah's two older brothers, Simeon and Levi, smelled like sulfur spewing from a volcano. In their fury, they murdered all the men of Shechem.

Judah's own family didn't fare much better. A whole chapter is dedicated to the nakedness of Judah (Genesis 38). Reading his story is messier than changing a dirty diaper. Judah married a woman from among the Canaanites who bore him three sons: Er, Onan, and Shelah. Er married a Canaanite woman named Tamar, but was so infected by the fruit on the Poisonous Tree, that God slew him (38:2). He died because he failed to honor his father Judah. After Tamar became a widow, Judah arranged for Onan to perform his brother-in-law duty under levirate law to impregnate Tamar in order to produce a family heir. Onan stubbornly refused. In the act of copulation, Onan discharged his semen on the ground. This act of treachery so displeased the Lord that he slew the man. He died young because he failed to honor his father's command. Tamar, therefore, adorned the attire of a widow a second time. Under levirate law, Shelah was Tamar's last hope of bearing children for the family of Judah. Judah's neglect of arranging a levirate marriage between Tamar and Shelah created a crisis for an heir in the family. Judah's orchard was as naked as a winter's limb.

In short, and in order to avoid all the grimy details, Tamar took matters into her own hands. Dressing herself up as Bedouin harlot from navel to pelvic bone, she seduced Judah, and ended up pregnant. Two twins were born: Perez and Zerah (38:29-30).

And, this is the family of God!

34.1.2 The Amazing Loyalty of Tamar

We must analyze the good, bad, and ugly in this raunchy story regarding Judah and Tamar. First the bad: Er and Onan kissed the hissing snake, and the Lord executed them both. Second, the ugly: Tamar played a renegade harlot and tricked her father-in-law into a bare-back sexual encounter; and, Judah sat down on his own spurs when he recklessly purchased sexual services from Tamar acting like a high-dollar hottie. The whole story is uglier than a monkey's armpit. What a disheveled, messed-up tribe!

But, in this family under God, there is a ray of sunshine peeking out from behind the dark clouds of carnal copulation: "*She hath been **more righteous than I**; because that I gave her not to Shelah my son. And he knew her again no more*" (38:26). As twisted and screwed up as this family appears to be, there was a flower in this field, and it was Tamar's righteousness.

Think about Tamar! Raised among Canaanites, virgins were as rare as blush on prostitutes. She married into the family of Judah to a son who was as wicked as a

dumpster in a Canaanite red-light district. And, in special act of judgment, God slew the man. Again, she married Onan, her son-in-law. Refusing the duty of levirate law, God took his life. Why didn't Tamar just leave this slaughterhouse and hook up with a Canaanite man? Why did she wait for Shelah to grow up so he could be given to her in marriage? What did she see about the God of Israel that made her want to make her bed in this family? And, this is perhaps one of the most beautiful revelations in Scripture.

As deceptive as Tamar was in playing the prostitute, she saw the treasure in this family under God. Jacob was the beneficiary of the Abrahamic covenant, and Tamar wanted a share in the corporation. Even though this family had weeds in its field, it was ten times better than her Canaanite upbringing. Though thorns and thistle were growing on this farm, righteousness also grew in the family garden. Because of her faithfulness to this covenant family, our Lord was pleased to own Tamar in His genealogy in Matthew chapter one. Tamar is one of the five women honored in our Lord's ancestry, and our Lord was not ashamed to have her as one of his great grandmothers.

Second, it was Judah who saved Joseph from death in the pit. Yes, Joseph with his coat of many colors, and his dreams of dominion over all his brothers, irritated Judah. Yes, dreams of killing his "perfect" little brother raged in his heart. Yes, he cast his vote to abandon Joseph into a pit to die of starvation and dehydration. A man without empathy and compassion, he exhibited no concern about honoring his father. The grief and pain this would inflict on his Jacob didn't even enter his mind. Nevertheless, it was Judah who persuaded his bickering brothers to lift Joseph out of the pit and to sell him to slave traders headed toward Egypt. And, his brothers listened to him.

Fifteen years pass before Judah arises as a star in Israel.

Third, it was Judah who offered to be a surety for Benjamin to his father. Embittered by the savage famine, Jacob orders his sons to purchase grain in Egypt. At the market, Joseph recognizes his ten brothers and vigorously accuses them of being spies. Stripped of their defenses, the brothers are forced to deal with the dead chicken hanging around their neck. *"In truth we are guilty concerning our brother, in that we saw the distress of his soul, when he begged us and we did not listen. That is why this distress has come upon us"* (Genesis 41:21). Joseph heard their discussion. As Prime Minister, he took Simeon into custody and held him hostage until the ten brothers returned with Benjamin as proof they were family men and not spies in Egypt. Upon returning home, they shared the terrifying experience with Jacob who was utterly stressed out by the nasty affair. He blamed his sons for a lack of indiscretion by talking too much. He complains, *"You have bereaved me of my children . . . all this has come against me"* (42:36).

After the supplies dwindled, Jacob ordered his boys to return to Egypt for more grain. His sons objected: "*We will not go down, for the man said to us, 'You shall not see my face, unless your brother is with you'*" (43:5). As touchy as a stepmother, Jacob wrangles with them, "*Why did you treat me so badly as to tell the man that you had another brother*"(43:6).

At an impasse, it was Judah that stepped up to the plate. He did not blame his father or accuse him of unreasonableness. He made an offer to relieve his stress: "***I will be surety for him; of my hand shalt thou require him: if I bring him not unto thee, and set him before thee, then let me bear the blame for ever***" (43:9). This is not a friendly game of "Old Maid." It is a high stakes poker game. Lives are on the line. Judah moves all his chips to the center of the table and pledges his life for the safe return of the boy. Life for life; Judah for Benjamin! Return the favored son, or die! An amazing display of moral courage and true grit! Little did Judah know that there would be a call on his contract.

Judah, in an amazing act of self-sacrifice, gave up his precious all to save his younger brother Benjamin. In this card game, Joseph dealt from the bottom of the deck to plant "the silver cup, in the mouth of the sack" of Benjamin (44:2). Accused of petty theft, beloved Benjamin was taken into custody. This was the poker hand that Israel feared--a hand that would cost him his beloved son. Judah knew it. Fear sucked all the oxygen out of the room and "they collapsed before Joseph to the ground" (44:14). "What deed is this that you have done?" Joseph demanded. Every brother gasped for breath. Their minds went blank as there was a gap between their heart and their tongue.

No advocate in sight, Judah rose up off the floor and approached the judgment bench. With truth as his only defense, he pleaded his case before Joseph like a champion attorney. He presented the facts truthfully and prayed to the Court, "*Now therefore, I pray thee, let thy servant abide instead of the lad a bondman to my lord; and let the lad go up with his brethren.*"

Judah pledged himself as a surety for Benjamin. The contract was called due. With the courage of a martyr, he placed his life on the altar in exchange for the life of Benjamin. His freedom, his family, his peace, his wealth, his possessions, his honor, and his happiness was offered to pay the debt! In order to relieve Jacob of the pain of losing Benjamin, Judah went to hell out of love for his father. Life for life! So much like our Lord Jesus Christ!! To honor his father, he sacrificed his precious all!! But, there is relief in his courtroom drama. The Judge was none other than Joseph, his wise and gracious younger brother.

When Joseph saw the love Judah had for his father and his humility and his integrity, he melted like a marshmallow over a hot fire. Love and forgiveness swept over him: "*Joseph could not control himself before all those who stood by him,*" and "*he wept aloud . . . I am Joseph! Is my father still alive?*" (Genesis 45:1-2).

The transformation of Judah was nothing short of amazing: compassion rolled over coldness; humility melted pride; honor inverted dishonor; courage triumphed over fear; self-sacrifice dethroned self-centeredness; truth displaced the lie; love blossomed instead of hate. No wonder Jacob honored Judah and passed on to him the blessed birthright. He honored his father unto death!

Genesis 48:8-10 Judah, your brothers shall praise you; your hand shall be on the neck of your enemies; your father's sons shall bow down before you. Judah is a lion's cub . . . as a lion and as a lioness, who dares rouse him? The scepter shall not depart from Judah, nor the ruler's staff from between his feet, until tribute comes to him; and to him shall be the obedience of the peoples.

At last, we see what it means to be a family under God where the Spirit works to transform its members into the image of Christ! Redeeming them from radical narcissisms and molding them into generous self-sacrificing human beings. Here we see the blessed fruits of righteousness overcoming thistles and thorns; truth and honesty defeating lies and deception; and the sweetness of self-denial purifying the bitter waters of self-interest and deception.

Finally, we need to examine the reason for Judah's amazing transformation.

Judah was instructed by his father's pain. What happened to Judah after he deceived his father about the fate of Joseph, one can only imagine! We know he was part of the plot to murder Joseph and a willing participant in the cover up (38).

While Joseph was blossoming into a champion in Egypt under Potiphar in chapter 41 of Genesis, a flood of death and destruction swamped the home of Judah (39): wickedness, betrayal, dishonor, treachery, and judgment killed his sons. A victim of deception, though not without a stain, Judah had twin sons through incestuous intercourse with his daughter-in-law Tamar. Seeing the fruit of the Poisonous Tree crop up in his own family must have shaken him to the bone.

Further, having to face his father every day and to cover a lie, his conscience must have squealed like a guinea pig with his foot caught in a steel trap. Seeing the torment in his father's eyes and the wrinkles of sorrow on father's brow tutored Judah. While Joseph was in Egypt attending the school of Hard Knocks, Judah was being educated by his father's grief over the loss of Joseph. Somewhere in all the lies and deceit, and in all anguish and misery, Judah made a life-changing decision, "Never again!" Never again would he hurt Jacob or be a disappointment to his aging father. Never again would he lie and be a treacherous son. Never again would he be so selfish.

In his plea before Joseph, Judah entered into the sufferings of Christ and became faithful unto death wherein our Lord "*was wounded for our transgressions; and, crushed for our iniquities . . .with whose stripes we are healed*" (Isaiah 53:5).

Joseph typified Christ in his rule and reign, but Judah typified Christ in his suffering and passion. Both men honored their father, one through his achievements and authority, the later through self-denial and self-sacrifice. In this way, Judah became the greatest son of all. Honoring his father unto death, Jacob passed on to him the birthright. Judah became the progenitor of the Messianic Seed, the Lion of the Tribe of Judah (Genesis 49:8-10).

35 The Foolish Son

Proverbs 15:20 A wise son maketh a glad father; But a foolish man despiseth his mother.



A wise son honors his father and brings joy to him, but a foolish son is a grief to his mother; that is, a wise son does everything in his power to honor his father and mother; a foolish son despises God's Law-order and brings grief and shame into the home.

Our text in Proverbs 26 dedicates twelve verses to describe the character of a fool.

Proverbs 26:1 Like snow in summer or rain in harvest, so honor is not fitting for a fool.

Just as snow is destructive to crops in the summer and rain is fatal in times of harvest, a fool is calamitous to his commission if appointed to a post of duty and dignity.

Proverbs 26:2 Like a sparrow in its flitting, like a swallow in its flying, a curse that is causeless does not alight.

A fool curses his father and mother.

Proverbs 26:3 A whip for the horse, a bridle for the donkey, and a rod for the back of fools.

A fool can't learn the easy way at the feet of his mother or at the side of his father. He's a non-learner who doesn't ask the advice or counsel of his parents. Dr. Pain is his only instructor. Like a dumb ass, he has to train the hard way through whips and lashes.

Proverbs 26:4 Answer not a fool according to his folly, lest you be like him yourself.

You cannot instruct a fool or debate with a fool like a reasonable man. He doesn't have the capacity for reason and logic. He is an emotional man and can only learn when he feels pain; therefore, don't waste your breath trying to teach him. He won't learn. He's not interested in what his parents know. A wise man can learn more from a foolish question than a fool can from a wise answer.

Proverbs 26:5 Answer a fool according to his folly, lest he be wise in his own eyes.

A fool's answer must be addressed lest he think himself among the wise (26:5). He must be censored, but not lectured. Silliness calls for rebuke. He can't learn from ordinary conversation. A wise man knows he has one fool up one sleeve, a fool thinks he has wisdom in both hands and two shoes.

Proverbs 26:6 Whoever sends a message by the hand of a fool cuts off his own feet and drinks violence.

To trust a fool with an important duty necessary for the success of a mission is like taking an ax and cutting off your own hand; that is, it will not be performed correctly, but the pain he inflicts will be inversely proportional to the hope expected (26:6).

Proverbs 26:7 Like a lame man's legs, which hang useless, is a proverb in the mouth of fools.

Proverbs are crisp witty saying easy to hang on the pegs in the mind of the intelligent, but the fool has no closet space for jackets of wisdom. Just as legs are useless to a man with a broken back, brainy proverbs are useless to a fool. A fool can't quote Solomon or Bunyan or Luther or Calvin or a Mark Twain because he is only in touch with his own thoughts and feelings (26:7).

Proverbs 26:8 Like one who binds the stone in the sling is one who gives honor to a fool.

Just as it is dumb to tie a rock in a sling shot, it is stupid to commission a fool with authority. The task will only meet with frustration (26:8).

Proverbs 26:9 Like a thorn that goes up into the hand of a drunkard is a proverb in the mouth of fools.

Just as a drunkard feels no pain when he falls into a thorn bush, Biblical truth has no effect on the mind of a fool; and, just as the mouth of the wise heals the soul, the mouth of fools injures the soul. A fool has a big mouth, and he never stops talking. He can blather on about nothing for hours. Everything he says is reckless and accusatory (26:9). A fool's mouth is a sharp thorn that brings no relief to a crisis, no solutions to the table, and nothing but pain and sorrow into a family.

Proverbs 26:10 Like an archer who wounds everybody is one who hires a passing fool or drunkard.

Like an archer who wounds everyone, so is he who hires a fool. He is the sniper in the group who talks about people behind their back. The text in verse ten is difficult to translate. It appears to mean that just as an archer does damage by shooting an arrow at a charging army, so a fool does damage to his own troops; that is, his presence is like an archer's arrow that strikes team members.

Proverbs 26:11 Like a dog that returns to his vomit is a fool who repeats his folly.

Like a dog that returns to his vomit, a fool can't free himself from his folly. Feeding from the gutter, he can't take a bite out of wisdom. Emotionally based and glandular, he follows his feeling and obeys his cravings. Though what he does and thinks makes him sick, he keeps doing and thinking the same old way. The sins of his youth are the sins of his old age.

35.1 What Could Be Worse than a Fool?

Proverbs 26:12 Do you see a man who is wise in his own eyes? There is more hope for a fool than for him.

After one finishes reading these twelve verses, one might ask, is there anything worse than a fool? And, the answer is "Yes!" A proud, autonomous, self-reliant man bursting with self-esteem is worse off than a fool. There is more hope for a teenage clown than for a cocky football star; and, more hope for the town idiot than for the town's arrogant successful businessmen. A man who makes friends with pride makes God his enemy. A proud man breeds contempt and alienates the blessings of Christ upon his life. Be humble or stumble.

36 The Proud Son



There is a son who knows it all; who has more wisdom than his father; who has no appreciation for his father's character or his accomplishments; who never asks questions of his father or consults his mother's advice. There is a son that does not share his father's passion for God; who has the world by the tail; who knows how to govern better than his dad; that belittles his father and criticizes his mother.

Proverbs 30:11 There are those who curse their fathers and do not bless their mothers.

Proverbs 30:17 The eye that mocks a father and scorns to obey a mother will be picked out by the ravens of the valley and eaten by the vultures.

ravens of the valley and eaten by the vultures.

Absalom, the son of David, was the proud son worse than a fool (2 Samuel 13-18).

Here is a young man that made friends with the hissing snake near the Poisonous Tree. The study of Absalom is a study on pride . . . and every man would do well to avoid the salt lick and slobber of his life.

We are introduced to Absalom in the dark chapter of 2 Samuel 13 wherein Amnon raped Tamar, Absalom's sister.

Absalom was the third son born in the House of David. His mother's name was Maacah, the daughter of Talmai king of Geshur, a people northeast of the Galilean Sea (Bethsaida). Maacha had two children by David, Absalom and Tamar. He seems to be a poster child for some of the stereotypes of middle children: ambitious, negative, resentful, competitive, talkative, bold, shrewd, critical, ungrateful, and calculating.

King David ate from the Poisonous Tree in his sin with Bathsheba. Stolen fruit is sweet to the taste, but it turns bitter and poisons the whole family. In this case, we see the toxins of sin at work in David's household: burning lusts, frustration, debased counsel, pretense, forced rape and incest, hate, desolation, neglect of discipline by a father, strained brotherly relationships, resentment and bitterness, cold calculation, deception and disdain for a father, conspiracy to commit murder, fratricide, fleeing from justice, the multiplication of shame and sorrow, and a strange dislocated love by a father.

All through the text we are aghast at pride wafting from the story like the smells at a fish market.

What is pride? Pride opposes God's law-order and replaces it with one's own law-order. A proud man is autonomous, self-ruled and self-governed. He was an individualist, not a team player. He was the center of his universe. Pride is like a rotating crystal ball at a disco club that flashes in many directions. Pride is the opposite of Christ and humility. Pride is essentially competitive in that a proud man must always win. Pride seeks power over men, especially the power to hurt and injure others.

A proud man is a self-made man--a man that lives life on his own terms. His favorite song is "I did It My Way" by Frank Sinatra.

*I did what I had to do and saw it through without exemption
I planned each chartered course, each careful step along the byway
And more, much more than this, I did it my way.*

His favorite line in poetry comes from "Invictus" by William Earnest Henley:

*It matters not how strait the gate,
How charged with punishments the scroll,
I am the master of my fate,
I am the captain of my soul.*

And such was Absalom. He lived life on his own terms by his own law without regard to the law of his father or the law of the LORD God!

36.1 The proud son was full of resentment.

There is no excuse for the rape of Tamar by Amnon. The account proceeds like a scene from "Westside Story" with Amnon burning with lust like a fried egg on a hot griddle for his beautiful half-sister. He approved of Jonadab's devilish plan on how to rape Tamar, and its bitter fruits poisoned the entire family.

When Tamar tearfully informed Absalom of Amnon's sexual assault on her, Absalom received the news with a stone face and the cold eyes of a frozen corpse. Void of emotion, his advice to Tamar (2 Samuel 13:20) reads like a line from Lucky Luciano, "Don't worry, kid. I'll take care of it."

What follows next sends chills to the bone: "Absalom did not speak to Amnon either good or bad . . . for two whole years" (13:22-23). Thoughts tumbled within his own head like sock in a dryer making and breaking alliances. Like a professional hit

man, Absalom carefully, methodically, quietly plotted his revenge. It was a cold, calculated plan. No fear, no panic, no rush, no moral restraints, Amnon was as good as dead.

Did you notice that Absalom did not take the problem to his father David? He did not ask his advice nor prevail upon him to deal with Amnon according to the law of the LORD God. Consulting his own depraved heart, he assumed responsibility that was not his; i.e., to be the judge, jury, and executioner of Amnon.

36.2 The proud son was a cold, calculating man.

The plot perfected, Absalom approached David and requested that Amnon be permitted to attend his spring sheep-shearing festival. Lying came so easy for him. He was cool and collected, cold and calculating, meticulous and thorough, mean and vindictive. He gave no verbal clues or micro-body gestures to expose his plot. David believed the best. In the fields, Absalom embraced sweet revenge. Without guilt or shame, he carried out the assassination of his half-brother with bloody accuracy.

36.3 The proud son hated his father.

Following the fratricide, Absalom fled to his father-in-law at Geshur for comfort and protection. Like the cold war between Russia and the United States, a season of tension existed between Absalom and David. During the separation, there was no seeking of God nor feelings of remorse for his vigilante justice. He exhibited no concern for David. The Fifth Commandment had no legal effect on him. Resentful of his father, a formula for patricide was brewing in the laboratory of Absalom's dark mind.

36.4 The proud son could admit no wrong.

Though safe in a foreign land, Absalom wanted to go back home and resume his life as a prince. Due to the initiative of Joab and the woman of Tekoa, David reluctantly invited Absalom back to Jerusalem. But, Absalom was not permitted to see his father. Bitterly unhappy about this, Absalom set Joab's field on fire. It was emotional blackmail to pressure Joab to arrange a meeting between himself and the king. It was a time to get things right. Would Absalom acknowledge his treachery? Would King David forgive him for the murder of Amnon and receive him back ?

2 Samuel 14:33 "So when Joab came to the king and told him, he called for Absalom. Thus he came to the king and prostrated himself on his face before the king, and the king kissed Absalom." (II SAMUEL 14:33).

At the meeting, Absalom bows to the king, but it was merely a formality. He's not stupid, just proud (14:21-33). There is no evidence of shame or guilt touching his conscience. There was no humility, no brokenness, no confession, no asking forgiveness! Just cold-blooded assurance that he was right! He was a son that could

admit no wrong. So different from his father that when confronted by Nathan confessed, "I have sinned." The penitential psalms were written by David, not Absalom (Psalm 32; 38; 51).

The three magic words, "I was wrong," never touched the lips of this proud son. How do you recognize pride? It will not admit wrong. Things are always the other person's fault. It can only criticize and condemn.

David, on the other hand, appears willing to grant maximum forgiveness to Absalom. As flawed as David was and as cloudy as his mind appeared to be, he was a father that loved his son and stood ready to grant clemency to the one who treacherously murdered his son Amnon.

36.5 The proud son was a handsome man.

2 Samuel 14:25 "Now in all Israel there was no one as handsome as Absalom, so highly praised; from the sole of his foot to the crown of his head there was no defect in him."

Absalom had it all.

Physically, Absalom was as handsome as a peacock strutin' his stuff. He was the "jock in locks." The blond hair cascading down his manly shoulders caught the attention of all the young girls. Admired by all, everyone wanted to be like Absalom. He could have been the golden locks poster boy for *GQ Magazine*.

In addition to his good looks, Absalom was as clever as a fox: smart, cunning, and crafty. He was so good at persuasion; he could chip the teeth off a beaver. A likeable personality, he charmed men and woman alike (15:6).

Furthermore, because Absalom was a prince, he was rich. He had it all . . . except humility and a heart for God.

36.6 The proud son promoted himself

2 Samuel 15:1 "Now it came about that after this that Absalom provided for himself a chariot and horses, and fifty men as runners before him."

Absalom knew how to make an entrance at a party and to impress the press. He had style and glitz; fanfare and ballyhoo. He commanded attention, and he knew how to politic and gain votes. He was a political journalist that wrote his own reviews, a public relations committee of one, a marketer extraordinaire from hell.

During this period, David's administration was engulfed with all kinds of political challenges. Boggled down in family conflicts, David was not at his best. It was

during this period of weakness, that Absalom seized the opportunity to dethrone his father. Notice his dance with the devil (15:1-6):

Self-promotion: He promoted himself through cortege, fanfare, glitter, and pageantry (15:1-2). What a scene, fifty security officers running in front of his chariot!

Affirming Critics: Instead of defending and helping his father, he listens to criticism, and then affirmed complaints about David's administration. Fostering feuds, Absalom developed a political party around complainers, the "Pity Party," a fellowship of malcontents.

Strategy of Divide and Conquer: By agreeing with the complaints, he not only secured the vote of the disaffected, but divided affections from his father. Absalom fueled the firestorm with compassion and quick agreement. Yes, they were right; David was wrong. He cared. His father did not. He felt their pain; His father wanted to push every body's grandmother over the cliff. In so doing, Absalom divided the nation and broke down the existing political structure. (Beware of Absaloms around you.)

Self-proclaimed Authority: He postured himself as an authority in politics and national affairs. A proud expert, he offered simple solutions to complex problems. And, people fell for it, hook line and sinker. But, in reality he was no match for king David. He had none of his expertise, sensibility, or experience.

Political Promises: His Pledge-O-Meter was off the charts. He held himself up as the solution of all that was "unfair" "Oh, that I were judge in the land! (That I was pastor! That I was manager!) That everyone with a dispute might come to me, and I would give him justice," promised the proud son. But, he was wrong. His campaign promises were what people wanted to hear, but they could never be fulfilled.

Affectionate Campaigning: Politicians are famous for kissing babies, shaking hands, and giving hugs . . . and, all for votes. Absalom was no different: "And whenever a man came near to pay homage to him, he would put out his hand and take hold of him and kiss him" (15:5).

Jitterbugging across the political platform, Absalom "stole the hearts of Israel" (15:6). Pride and ambition blinded the man. His thirst for power could not be quenched until his father was crushed under his foot. Pride must win regardless of the cost! Here is a son that hated his father. His days were numbered.

36.7 The proud son rebelled against his father

2 Samuel 15:10 "But Absalom sent spies throughout all the tribes of Israel saying, 'As soon as you hear the sound of the trumpet, then you shall say, 'Absalom is king in Hebron.'"

Absalom had asked his father for permission to go to Hebron and worship the Lord. He said that he had made a vow to serve God. This, no doubt, made David very happy. But it was a bold-faced lie--a deception and a ruse (15:7-10). Absalom was going to Hebron not to worship his Creator, but to secure the worship of the nation for himself. He formed a political coup and organized an army to overthrow his kingly father. Events transpired quickly, and the next few chapters reads like a chapter out of the Napoleon's coup d'état in France. David flees Jerusalem and becomes a king in exile; Absalom marches to Jerusalem, captures the palace, and proclaims himself King of Israel.

36.8 The proud son shamed his father publically.

2 Samuel 16:22 So they pitched a tent for Absalom on the roof. And Absalom went in to his father's concubines in the sight of all Israel.

The law of the LORD God places a duty on sons to always "Honor their father and mother." This includes weak and imperfect parents. In this maximum liability universe, few men are always at their best. It is the duty of sons to protect their father's honor during these times. It does not mean sons are to put their fathers before God, but it does mean loyalty in political storms. But, Absalom had no regard for the 5th Commandment or any commandment for that matter.

Hate and treachery filled his heart. In a fit of meanness and revenge, he loaded his canons of revenge and copulated with his father's concubines. It was the ultimate act of scorn. In a public production with all the drama of a porn film, Absalom bedded ten of his father's concubines for the purpose of inflicting the maximum amount of shame on his father. It worked. David was crushed. David hit the ground in shock. Absalom's contempt knocked the wind out of him. In his own path to the throne, he took the high road. But, his own son wallowed in the dust, kissed the hissing snake, and strutted his bitter nakedness.

But, just as keeping the 5th Commandment contains the promise of life, violation of the 5th Commandment contains the promise of death. God saw. Absalom was placed on death row, and God used Joab to kill the proud jackass.

36.9 The proud son died the death of a fool

2 Samuel 18:9, 14 Now Absalom happened to meet the servants of David. For Absalom was riding on his mule, and his mule went under the thick branches of a great oak. And his head caught fast in the oak, so that he was left hanging between heaven and earth, so that the mule that was under him kept going... Then Joab said, 'I will not waste time here with you.' So he took three spears in his hand and thrust them through the heart of Absalom while he was yet alive in the midst of the oak.

Against sound military advice, Absalom marched his untrained army to battle against David's mighty men in the forest of Ephraim. The contest went badly for the inexperienced commander. In all his pride and arrogance, Absalom rode his mule into battle with his golden locks flowing like banners between the trees. The arrogant man found himself off his mule with his hair tangled in tree limbs. When Joab found him, he did not hesitate to run the rebel through with three spears. Vultures gathered. His dead corpse was thrown into a pit without honor and without remorse. With the proud rebel son dead, the war was over.³⁹ David returned to Jerusalem, secured the throne, punished his enemies, and united the nation around his leadership.

In conclusion, there is more hope for a fool than a proud man. Absalom was the proud son who dishonored his father. Eating the fruits from the Poisonous Tree, hate, revenge, bitterness, arrogance, murder, treachery, resentment, and shame grew up like thorns in his heart. His was the "eye that mocks a father and scorns to obey a mother" and whose eye was eaten by "*ravens of the valley and by the vultures.*" Be humble or stumble.

³⁹ Political parties united around personalities rather than principles will always die with the death of the leader.

37 The Daughter Worth More than Seven Sons

Ruth 4:15 " your daughter-in-law who loves . . . is more to you than seven sons"



She never made it on "Dancing with the Stars" or the face of "Cosmopolitan Magazine" or the "Housewives of Moab," but she is among the most lovely women in Scripture. Nothing is said about her physical appearance, yet the Spirit of God devoted a whole book to this beautiful woman. Before us is a daughter worth more than seven sons, and we would all do well to ponder her titanic devotion toward her mother-in-law.

To someone familiar with Old Testament law, Matthew 1:5 contains something out of place—the name of Ruth, a Moabitess. By legal standards in Torah, she constitutes a serious defection in the lineage of Christ the Messiah; but by Divine standards, Ruth became a magnificent trophy of grace.

37.1 Ruth's Distress

If Ruth had lived during our time, she would have been voted the girl least likely to succeed. She lived during one of the darkest periods in Israel's history—the time of the judges when everyone "did that which was right in his own eyes" (Judges 21:25). While Ruth stands out as a woman of sweet humility and childlike faith, her distressing circumstances worked against any hope of prosperity and happiness. Her early life was a story of curses, famines, funerals, and destitutions.

We know nothing of her family except that she was a Moabite. Born in the Sun-baked hills east of the Dead Sea, her family understood a double curse--the curse upon the founder of the nation who was the product of the incestuous relationship between Lot and his two daughters, and a curse that rested on the nation because of the sorcery of Balaam who seduced the children of Israel into fornication with temple prostitutes (Genesis 19:37; Deuteronomy 23:3; Numbers 31).

37.2 Ruth's Destitution

Ruth married into a Hebrew family led by a man who left the people of God under chastisement in pursuit of a better life for his family. Theologians are not slow to point out that Abimelech typifies a backslider. Consequently, this family appears to

be under some type of Divine discipline. However, the text is silent about this and we dare not assume more than is written. All the men in this family perished prematurely outside of Israel surrounded by pagans. Elimelech died leaving Naomi a distressed widow with two sons. Eventually the sons married two Moabite women, Ruth and Orpah. After a few years, the two boys died leaving Ruth and Orpah penniless young widows. Surrounded by gravestones, the stark terror of what macabre nightmares are made of settled upon this family like a London fog. Deprived widows united by grief in a foreign land? What could be worse?

37.3 Ruth's Daring Decision

Upon hearing a rumor that God was blessing Judah with bread, Naomi made the decision to pull up stakes in Moab and to pitch her tent in Bethlehem. In her wisdom, she advised her daughter-in-laws to find protection in their father's home.

A debate ensued wherein Naomi argued the facts of her destitution like a Jewish lawyer. She pleaded with the girls, "*Turn back . . . turn back, my daughters*" (Ruth 1:12). Barely persuaded, Orpah reluctantly accepted the offer and tearfully returned to her Moabite home. Ruth, on the other hand, vigorously refused to abandon her mother-in-law in her crisis--a decision so bold, it begs to be explored.

But Ruth said, "Do not urge me to leave you or to return from following you. For where you go I will go, and where you lodge I will lodge. Your people shall be my people, and your God my God."

First, Ruth's daring decision involved trust in Naomi's God. But why? Mind you, this family had tasted the bitters and not the sweets. In His providence, YHWH left Naomi standing on thorns without a husband or sons to care for her. The story proceeds like a Friday Night Fright Flick: three marriages; three deaths; three funerals; three graves; three widows. But, God is sovereign, and God is good.

Surely, Naomi pleaded with God to save her husband. But, her petitions went unanswered! She must have agonized in prayer for God to save her sons during their illness. They died. Instead of being "a present help in time of trouble," the LORD remained silent, aloof, nowhere to be found! Her supplications were as barren as the Sinai desert. Upon returning to her hometown, Naomi reported, ". . . *the Almighty has dealt very bitterly with me*" (1:20). Where was the God of "health and wealth?" Where was the God of miracles? If God is all-powerful, why didn't he answer Naomi's prayers? If God is good, why didn't He prevent this evil? What good is a religion like this?

Why did Ruth want the God of Naomi to be her God? What in the world did she see about YHWH that was superior to the gods of Moab? We don't know for sure what Ruth saw in the God of Naomi, but apparently it was seven times better than what

she saw in the religion of Moab. She found more truth in Naomi's bucket of tears than she found in all the cisterns in Moab's temples.

Second, Ruth's decision to follow her Mother-in-law back to Bethlehem contained a step of faith. It would have been easier to remain in Moab among people she knew than to immigrate to Bethlehem to live as a foreigner among people she had never met. The future was uncertain. Would she be received by the Hebrews? Where would they live? How would they make a living? All she knew was that the God that she had come to love and admire through Naomi would guide her and protect her. Even though the God of Israel handed the pair bitter fruit to eat, it was from his hand!

Second, Ruth's decision to follow Naomi contained a cup of love in her fingers. The story of Ruth is not about love between a man and a woman, but the love of a daughter for her mother-in-law. The searching question for us is why? What did Ruth see in Naomi that caused her to be so devoted to her mother-in-law? Ruth was a Moabite; Naomi a Hebrew. A woman under scourge, Naomi appeared to be a widow forsaken of God. In all the failed prayers and funerals and shattered hopes, what did Ruth see in Naomi that was such a treasure?

Naomi's name means "pleasantness" or "joy." But, her life under God tasted more like peeled onions than cotton candy. A woman thrice veiled in black, child-like tears drizzled down her cheeks. Her story reads like a chapter out of "Coffins at Night" written by Boris Karloff. In fact, upon arriving in Bethlehem she suggested a name change from "Naomi" to "Marah," which means "bitter" (1:20). What rainbow did Ruth see in this prism of sadness? What kind of flowers grew in the heart of this grieving woman that made Ruth want to be in her garden? All the music in Naomi's home was sung in the minor key. What melody did Ruth come to admire? A family under God is supposed to sound more like a New Year's party than a funeral march, isn't it?

Kernels of goodness are often surrounded by thorns of grief and pain? In those dark days when the terrors of the night settled upon this family, there was light in the eyes of Naomi. In Naomi's angel sobs, Ruth saw the tears of genuine humanity. In the tragedies that swamped this home, there was a heart that beat true for the living God. Swallowed up by pressures she could not control, Naomi had a quiet confidence in the sovereignty of God. Though everything seemed to say God had abandoned Naomi, Ruth must have felt the presence of God in this woman. As bitter as providence tasted, there was a sweetness in Naomi's spirit that invigorated the soul of Ruth. This grieving widow and mother had more beauty in her pain than all the belly dancers in Moab in their frivolity. A cup of love was in Ruth's fingers. "For where you go I will go, and where you lodge I will lodge," she pledged.

Third, Ruth's daring decision to support her mother-in-law was an act of obedience to the Fifth Commandment. "Honor your mother . . ." includes

honoring your mother of your spouse! Ruth's decision to stay with Naomi and to suffer with her was Divine law! The LORD God commanded it. It was the right thing to do. Bereaved of husband and sons, Ruth determined she would not add to Naomi's grief. In Ruth's mind, her mother-in-law may be poor and destitute, but she was the mother-in-law God gave her and she was not going to abandon her and leave her alone without love and touch and conversation. In honoring her mother-in-law, God not only honored Ruth who became a blessing to Naomi, she became a national treasure. For her story found its way into the canons of Israel's Sacred Literature.

37.4 Ruth's Delight

There is bread in the House of God. Little did Naomi know at the time, that Ruth's decision would result in a cloud burst of kindness. Ruth would find grain to grind in the field of Boaz. Instead of contempt, she found dignity; instead of assault, she found protection. When Boaz arrived in the fields, he greeted the reapers: "*The LORD be with you!*" And the reapers answered, "*The LORD bless you!*" (Ruth 2). Respect and honor were the main crops on this ranch. A foreigner, the harvesters treated Ruth, a woman, with courtesy--a refreshing experience for this immigrant.

During the period of the judges when everyman did that which was right in his own eyes, Ruth discovered a pocket of God-fearing Israelites who were surrendered to the law of the Lord God. Boaz was a substantial man who respected Levirate law. With dignity and integrity, Ruth followed the coaching of Naomi, went to Boaz at night at the threshing floor to "uncover his feet" (shul); that is, to lift up his blanket on his feet and to lay perpendicular⁴⁰ like a servant at his feet letting him know that someone was there. Ruth prayed that he would "cover her with his skirt,"-- a symbolic request to be a "kinsman redeemer" ("goel") to her provided that he was qualified to be so.

In obedience to the King of Israel, Boaz took both Ruth and Naomi into his home. From Ruth's levirate marriage to Boaz came kings like David and Solomon and Hezekiah; Naomi's pilgrimage on earth ended "pleasant" and "full of joy" with a baby in her arms. A story of rags to riches, God was pleased to graft Ruth into the Messianic tree where she became the grandmother of our Lord Jesus Christ!

Little did Ruth know that in honoring her mother-in-law and delighting herself in the LORD God of Israel, that her simple faith would be greatly rewarded. The Lord was pleased to give Ruth the "the desires of her heart" (Psalm 37:4). A foreigner, Ruth gained the respect of all the women of Bethlehem who blessed Naomi and

⁴⁰ To lay perpendicular at Boaz feet regarded propriety and contained no seductive or provocative gesture as would an act of lying beside him; that is, her act was bold, but moral and noble.

called her "*tova la-ach meshib-ah ba-nim*," *a greater blessing than seven sons* (Ruth 4:14-15).

Notes:

The *shul* (skirt), or hem, was the emblem of rank or authority in Israel, much like the stripes on the sleeve of a naval officer or airline pilot in our culture. Ruth's act was not salacious seduction, but a noble gesture appealing to Israel's levirate law—a contract offer which included redemption of her former husband's property . . . and marriage, if accepted.

The near relative: the right to redeem the property, and Ruth, fell to a closer relative. As the story goes, the near "goel" was willing to purchase the property but not willing or able to redeem Naomi / Ruth without marring his own inheritance. Declining the duty, the right fell to Boaz who was not only able to redeem, but willing to redeem the Moabites, Naomi, and her former husband's surrendered property.

The reason the near kinsman was unwilling to marry Ruth has been the subject of much debate. Possibly, the man was a widower with children, and a marriage to Ruth would have complicated inheritance issues; or, maybe the man was already married, and a polygamous relationship would have its own complications; or maybe, the fact that Ruth was a Moabite was an unwanted negative factor that would affect his lineage. There appears to be a legal conflict in Deuteronomy. Being a kinsman redeemer was a noble duty required by law (Deuteronomy 25:5), but marrying a Moabite carried a warning and a prohibition (Deuteronomy 23:3).

The shoe: The near relative declined the contract by symbolically handing Boaz his shoe. Any case must begin with by a ratification of commencement; that is, proof that both parties have a stake in the claim; the claim declined, the right of redemption was handed to Boaz.

The Moabite Restriction (Deuteronomy 23): The law restricted Israel from marrying a Moabite. The verb "shall not enter" is a masculine singular. Gill notes that in the Targum of Jonathan this applied to giving Israelite women to Moabite men; that is, the Moabite male, by virtue of his marriage to an Israelite woman, could not enter the body politic and obtain political privileges. He must be regarded a foreigner having no inheritance in the commonwealth of the nation. The restriction did not apply to Israelite men who married a Moabite woman who agreed to live under Israel's law like Ruth. Marriage to a Moabite widow of a dead Israelite did not cancel any of Boaz's privileges or mar his position in the commonwealth.

The typology: The story of Ruth points to Christ and His church and the willingness and ability of the Lord Jesus Christ, our Kinsmen Redeemer, to pay the

blood price of our redemption. Boaz is a picture of the Savior; Ruth is a picture of the sinner outside of Israel redeemed by a willing and able obedient Israelite.

38 A Confederate Letter from a Father to a Son

Source: http://www.biblebelievers.com/Letter_to_a_son.html

July 17, 1861



My Dear Son:

It may have seemed strange to you that a professing Christian father so freely gave you, a Christian son, to enlist in the volunteer service. My reason was that I regarded this as a purely defensive war. Not only did the Southern Confederacy propose to adjust the pending difficulties by peaceful and equitable negotiations, but Virginia used again and again the most earnest and noble efforts to prevent a resort to the sword. These overtures having been proudly spurned, and our beloved South having been threatened with invasion and

subjugation, it seemed to me that nothing was left us but stern resistance or abject submission to unconstitutional power. A brave and generous people could not for a moment hesitate between such alternatives. A war in defense of our homes and firesides-of our wives and children-of all that makes life worth possessing is the result. While I most deeply deplore the necessity for the sacrifice, I could not but rejoice that I had a son to offer to the service of the country, and if I had a dozen I would most freely give them all. As you are now cheerfully enduring the hardships of the camp, I know you will listen to a father's suggestions touching the duties of your new mode of life.

1. Take special care of your health. More soldiers die of disease than in battle. A thin piece of damp sponge in the crown of your hat during exposure to the hot sun-the use of thick shoes and a waterproof coat in rainy weather-the practice of drinking cold water, when you are very warm, as slowly as you sip hot tea-the thorough mastication of your food-the avoiding of damp tents and damp grounds during sleep-and frequent ablutions of your person, are all the hints I can give you on this point. Should you need anything that I can supply, let me hear from you. I will do what I can to make you comfortable. After all, you must learn to endure hardness as a good soldier. Having never slept a single night in your whole life except in a pleasant bed, and never known a scarcity of good food, you doubtless

find the ways of the camp rough; but never mind. The war, I trust, will soon be over, and then the remembrance of your hardships will sweeten the joy of peace.

2. The rules of war require prompt and unquestioning obedience. You may sometimes think the command arbitrary and the officer supercilious, but it is yours to obey. An undisciplined army is a curse to its friends and a derision to its foes. Give your whole influence, therefore, to the maintenance of lawful authority and strict order. Let your superiors feel that whatever they entrust to you will be faithfully done. Composed of such soldiers, and led by skilful and brave commanders, our army, by the blessing of God, will never be defeated. It is, moreover, engaged in a holy cause, and must triumph.

3. Try to maintain your Christian profession among your comrades. I need not caution you against strong drink as useless and hurtful, nor against profanity, so common among soldiers. Both these practices you abhor. Aim to take at once a decided stand for God. If practicable, have prayers regularly in your tent, or unite with your fellow-disciples in prayer-meetings in the camp. Should preaching be accessible, always be a hearer. Let the world know that you are a Christian. Read a chapter in the New Testament which your mother gave you, every morning and evening when you can, and engage in secret prayer to God for his Holy Spirit to guide and sustain you. I would rather hear of your death than of the shipwreck of your faith and good conscience.

4. As you will come into habitual contact with men of every grade, make special associates of those whose influence on your character is felt to be good. Some men love to tell extravagant stories, to indulge in vulgar wit, to exult in a swaggering carriage, to pride themselves on their coarse manners, to boast of their heroism, and to give utterance to feelings of revenge against the enemy. All this is injurious to young and impressible minds. If you admire such things, you will insensibly imitate them, and imitation will work gradual but certain detriment to your character. Other men are refined without being affected. They can relax into occasional pleasantries, without violating modesty. They can be loyal to their government without indulging private hatred against her foes. They can be cool and brave in battle, and not be braggarts in the absence of danger. Above all, they can be humble, spiritual, and active Christians, and yet mingle in the stirring and perilous duties of soldier life. Let these be your companions and models. You will thus return from the dangers of camp without a blemish on your name.

5. Should it be your lot to enter into an engagement with the enemy, lift up your heart in secret ejaculations to the ever-present and good Being, that He will protect you from sudden death; or, if you fall, that He will receive your departing spirit, cleansed in the blood of Jesus, into His kingdom. It is better to trust in the Lord than to put confidence in princes. Commit your eternal interests, therefore, to the keeping of the Almighty Savior. You should not, even in the hour of deadly conflict, cherish personal rage against the enemy, any more than an officer of the law hates

the victim of the law. How often does a victorious army tenderly care for the dead and wounded of the vanquished? War is a tremendous scourge which Providence sometimes uses to chastise proud and wicked nations. Both parties must suffer, even though one may get the advantage. There is no occasion, then, for adding to the intrinsic evils of the system the odious feature of animosity to individuals. In the ranks of the foe are thousands of plain men who do not understand the principles for which we are struggling. They are deceived by artful demagogues into a posture of hostility to those whom, knowing, they would love. It is against such men that you may perhaps be arrayed, and the laws of war do not forbid you to pity them, even in the act of destroying them. It is more important that we should exhibit a proper temper in this unfortunate contest, because many professed Christians and ministers of the Gospel at the North are breathing out, in their very prayers and sermons, threatening and slaughter against us! Oh! how painful that a gray-headed pastor should publicly exclaim, "I would hang them as soon as I would shoot a mad dog."

6. Providence has placed you in the midst of thoughtless and unpardoned men. What a beautiful thing it would be if you could be winsome of them to the Savior! Will you not try? You will have many opportunities of speaking a word in season. The sick, you may comfort; the wavering, you may confirm; the backslidden, you may reclaim; the weary and heavy laden, you may point to Jesus for rest to the soul. It is not presumptuous for a young man, kindly and meekly, to commend the Gospel to his brother soldiers. The hardest of them will not repel a gentle approach, made in private. And many of them would doubtless be glad to have the subject introduced to them. They desire to hear of Jesus, but they lack courage to inquire of his people. An unusually large proportion of pious men have entered the army, and I trust they will give a new complexion to military life. Let them search out each other, and establish a fraternity among all the worshippers of God. To interchange religious views and administer brotherly counsel will be mutually edifying. "He that watereth shall be watered also himself." And now, as a soldier has but little leisure, I will not occupy you longer. Be assured that every morning and evening we remember you, at the family altar, to our Father in Heaven. We pray for a "speedy, just, and honorable peace," and for the safe return of all the volunteers to their loved homes. All the children speak often of "brother," and hear your letters read with intense interest. That God Almighty may be your shield and your exceeding great reward is the constant prayer of your loving father.

Ro. RYLAND. (his father)

39 The Case for Christian Education

Ephesians 6:4 And, ye fathers . . . bring them up in the nurture and admonition of the Lord.



First, Christian parents are to be a family under God, not a family under the State.

A family under God arranges itself under the authority of the original dominion mandate (Genesis 1:26-28) and its reconstitution under Christ (Matthew 28:19-20). It is under the jurisdiction of the LORD God, not the government. At no time did God ever give the State

authority over the education of children.

Further, there is not even one word in the United States Constitution that grants authority to the Federal Government to establish a Department of Education. Because the government does not obey its own law, "the government is not your friend," said Judge Napolitano. Any State that presumes to have authority over the nation's educational system is overreaching and in rebellion against the LORD God and its own fundamental law (Psalm 2:1-2: 94:20).

The greatest bulwark against an overreaching government, as tyrants know, is a religious population. That is because religious people form communities of interest adverse to government control of their lives; religious communities rely on their families and each other rather than an overarching government utilizing force ~ Ben Shapiro, Conservative Commentator.

Second, Christian parents are under the law-order of the LORD God, not the law-order of the State.

There is one God and one Source of law, the LORD God. The family is under duty to educate their children for Christ. They have authority because they are under authority. All de jure authority comes from Christ and the family under God proceeds under his dominion mandate (Matthew 28:19-20). There is no higher authority than Scripture, and the Scripture clearly assigns education to the family. How they do this may differ from family to family, but the commission remains:

"bring them up in the nurture and admonition of the Lord." The text does not say *"bring them up in the nurture and admonition of the State."*

Third, Christian parents are under command to educate their children for Christ.

Christian education is not a choice. Christian education is not a good idea, a choice of the rich, or one of the options on the table. It is a command! God has already made the choice. It need only be obeyed. A God-honoring, Christ-exalting, Bible-based liberal education is the will of God for every Christian family. When Christ said, "Seek first the kingdom of God," or pray, "Thy kingdom⁴¹ come," He was telling Christian parents to arrange themselves under His rule and kingdom law. The kingdom is not a place but a jurisdiction. To be in God's kingdom is to be under His command.

Fourth, Christian education is the ONLY source of wisdom and knowledge.

"The fear of the Lord is the beginning of wisdom," writes Solomon. Since God is the Creator of all things, and the Author of Holy Scripture, all learning is a study of God's universe and His Revelation in the Bible. All true wisdom and knowledge find their Source in the LORD God. Thus, all happiness, perspective, and wisdom are bound up in a child's Creator, His creation, and his law-order. Because knowledge is not correlated with Christ, there is no wisdom in America's schools. It isn't called the "Public Fool System" for nothing.

"The school system that ignores God teaches its pupils to ignore God; and this is not neutrality. It is the worst form of antagonism, for it judges God to be unimportant and irrelevant in human affairs. This is atheism." Gordon H. Clark

Fifth, there is a curse on public education because it educates its youth under the Poisonous Tree teaching them that they can be gods.

John Witherspoon, President of Princeton, had it correct.

*"Cursed be all that learning that is contrary to the cross of Christ."
(John Witherspoon, President of Princeton)*

Today's "liberal" educational system knows no boundaries and no restraints. No perversion of the Poisonous Tree must go unexplored: Sodomy, lesbianism, multiple-sex partners, necromancy, pederasty, paraphilia, autogynephilia, chronophilia, and other perversions too numerous to name.

⁴¹ The kingdom of God is the rule of God, the authority of God, the rule and reign of the Lord Jesus Christ in His session at the right hand of God and His written law, the Word of God.

An evolutionary-based education is indoctrination into the BIG LIE of the 19th Century. If man is a product of Time + Chance then there is no right or wrong, good or evil. Everything is relative. Make up your own religion; choose your own values; become a god they say. Grow in self-esteem. Public education is positivistic, pragmatic, and anti-Christian. Anti-Christians control the system. Further, these radical fanatics are not only anti-Christ, but anti-knowledge: "Nothing is more certain in modern society than the principle there are no absolutes," declared Frederick Moore Vinson. But, if there is no absolute knowledge about God and from God, then the only absolute is man wherein he becomes his own god and his own law and his own source of knowledge--a doctrine of the hissing snake.

Because modern education rejects the creative order, it is in a flight from true knowledge. Modern educators do not seek knowledge, rather they seek power. Modern learning is not education but manipulation and propaganda. History is no longer knowledge of the past but about what the power-pushers want you to believe about history. Public education is a tool of power--an instrument of social controls. Educators are interested in power, and pragmatism controls the network. Even in many churches, the services are not about the knowledge of Christ, but about "What can God do for man?" Whether it is evolution in the sciences or humanism in the humanities or man-made statutes in law, the whole system is a product of the Poisonous Tree-- an entire system in rebellion against God's law-order. It is under the curse.

"A watchful eye must be kept on ourselves lest while we are building ideal monuments of Renown and Bliss here we neglect to have our names enrolled in the Annals of Heaven." (James Madison, 4th U.S. President.

Sixth, Christian education, where children learn about the LORD God and His love in Christ and their duty to honor their parents, is priceless.

The health of souls depends on it. Family happiness depends on it. The health of society depends on it. Christian education is expensive in that the family must focus all its resources on training children. But then, nothing valuable comes free. It cost Christ His life to create the family of God, and it will cost a Christian parent their precious all to raise their children for the glory of God. So, if Christian education seems expensive, it is supposed to be. The cross was expensive.

Seventh, public education is no longer an option for Christian parents.

It used to be that public education meant "Christian education," learning the "Ten Commandments" and exploring God's Universe. Children learned to read using Duffy's Reader, a Bible-based phonetic program. But, John Dewey, the infamous antichrist atheist, the Father of Modern Education changed everything. Education is now controlled by liberals (Zionists) in the New World Order. Its goals are secular,

humanistic, and Fascist. State education is designed to produce compliant tax-paying statist; i.e., people who look to the government to create prosperity and happiness. This is the goal of the Fascist United States Department of Education.

"The United States system of national popular education will be the most efficient and wide instrument for the propagation of Atheism which the world has ever seen." A. A. Hodge

Eight, Christian education is safe, especially homeschooling.

Public schools are the most dangerous place to send children. Besides school shootings, public schools are a cesspool of immorality and brainwashing. Lusty boys eye the girls, and girls prance for popularity. Theft, profanity, drugs, alcohol, hazing, and physical violence are commonplace. Statists' teachers under the banner of neutrality are eager to enlist children into their political religion. Whether we are talking about a child's mind, emotions, or body, the public schools are the most dangerous place on the planet. Christian homes, on the other hand, are noted for their honor to parents, safety, wholesome speech, noble ideals, laughter, and training in practical life skills.

Ninth, Christian schools, homeschooling or otherwise, consistently out-perform their public school counterparts.

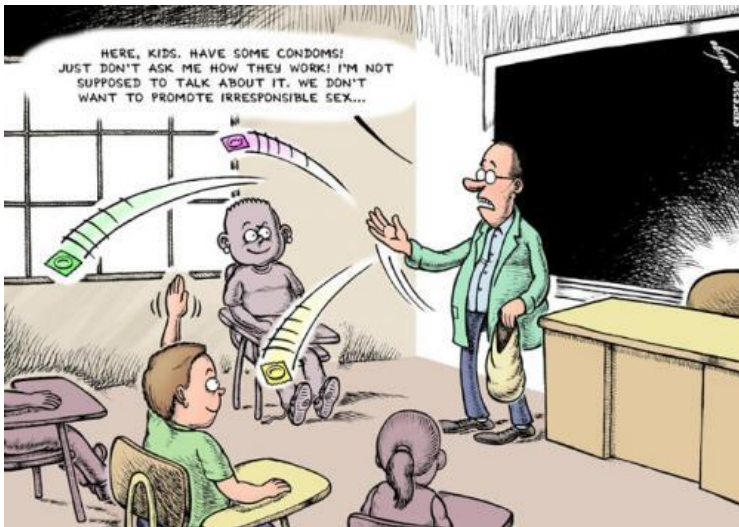
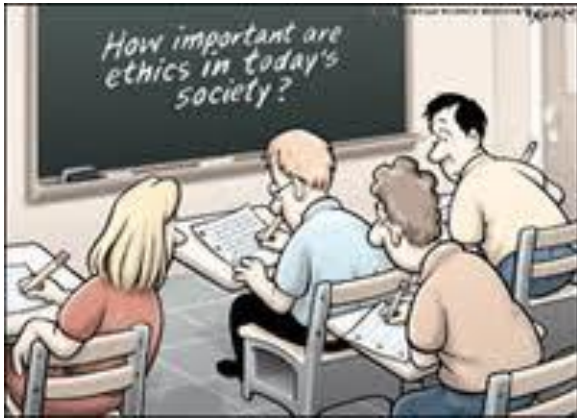
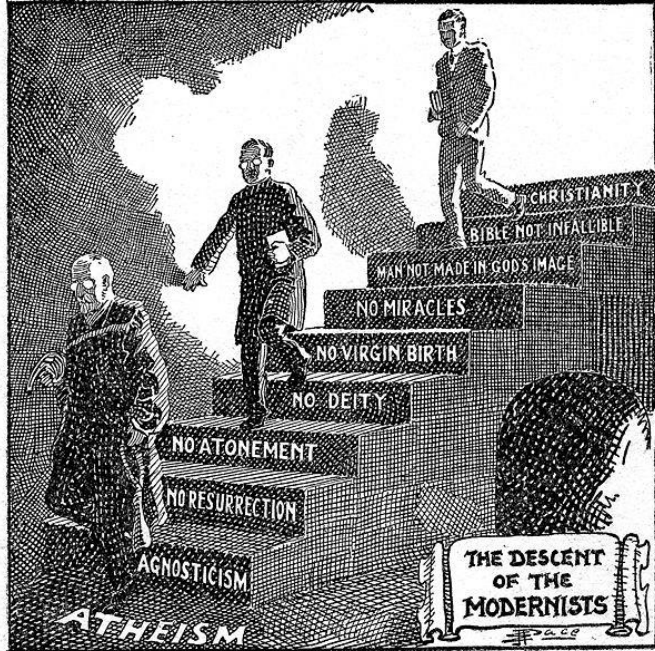
Test scores in Christian schools and homeschools are way above the scores of students in public schools. Public schools are less rigorous than they once were. Teachers concentrate their attention on underachievers. Eighty percent of the day is spent in just trying to organize thirty students to get out their books, sharpen their pencils, write their names on papers, and handing in assignments in an orderly fashion. A home-schooling parent can literally accomplish in two hours what a public school teacher does in six hours. The "No Child Left Behind" literally means no child shall be left free and able to think for themselves.

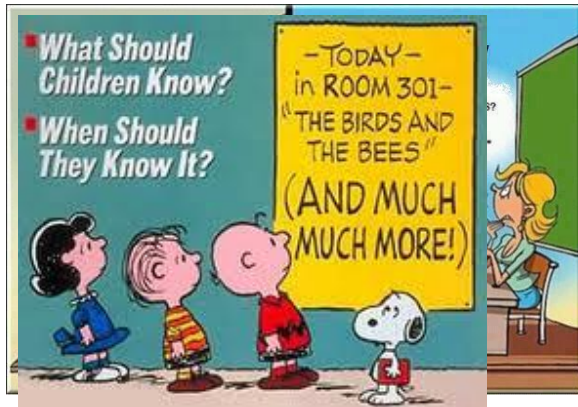
In conclusion, Christian education is not a great option. It is part of the dominion mandate to "go into all the world and make disciples" for Christ.

© Randy Glasbergen.
www.glasbergen.com

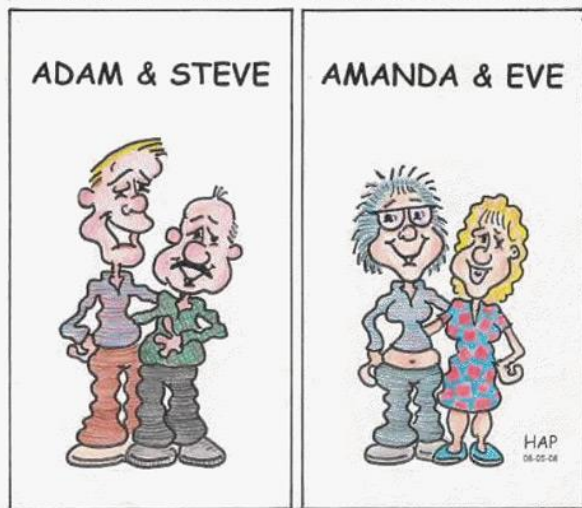


"I don't know all Ten Commandments.
The only ones I remember are 'settle down',
'act your age' and 'take that out of your mouth'."

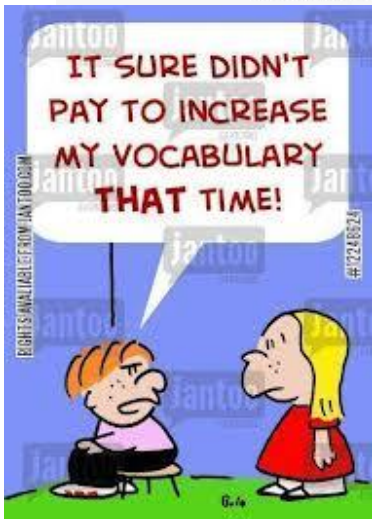
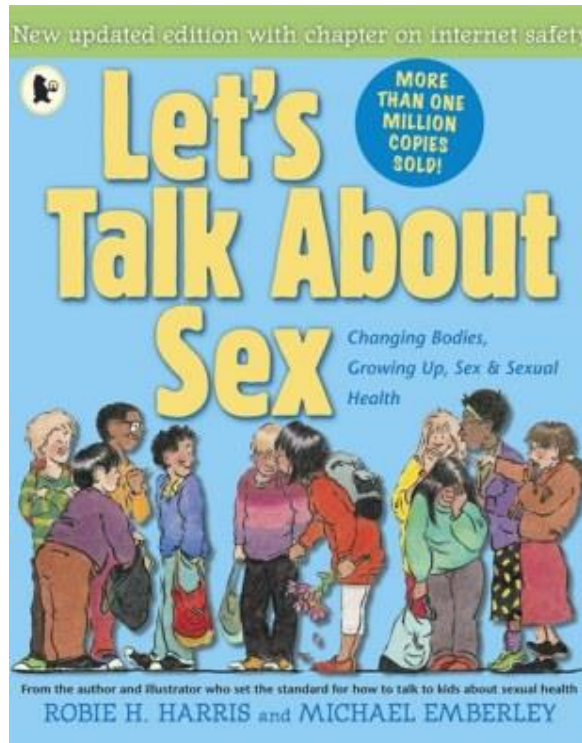




PHONY MATRIMONY BY HAP



"Haven't you read, that at the beginning the Creator made them male and female, and said 'For this reason a man will leave his father and mother and be united to his wife, and the two will become one flesh'? So they are no longer two, but one. Therefore what God has joined together, let man not separate."
 -Matthew 19:4-6 (NIV)
WWW.HAPTOON.COM



40 God's Model Family

Rechabites that Honored their Holy Patriarch

*Jeremiah 35:6 " . . . for Jonadab the son of Rechab, our father,
commanded us . . ."*



Before us is a classic man and a model family. The Rechabites are a model of sons obeying the 5th Commandment; of sons honoring their patriarch and of faithfulness to godly instruction despite allurements to do otherwise.

Those were terrible times, the worst of times. The demoralization of the nation was complete. Lawlessness and dissipation swallowed up

society. Jerusalem was under siege by Babylon and refugees fled to Jerusalem for safety. During the siege (589-596 B.C.), God ordered Jeremiah to assemble the sons of Jonadab (the Rechabites) in the temple in closed chambers, and offer them wine to drink. The sons of Jonadab refused the wine because their father had commanded the entire clan not to do so.

While in a state of awe, the Word of the Lord came to Jeremiah wherein the LORD God held up the Rechabites as an example of obedience in contrast to the delinquency of Israel. In Jeremiah's message, he announced that God would save and honor this family because they faithfully obeyed the command of their deceased father.

How many fathers are like Jonadab, and how many sons today do you know that carefully follow their father's instructions while alive, much less dead? Oh, that fathers today would be as wise as Jonadab and model their family after his example. Oh, that fathers had sons like Jonadab!

First, Jonadab was a discerning leader of his family.

Remembering God's commandment to love the Lord with all his heart, mind, and soul, Jonadab provided spiritual leadership to his sons. Concerned about separation and holiness, Jonadab laid down laws for his grown sons and their families to not drink wine, grow vineyards, or build houses to live in. Further, he ordered them to dwell in tents and live as Bedouins in the land. Even when his sons were brought into the temple complex by Jeremiah and offered wine, they refused the beverage out of deference to their father. Jonadab was not afraid to set limits, to issue orders,

or to risk offending his children. He forbids them to do what other Israelite children were doing--going to parties and having a "good time" with their nominal religious friends.

Second, Jonadab was not a permissive parent.

Jonadab was not a legalist nor was he an authoritarian parent inclined to micromanage manage the lives of his sons. His commands were few. Though there is nothing immoral about drinking an occasional glass of wine, Jonadab ordered his family not to do so; that is, he placed limits on his children. Though other fathers permitted their sons and daughters to drink wine and encouraged them to plant vineyards and build homes, Jonadab knew that this lifestyle set them on a path toward the Poisonous Tree. He was concerned about holiness in an unholy age. Thus, he laid down rules, marked out boundaries, and set limits in order to prevent them from being poisoned by the hissing serpent.

To be a good father and mother requires that the parents defer many of their own needs and desires in favor of the needs of their children. As a consequence of this sacrifice, conscientious parents develop a nobility of character and learn to put into practice the selfless truths taught by the Savior Himself. ~ James E. Faust

Third, Jonadab was a holy man and a student of the culture.

He didn't go through life a free spirit ignoring the needs of his family. He wasn't interested in being a "cool" parent or a "friend" to his children. Rather, he sought to be a responsible patriarch. He saw himself under the authority of the LORD God with a duty to guide his family and protect them from the hissing snake at the Poisonous Tree.

Jonadab analyzed the demoralization of his country and came up with a plan to protect his family from the dissipation he observed among his countrymen. In looking at the moral laxity and revelry of men, he must have asked himself, "What is causing the corruption of our nation?" He observed that behind the dissipation and want of devotion to God was an open bottle of wine. He put two and two together: depraved people drink lots of wine; wines come from grapes; grapes are grown in vineyards; vineyards are managed by people who live in stone houses; people who live in stones houses live disorderly lives. Thus, he set a course and rowed upstream away from the norm. Live the life of a Bedouin.

Fourth, Jonadab's had sons that honored him.

Jonadab gave his adult sons instructions, and amazingly they obeyed! These sons faced the same pressures from their peers that modern youth face. Surely, they were invited to wine festivals, harvest parties, and seasonal celebrations. Surely, there were pressures to be liked, dress alike, and act like their neighbors. But, they

obeyed their father, and must have said "No!" to the youth culture that dominated the nation.

This is a model family. There is no hint in the text that Jonadab was an overcontrolling grandfather micromanaging every aspect of his children's lives. Rather, his instructions were limited and few—but, reasonable and sensible instructions necessary for holiness in times of apostasy.

So powerful was Jonadab, his family leadership became **the model for the nation**.

So wonderful was the honor his sons showed to their father, that God promised that this family would never lack a man to stand before Him. So wise was the command of this man, that his leadership was memorialized forever in the Word of God. So simple and pure was the obedience of these sons and their families to their patriarch, God blessed them with prosperity and happiness.

Two powerful lessons come to mind: First, don't be a permissive parent; rather, chart a course and provide leadership for your family; and second, honor your father and mother. The honor these adult children showed for the spiritual leadership of their departed father is nothing short of spectacular. ***Oh, that all sons would honor their father as Rechabites honored theirs.***

In conclusion, we are living in terrible times--times of moral laxity, recklessness, and self-indulgence. Children are texting, surfing the web, alone in front of the television being bombarded with silliness and lies. Youth attend party after party with their celebratory "friends." Few are pursuing the excellence of Christ. The age calls for fathers like Jonadab with insight and courage--men that are unashamedly non-permissive--men with reasonable strictness--men with 20/20 spiritual vision and radical leadership--men who are not afraid of offending their children and who will set rules and limits on their sons.

The Spirit weeps . . . and cries out to sons to honor their father as the Rechabites honored their father. No one loves you as much as your parents. Sons would do well to do all they can to appropriate their parent's wisdom and follow it. The goal, after all, is not to be happy in one's self-indulgence, but to be holy in the crosswalk of Christ where obedience has its reward (Mark 8:35; Luke 9:24; Matthew 16:24).

Jeremiah 35:18-19 But to the house of the Rechabites Jeremiah said, "Thus says the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel: Because you have obeyed the command of Jonadab your father and kept all his precepts and done all that he commanded you, therefore thus says the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel: Jonadab the son of Rechab shall never lack a man to stand before me."

41 Grace Upon a Family Under God

The Story of Jacob



If a man is going to be successful as a father and protect his little ship from pirates and marauders, he's going to have to find a way to secure the blessing of God upon his life and family. Who has the wisdom and power to steer his ship through pirate-infested waters against Captain Blackbeard sailing on Queen Anne's Revenge with his forty canons of thundering destruction? He needs a Captain that loves him and knows how to combat piracy. Jacob was such a man! His life was anointed with grace and God was pleased to own the title, "The God of Jacob."

Born near a serpent's nest of troubles, Jacob's life became a sermon on the providence. The winds of adversity blew against him, and he achieved greatness most men only dream about. His name is forever included in the inscription, "*the Lord the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob.*" (Matthew 20:37). For those fathers in search of God's blessing for their family, it is imperative to study his life. Almost half of the Book of Genesis is dedicated to God's work in this patriarchal family.

Jacob was a man nobody loved.

He had a father that neglected him, a brother who hated him, a mother with the kind of love that could ruin a son, an uncle who could out shuffle a Nevada card shark, two wives who fought for his affection in a sisterly rivalry that would make the Mary and Anne Boleyn sisters look like soul mates, and sons who would qualify for hit men with Fat Tony Salerno. Likewise, the man God loves may find himself living among people severely infected by the fruit of the Poisonous Tree

God chose to love Jacob before he was born ~ "As it is written, Jacob have I loved, but Esau have I hated."

Before Jacob had done either good or evil, God set his affection on Jacob and determined to do him good. A man seeking God's blessing would do well to remember that *God loves, not because of who we are, but because of who He is--a God of love.* Seek His love; trust His love (Romans 9:13: 1 John 4:7ff).

Third, objects of God's love are born into flawed families.

Jacob had the best of families and the worst of families. He was blessed to have perhaps the godliest grandfather any man has ever had. His parents were men and women of faith who knew God and who experienced His providential care in their lives. His was a "Christian home" . . . but it was not without its flaws.

Over time Isaac grew blind, and physical blindness typified his spiritual condition. His brother Esau was a cross between a star quarterback and James Bond under the sheets of every foxy Bedouin with raven-black hair tumbling down her shoulders. His mother appears to have mastered the art of manipulation. Like so many Christian families, there was a mixture of the holy and the profane, the spiritual and the carnal, the word of God and the thoughts from the hissing snake.

The family was an object of God's love, but toxins from the Poisonous Tree had infected the hearts and minds of its members. Likewise, objects of God's love often come from imperfect families. Men would do well to thank God for their parents, and accept responsibility for their own responses to negative events that may have occurred during their childhood. No family can totally escape the viral affects from the Poisonous Tree at work in each member of the family. But, they can trust God for His remedy and His grace.

The man God loves chooses to live a life of integrity even though surrounded by misfits and madmen.

It seems to be fashionable for modern preachers to mock and slander Jacob as some kind of shyster with more snake oil than a used car salesman. But, this presentation is lopsided if not completely errant. Jacob's name means "heal supplanter," or "footprint." It is the same word used in Genesis 3:15 of Christ wherein He would crush the head of the serpent with his heel. Jacob is called a "plain" man in Genesis 25:27. The word "plain" (tam) means "whole," or "healthy," or "beautiful" or "integrity." Unlike his proud womanizing brother, Jacob was a man of integrity--a man with ambitions to take the high road and to avoid the low road--ambitions that would be tested again and again by devils in his own family. Likewise, the man who would enjoy God's blessings would do well to set his compass toward the North Star of Integrity.

The man whom God loves knows he needs God's blessing (25-27).

With holes in his socks sort of speak, Jacob knew he needed Christ. And, this is the beauty of Jacob. Unlike most men who do not know they have warts and blemishes, Jacob knew he was an ugly duckling. But, he wanted to be a swan. Neglected by his father, and favored by his mother, the man sought the blessing of Almighty God. In his adult years, he purchased the "Birthright" from Esau for a bowl lintels. No, he did not deceive his brother or trick him. He made a shrewd contract offer, and his careless, sensual brother accepted it. The problem was Esau's, not Jacob's. Esau despised his birthright; that is, he had no real heart for the things of God and such

mundane things as the Messianic Blessing. A proud, arrogant man's-man, Esau had no need for God. Jacob, on the other hand, was desperate for God's blessing and assistance in life. Some have criticized Christians as using Christ as a crutch; with Jacob, Christ was his whole wheelchair!

God had revealed to Isaac and Rebecca that Jacob would be the recipient of the Patriarchal Blessing (25:23). But, when it became time to formalize that blessing, Isaac by-passed the Prophetic Word and prepared to give it to his carnal son, Esau. Rebecca, overhearing the instruction for a ceremonial meal, ordered Jacob to slaughter two young goats so she could prepare a banquet for Isaac and trick him into pronouncing the blessing on Jacob. What is a young man supposed to do when his father's instructions are as crooked a Robin Hood's bow and his mother has a plan to straighten the arch? To do nothing was disaster. Jacob obeyed. And, he obtained the birthright . . . but at so great a cost. The hoax split the family and rained death on relationships. Forced to flee, Jacob headed for Padam-Aram to find a bride among Rebecca's relatives.

The man God loves is kingdom minded; i.e. he has seen the way things are supposed to be (27:10-22).

Separated from his family, in a strange part of the country, alone with a fountain full of fears, Jacob fell into a deep asleep. In his dream, he saw a giant staircase with white-robed angels ascending and descending upon that place with an order and dignity that would impress a perfectionist with an obsessive-compulsive disorder. It was the "House of God"--so different from the chaos on earth. The man God loves does not need dreams or self-authenticating experiences, but he does need to meditate often on the Holy Scripture and to permit the Spirit of God to show him the things of God.

The man God loves may be the victim of deceit and treachery in order that he might grow in discernment and integrity.

Arriving in Haran, Jacob became wide-eyed and bushy-tailed when he met beautiful young Rachael, daughter of his Uncle Laban. Shortly thereafter, Jacob negotiated a marriage contract with his uncle Laban . . . but Laban, having been infected by the fruit of the Poisonous Tree, had a shrewdness about him that would make Scrooge look like a saint. Out gunned and out matched, Laban locked Jacob into a lopsided twenty-one year contract for his own narcissistic purposes. This was a man that had more hocus-pocus than a Nevada magician.

A man of integrity, Jacob served his time. Forced to apply the laws of deception in this family war to increase his own wealth, Jacob managed to establish a lawful, profitable sub-corporation on Laban's ranch. Having been the victim of Laban's shell games and chicanery, Jacob secretly escaped the clutches of uncle with his two wives, children, and much cattle. Wiser and more discerning, he returned to

Beersheba a man--a mature man favored by the Lord. Likewise, the object of God's love would do well to understand that all his trials are designed to sharpen discernment and to deepen his commitment to the LORD God.

The man God loves would do well to understand that the path to Christian maturity travels through the valley of Achor (trouble).

The Scripture speaks of those who are not willing to be "emptied from vessel to vessel" (Jeremiah 48:11); that is, those who resist God's plan of sanctification for them. Without exception, all of God's holy ones are refined through trials. All are purified by being poured from vessel to vessel. Consider Jacob's trials in his own home trying to manage two rival sisters engaged in a baby contest to win the affection of Jacob (30); his bitter, secret escape from his uncle who acted more like a mob boss than a relative (31); the terror that seized him when he discovered his brother Esau was coming to meet him (32); the rape of his daughter Dinah and the murder of the men of Shechem by Simeon and Levi; the death of Rachael (35); incest by Reuben; messy prostitution of Tamar and incest by Judah; the treachery of his own sons in the plot to murder Joseph; the famine and near loss of the family business; and the transfer of the family corporation to Egypt.

So painful and chilling were Jacob's trials that when Jerusalem was under the horrible siege by Babylon, Jeremiah refers to the death camp as "the time of Jacob's trouble" (30:7). But, through it all, God was not only with Jacob, but God was also in charge of the thermostat in the furnace. Likewise, the object of God's love would do well to accept trials from the hand of God as his tool to mature the man and to drive him into deeper dependence on Him.

The man God loves must wrestle with Christ to secure His blessing on his family.

Genesis 32:24 And Jacob was left alone; and there wrestled a man with him until the breaking of the day.

When Jacob heard his brother was traveling north to meet him, Jacob went into full panic mode. The last time he saw his brother, Esau was working on an assassination plan to snuff him out. His fear was completely justified. Reviewing the evidence, Jacob thought his brother was coming to fulfill the murderous plot that was hatched when both were living with Isaac and Rebecca. Jacob divided his family into two groups and camped between them, alone!

Suddenly, without warning, the Angel of the Covenant approaches his camp, and Jacob finds himself locked into a contest with the Angel of God not unlike a championship wrestling bout between Hulk Hogan and Andre the Giant. It was a championship match between Jacob, the heel grabber, a.k.a. the Wily Weasel from the Wilderness of Beersheba, the Grand Slam from Padan Aram. His opponent was none other than the King of kings, the Lord of lords, the Lion of Judah, the Hound

of Heaven, the Heavenly Hercules. Alone, the two champions locked arms in mortal combat, neither giving an inch. So impressed was the angel with Jacob's tenacity, that he blessed Jacob, but not before dislocating his hip and changing his name to "Israel," Prince of God. Likewise, the object of God's love must understand that the blessing of God comes by wrestling it out with God. The match is never easy and often comes with a bitter price. The father seeking God's blessing may hobble the rest his life from his confrontations with God Almighty.

The man God loves has imperfect children.

The Holy Scripture says that "*children go astray from the womb.*" All have been bitten by the serpent. All are partakers of Adam's sin. His children are sinners, and it is his job to lead them to Christ and the tree of life. Look at Jacob's family. His wives were bitter, jealous rivals. His daughter Dinah was raped by a prince at Shechem. His two sons, Levi and Simeon embarked on vigilante justice, hatched a fraud, and treacherously murdered dozens of men at Shechem shaming Jacob's reputation. His oldest son committed incest with his concubine. His eleven sons hated Him, were jealous of each other, and hatched a plan to murder Joseph but sold him as a slave to slave traders headed to Egypt, and they lied to their father. God executed two of his grandsons, Er and Onan, for rebellion and wickedness. His son Judah committed incest with his daughter-in-law, Tamar, posing as a prostitute.

And, if this is not bewildering enough, consider this: *Jacob's family was the family of God*, heirs of the Covenant with Abraham, God's chosen, the ones through whom He was going to change the world through the Lord Jesus Christ. How would you like to pastor this company of misfits? The point is this: *the man God loves must be delivered from idealism about his children.* All have been bitten by the serpent and carry with them the potential for idolatry, fornication, incest, adultery, lying, deception, murder, and fraud. The best parenting in the world cannot prevent the toxins from the Poisonous Tree infecting the children they love. People are born sinners, and until God saves them, they will do what sinners do. But, it is not hopeless, and there is no need to be depressed. God saves sinners. He was at work in this family and Genesis ends with an amazing, profound work of grace.

The man God loves will at times experience an eclipse of His love.

Genesis 42:36 And Jacob their father said unto them, Me have ye bereaved of my children: Joseph is not, and Simeon is not, and ye will take Benjamin away: all these things are against me.

Because of the extreme famine that hit that part of the Levant, Jacob's sons were forced to take a trek into Egypt to barter for grain in order to feed their tribe. The famine was pressing in on every family and aged Israel could smell the foul breath of starvation in southern Canaan. Upon their return, Jacob's sons gathered around

their father. Their reports read like an obituary of doom and gloom from the Jail House Blues Publication (Genesis 42:1-36 ff):

Maltreatment: “the Lord of the land spoke harshly to us . . . “ and,

He accused us of being “spies.”

The Ruler of Egypt “put us in prison for three days” and,

Let us out on probation: “By this I will know you are honest men . . .”

Unless we appear in his court, we will “die” {42:20}; and,

“He took Simeon from *us* and bound him” in jail as a collateral; and,

We will surely be indicted for grand theft because there was “money in our sack” (42:27); and, when we discovered the money, our “hearts sank” (42:28).

We can’t go down to Egypt again unless we bring our “younger brother to” Ruler of Egypt.

No doubt, this was a dark day in Jacob’s life. You can feel Jacob’s faith slipping away like the air out of a punctured tire. The sunshine in his life disappeared behind clouds of despair. The cool winter of an arctic blizzard swept over his soul. “All these things be against me” he moaned. But, God’s chosen one was **100% WRONG!**

Jacob blurted out, “You have bereaved me!” The smoke of evil canons thundering on his battlefield blinded him to the fact that the LORD God was in total command of his life, and that he was going to live out his days in safety, happiness, and in honor.

Jacob groaned again, “Joseph is no more.” But, the prince with God had no idea that Joseph was alive and the Ruler of Egypt, the Prime Minister of the richest, wealthiest, most powerful nation on earth. Joseph was not only in a position of power, but he was going to save his entire family from the bitterness of famine.

Jacob despaired: “Simeon is no more.” But, Simeon was very much alive and never safer than under the custody of his brother Joseph.

Jacob rebutted: “You would take Benjamin” from me.” Little did he know that he and all his sons would be reconciled and live out their days together as one happy family in the luscious green pastureland of the Nile Delta.

Jacob concluded, “All these things are against me” not knowing that God was working all things together for good” (Romans 8”28); that soon, all his worries would turn into dust and all his hopes into nuggets of gold.

Thus, the man God loves must stand on this rock:

Romans 8:31 If God be for us, who can be against us?

The man God loves will have his reward (46-50).

Judah reborn, Joseph discovered, Benjamin recovered, the entire family safe in the land of Egypt from the seven-year famine, "*redeemed from all evil*" 48:15), the life of Jacob ends with him leaning on his staff in worship (Hebrews 11:21). His eyes were opened. Through all the troubles, pain and suffering, and through all the sin and neglect and transgression, God was at work delivering his family from the fruits of the Poisonous Tree and saving them for a grand purpose. His family would be called "Israel", Prince with God, and his family was destined to bring forth kings, priests, and saviors. All his prayers, faith, and suffering bore fruit for the glory of God.

Think of it. The son who honored his father the most became the savior of the world!

Jacob had one son that truly honored him, and God used this son to save the nations surrounding the Levant. Jacob lived out his days as prince upon the earth. Upon his death, Jacob received more honor than he had in his entire life--more honor than any father in the Bible. A nation mourned his loss for seventy days (50:3) with "*grievous mourning by the Egyptians*" (50:11). His funeral procession extended from Egypt to Canaan. All the elders of Egypt, Pharaoh's cabinet, administrators, mayors, and Egypt's army with its many chariots and horses marched tearfully behind the bier. Honor, fame, and respect poured forth at his death like whispers of rain.

Finally, the man that God loves relies not upon his own merits, but the grace of God to heal all family wounds (44-45).

The fruits of the Poisonous Tree were real and powerfully demonstrated in Jacob's family: jealousy, manipulation, deceit, rape, incest, rage, anger, and murder. What could be worse? Yet, this is the family God chose to love.

In his grace, he marvelously delivered Joseph from his brother's evil plot, and set him on the throne of Egypt. As vice-regent of the Nile, Joseph went to work to save Egypt from a seven-year famine. Little did Joseph know, that out of his own suffering, God would use him to not only save Egypt, but the whole known world . . . and his own fractured family. In grace, Joseph confronted family sins in a way that purged the entire family. In grace, he revealed himself to his murderous brothers and forgave them. In grace, he brought them to Egypt and gave them the best land in the Nile Delta. In grace he pointed his family to the powerful providence of God. Grace is the key. Grace can undo what sin has caused. Grace can heal family sins. Grace can restore love and trust. Thus, the great lesson to all of Jacob's life is that of grace--grace that heals the effects of the Poisonous Tree.

Oh, my children, make the Lord your Captain and trust God to bestow grace on your family as you travel the seas of life.

Psalm 20:1 May the LORD answer you in the day of trouble! May the name of the God of Jacob protect you!

42 Remember Grace

Part I on Grace

2 Peter 3:18 But grow in the grace and knowledge of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ. To him be the glory both now and to the day of eternity. Amen.

2 Corinthians 8:9 For you know the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, that though he was rich, yet for your sake he became poor, so that you by his poverty might become rich.



Remember grace. Grace can undo the effects of sin in a family under God. Grace can untangle the knots in twisted relationships and heal what the Poisonous Tree has infected.

Like spilled alphabet soup, life is messy! In his grace, the Heavenly Father sent his beloved Son to "save his people from their sins." Our precious Lord Jesus obeyed his Father all the way to the cross. Consequently, believers are saved by grace.

When grace is at work in the family, there is the offering and accepting of apologies. Miscreants admit wrong and seek to make the person they hurt whole; the offended forgives as Christ has forgiven us. When grace is at the family table, the whole family is happy as clams at high tide.

42.1 “Hurts,” “Wounds,” and Psychology

Personally, I do not like the terms “hurts and wounds” because these terms are tools used by psychologists to create an environment of victimization. I was once in a church where everyone was hurt. Practically everyone was talking about their "wounded inner child." What? No predators in this church, only victims? There can be no "hurt" without "hurters." Where there is a true "prey," there must a real "predator." What happened to sinners sinning? To treat everyone like a victim creates an unhealthy climate of victimization. This isn't Biblical!

Even though I do not like the terms “hurts and wounds,” I find these words helpful in describing some of the emotional bruising that takes place in families where people have to bump shoulders in the same house. When sinners rub shoulders with other sinners, there is friction, and friction produces heat. So, the use of terms like “hurts and wounds” can be useful as long as they are connected to Biblical concepts

like "love," "honor," "transgression," "sin," "revenge," and "evil." There is hope when we use Biblical terms because sins can be forgiven, but who can deal with "compulsive disorders," or "mental illness." Use of such terms in a family under God will get the family screw up faster than a line during a child's first fishing lesson. Forget psychology. Get Biblical. If there is an offended party, there must be an offending party. Sin is the cause; grace is the cure.

Why is there friction in families?

In order for relationships to work, they require "integrity," and "trust." The complexities of life require that we trust others. Trust demands integrity. A trust creates responsibility; responsibility requires performance. Trustees have a fiduciary responsibility to fulfill their trust. Consequently, the one doing the trusting goes out on a limb and becomes vulnerable. If the person trusted fails his responsibility, the one trusting experiences "hurt" and "disappointment." Pain in a family member is indicative of a "violation of trust." And, the one doing the hurting has a greater need than the one who is hurt, because relational "pain" indicates a lack of integrity in the one trusted.

If everyone had integrity, did their duty, spoke kindly, and lived unselfishly, friction between member in the home would be nil; but, because families are sinners, intended beneficiaries of a trust often get "smashed" by trustees lacking integrity. The requisite virtue in the home is INTEGRITY. Where there is integrity, happiness and peace reign.

Where there is a lack of integrity, money is mismanaged, anger and criticism roar through the home, and people hold on to their hurts and wounds.

Thus, the need for grace--grace to confront; grace to hear; grace to admit wrong; grace to forgive; grace to grow in integrity.



42.2 Grace is the Key to Healing

By adding grace, broken relationships can be healed. In grace, God forgives us on behalf of Christ. By tapping into God's grace, the aggrieved has the opportunity to be like Christ as an instrument of healing to the sinner: "*By his wounds you have been healed*" (1 Peter 2:24).

By grace the offender will humble himself and seek to repair the broken relationship (Ephesians 2:8, 9). When grace is at work, the offended and the offender will accept the responsibility to repair damage done.

In Galatians 6:1, the text says " Brothers, if anyone is caught in any transgression, you who are spiritual should restore him in a spirit of gentleness." The word "restore" (katartizo) is the same word used of James and John when they were "mending" their nets on the shore of Galilee (Matthew 4:21); that is, relationships require mending from time to time. Mending relationships is the ministry of responsible Christians.

42.3 A Review of Grace

The one under grace knows that God loves him, not because of who he is, but because of Who God is—a God of love (1 John 4:8-10).

He does not seek to be more worthy in order to be loved, but consents to being loved though he is unworthy.

He has stopped trying to be good in order to be accepted because he knows that he is accepted because Christ was good.

He has stopped trying to gain acceptance by his performance because he knows he is accepted by God because of Christ's performance.

He no longer blames himself because Christ took all the blame upon Himself. When in fault in a human relationship, he knows he can accept responsibility for his actions because Christ has accepted the fiduciary responsibility for his sins.

He no longer determines his value based on his past because he knows his value is based on his perfect position in Christ in the present.

He has no shame about his past, because he is too occupied with the glory of being in Christ in the present.

He overcomes failure because he realizes God will not withdraw His favor because of his failure.

He accepts pain as duty to go deeper into the love of Christ in order to be a healing agent towards those who offend him (1 Peter 2:24).

Since Christ has paid our debt and forgiven us so much, surely, we can find it in our hearts to forgive those who have injured us.

43 Grace For the Offended Party

Part II on Grace



It is impossible to have human relationships and not experience disappointment and frustration at times. After all, we live in a maximum liability universe with contracts, duties, and responsibilities. A most difficult part of life, particularly for men, is to acknowledge being hurt by a trustee who has violated a trust. Men tend to toughen up and gloss over emotional pain. When one has been "hurt" or sinned against, that individual must seek to manage hurts (violations of a trust) with integrity and not allow their pain to become an excuse to withdraw love! Anger, swearing, and returning tit for tat are signs that a person has been hurt and is not handling their pain with integrity. God calls us to love (responsibility) at all times.

When grace is at work, the offended accepts the following responsibilities:

Wounded people have the responsibility to make sure they are not being oversensitive.

Over sensitive people have their feelers out and are easily offended by the imperfect behavior of others. This kind of "hurt" is the result of eating too many marshmallows and not eating enough steak. God calls us not only to be tender, but to be tough. Grace is not "easily provoked" (1 Corinthians 13:5).

Over sensitive people claim rights they do not have. Paul called himself a "doulos" or bondservant of Christ. Bondservants have no rights. Being overworked and underappreciated is the mark of a good servant of Jesus Christ.

Wounded people have the responsibility to make sure they are not being perfectionists.

Perfectionists are almost always disappointed by others. They have difficulty relating to imperfect people who live in an imperfect world. They possess *unreal expectations* and make life difficult for everyone around them. They have expectations that no normal person can fulfill. Because perfectionists are legalistic, they are easily disappointed and hurt by the defects and imperfections of other people. A five year old girl cannot be expected to perform like a ten year old girl. A fifteen year old boy will never repair dad's lawnmower like a professional small engine mechanic. Perfectionists must learn what the word "grace" means and apply

it generously in their relationships. *Grace releases people from impossible standards.*

Hebrews 7:18 On the one hand, a former commandment is set aside because of its weakness and uselessness.

Wounded people have the responsibility to recognize their hurt and analyze why they feel the way they do.

They must ask, "Do I feel hurt because I have rights God has not given me or because my expectations are too high, or do I feel hurt because of a violation of a trust?" That is, the wounded person must evaluate their pain to see if a violation of trust has occurred or if they are just being too sensitive. The former needs to be confronted; that latter means one must mature emotionally.

Jesus said, "whoso shall offend one of these little ones which believe in me, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and that he were drowned in the depth of the sea." The word "offend" is the Greek word *scandalon* from which our English word "scandal" is derived. The term "offend" here is not talking about petty, emotional discomfort we all feel from time to time in a given relationship, but outright scandals like theft, slander, and rape. Scandals involve crime and serious violations of trust. This mature Christian discerns between inconsequential, trivial emotional discomfort and real, substantial violations of trust the Bible calls "sin" or "transgression." That is, an "offense" is a serious breach of the Ten Commandments.

Wounded people must recognize that hurt, emotional pain, is God calling them to go deeper into love.

If one feels hurt because one's rights were stepped on, then God is calling that one to yield their rights. If the aggrieved feels hurt because a trust has been violated, then God is calling them to love their brother and to confront him for their serious violation of a trust. The one doing the "hurting" has a greater need than the aggrieved. One must learn to interpret pain correctly. If the aggrieved is hurt because of the lack of integrity of a family member, then the offender has the greater need--the need to grow in integrity, grit, and responsibility.

Wounded people have the responsibility to manage their pain responsibly.

The aggrieved must share with the offender how they have been hurt so the offender can recognize the pain he/she caused and repair his breach of integrity. This principle assumes the relationship is valuable and worth preserving. In grace, the Lord Jesus came to "seek and to save the lost" (Luke 19:10). Though mankind sinned against God and "hurt" (grieved) Him, God in his grace and love, sent Jesus to mediate between himself and the sinner.

Wounded people must never use pain as an excuse to withdraw love or to hurt people back.

Hurt people are often the most dangerous people in the family. Hurt people tend to retaliate, "eye for eye," and multiply pain in others. The key for "hurt" people is **NEVER ALLOW HURT TO BECOME AN EXCUSE TO WITHDRAW LOVE or to retaliate by multiplying pain. Keep short accounts. Confront offenders. Clarify! Communicate! Admit wrong. Ask for forgiveness. Accept forgiveness, and grow in integrity. Heal the hurts you cause. This is grace in action.** "Hurt" should not be used as an excuse to give others the "silent treatment" or launch out and batter the wrongdoer. Emotional pity parties, silence, distance, stand-off-ish-ness, withdrawal, divorce, and giving another the "cold shoulder" are signs that one is not walking in love.

Wounded people must not to allow "hurt" to become an excuse to sin.

Revenge, yelling, shouting back, and giving "tit for tat" is sin. God challenges the wounded to not be "overcome by evil, but overcome evil with good"

"Vengeance is mine . . ." says the Lord. When a hurt person gives into their feelings and sins, they become the "predator." For this reason, "hurt" people are the most dangerous people in the family--Absalom being an example, Esau being another (Romans 12:19-21; 2 Samuel 14; Genesis 27:41).

Genesis 27:41 Now Esau hated Jacob because of the blessing with which his father had blessed him, and Esau said to himself, "The days of mourning for my father are approaching; then I will kill my brother Jacob."

The wounded must beware of hurt festering into spiritual gangrene and turning into bitterness.

*Deuteronomy 29:18-29 **Beware** lest there be among you a man or woman or clan or tribe whose heart is turning away today from the LORD our God to go and serve the gods of those nations. **Beware** lest there be among you **a root bearing poisonous and bitter fruit**, one who, when he hears the words of this sworn covenant, blesses himself in his heart, saying, 'I shall be safe, though **I walk in the stubbornness of my heart.**' This will lead to the sweeping away of moist and dry alike.*

*Hebrews 12:15 **Looking diligently** lest any man fail of the grace of God; lest any **root of bitterness** springing up trouble you, and thereby many be defiled;*

The context of both of these texts is discipline and disappointment.

Bitterness is a product of the Poisonous Tree and **the first sign** that a person is "turning away from the LORD" "to serve the gods of the nations" and "to walk "in the stubbornness" of his heart." The word "poisonous" refers to "venom or gall or poison." The word "bitter fruit" is translated "hemlock, wormwood, and bitterness." The Greek word for bitterness (*pikria*) comes from the root word *pik*, which means "to cut." The term refers something cutting and sharp, and it also implies "bitter taste" like that of dandelion or goldenseal.

Bitterness is the result of the individual's inability to see God's Providence or believe that God is good; a result of claiming rights God has not given; a result of unforgiveness and clinging to hurts and disappointments. When a wound in the leg festers and turns gangrene, it has to be amputated to save life. Likewise, the presence of bitterness in the soul means the person is in danger of losing the health of their soul. Because it defiles many, bitterness can infect children and turn them from their fathers or mothers or even God Himself. The cure for bitterness is faith--faith that God is sovereign (Lamentations 3:37); faith that God has permitted this pain for your good (Romans 8:28).

Wounded people should interpret pain as GOD'S CALL to go deeper into love (Isaiah 53:6).

A hurt person is NOT A VICTIM, but an instrument God wants to use to heal others. The deepest lesson and most profound thought I know is how we are healed through the wounds of Christ.

*1 Peter 2:24 He himself bore our sins in his body on the tree, that we might die to sin and live to righteousness. **By his wounds you have been healed.***

When one experiences hurt because of a violation of a trust, then one must confront his brother in love so that he can become the person God wants him to be—a prudent person worthy of trust. Stop and think about this! The one doing the wounding has the greater need!! If the wounded individual does not respond to God's CALL to love his brother by confronting him, he is in effect failing or rebelling against his fiduciary responsibility under the command of Christ to become an instrument of grace to help his brother to grow in love. Confronting another is not comfortable for the flesh. It is much easier to ignore sin, flee to safety, and nurse wounds. Ignoring sins of others and the pain they cause is not love. Tough love confronts; wimpy love pretends nothing is wrong. But, love "doth not seek its own things" (1 Corinthians 13:5). The deepest subject in Scripture is "by his wounds you have been healed," and in being "hurt," you have an opportunity to be like Christ.

The wounded person must learn how to confront his brother in love.

After one has (a) admitted hurt, and (b) analyzed the violation of trust to understand why the feelings of pain and disappointment exist, the aggrieved needs to make the commitment to confront the one who violated the trust. A way to confront is simply asking permission to share the experience:

- Sally: “Sam, I’ve got a problem that has come up in our relationship. May I share with you what happened?”
- Sam: “Sure, uh . . . “
- Sally: “Thank you. Sam the other day you said, “. . . “ and it hurt me!
- Sam: “I’m sorry I said what I said and I knew at the time I was wrong. I am grieved I hurt you. What can I do to relieve the stress you feel?”
- This is grace in action.

Wounded people must learn to forgive those who hurt them after the painful experience has been shared and repented of properly (Luke 17:3).

Forgiveness means that the wounded person must not only forgive the deed done, **but the pain it caused!** Forgiveness is a commitment to cancel the debt, to bury “the hatchet,” and to go into the future with hope and love where there will be lots of joy and possibly more pain in the relationship.

Wounded people have the responsibility to seek healing from the Lord.

Mopping around the house, digging up the past, and mulling over offenses is not forgiveness nor is it part of the healing process. **Healing is the ability to be Christ-like.** This means the wounded party needs to obey Christ and be filled with the Spirit of God even though he may be recovering from emotional hurts (Ephesians 5:18).

The aggrieved who sin or retaliate against wrong done, have the responsibility to confess their wrong and to correct their errors in an altercation **first** before confronting their violations of trust (Matthew 7:1-3).

You must take the beam out of your own eye in order to get into a position to confront the original act that caused all the trouble. It is one thing to be hurt by an offending party, but it is quite another to retaliate. Grace does not seek revenge! When the wounded person retaliates, they sin. Sin must be admitted and confessed.

43.1 The High Cost of Forgiveness

(Parable of the Debt Collector: Matthew 18)

You cannot afford to pay the price of unforgiveness.

In the parable of the Debt Collector, the Lord tells the story of a man who was so hopelessly in debt that it was impossible for him to recover. Throwing himself on the mercy of the court, the man's debt was graciously cancelled by the compassionate king. But, because the man never really grasped the fact that his own debt was cancelled, he immediately left the presence of the king to dun those who owed him money. Notice the nature of unforgiveness from this story:

Unforgiveness will not give up control.

Unforgiveness will not give up its sense of justice.

Unforgiveness will not give up its pain (anger).

Unforgiveness will not give up the right to revenge and judgment.

Unforgiveness will not release others from debts.

From this same parable, we should notice the **High Cost of Unforgiveness**. Forgiveness is expensive, but no one can afford the interest on unforgiveness, **NOBODY!**

Unforgiveness stressed out the man emotionally.

Unforgiveness distressed his debtors

Unforgiveness distressed the king's servants

Unforgiveness distressed the king.

Unforgiveness resulted in more stress in prison (a life sentence).

The real lesson in this account is the fact that forgiveness is very, very expensive. Because God willing paid the cost for sin, the death of His only Son, men are released from their debt to God. This wonder should so captivate the heart, that forgiveness should be a crown jewel among those who have beheld the brilliance of God's forgiveness.

44 Grace for the Offending Party

Grace Part III



Grace can undo the effects of sin when grace is at work in all parties impacted by a wrong done. When grace is at work in the offender, he or she will listen to the hurt caused, evaluate, and apologize something like this:

"I was wrong. I regret the hurt I caused you. It is inexcusable. Is there anything I can do to make it up to you?"

One who violates a trust (offending party or offender) has the responsibility to humble himself.

He must listen to the offended party and muster all his courage and strength to hear the pain he caused. As God reveals his sins, admit wrong, and seek to repair the damage caused. When grace is at work, the offended party will accept the responsibility for his actions.

The offending party has the responsibility to recognize his error and to correct it immediately.

Immediate action to correct wrong done is the responsible thing to do. People will forgive imperfect people, but they have difficulty in dealing with perfect people that can't admit any wrong. This means the offending party has the responsibility to judge pride in his life—the spirit that keeps him from humbling himself and admitting wrong done. "I was wrong" is far more effective than "I am sorry."

"I was wrong," may be the most difficult words in the English language.

In his book *On Apology*, Aaron Lazare begins with this paragraph:

"One of the most profound human interactions is the offering and accepting of apologies. Apologies have the power to heal humiliations and grudges, remove the desire for vengeance, and generate forgiveness on the part of the offended parties. For the offender they can diminish the fear of retaliation and relieve the guilt and shame that can grip the mind with a persistence and tenacity that are hard to ignore. The result of that apology process, ideally, is the reconciliation and restoration of broken relationships."

A genuine and effective apology not only reduces guilt in the offender, but pain in the aggrieved. Genuine apology is a gift of God and it can go a long way in securing valuable relationships. But, apologies have to be accepted. Sometimes the offender needs to ask, "What can I do to gain your forgiveness?" If a car is stolen, returning the car may be a condition of forgiveness. If a brother borrows his sister's book and loses it, buying her a new book is necessary to repair the relationship.

The offending party needs to learn to be quick to recognize sin in his own life and to deal with it responsibly.

Failure to fulfill a responsibility, to complete a task, to keep a promise, or some react in anger is a sin. Anger, criticalness, yelling, gossip, and verbal assaults are actions that hurt and divide relationships. Be quick to admit wrong so that the emotional wound caused does not develop some kind of spiritual necrosis called "bitterness" (spiritual gangrene).

The offending party needs to recognize the signs of woundedness in others.

Hurt people can respond to wrongs done in various ways. Withdrawal of affections, anger, sorrow, fear, silence, absence from meetings, and bitterness are some of the signs of a wounded spirit. Do not assume wounded people are affected by grace. Immature people use "hurt" as an excuse to withdraw love. When grace is at work in the offender, the offender will pursue a right relationship despite the immature responses of those in the aggrieved.

The offender has the responsibility to take the initiative to repair the relationship.

Getting right with the aggrieved is more important than any religious duty one may be called to perform. Grace puts people first; religious duty second.

Matthew 5:23-24 Therefore if thou bring thy gift to the altar, and there rememberest that thy brother hath ought against thee; Leave there thy gift before the altar, and go thy way; first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift.

The offending party has the responsibility to listen to the complaint, hurt, or frustration of the ones he wounds.

Listening to the injured party and trying to understand *their feelings* is the first step toward healing the one wounded. Listening is not easy! It is hard to hear the pain of those who we injure by our lack of integrity. Nature wants a "quick fix," an "easy out," an immediate "gloss" over the offense. It is critical, therefore, that the offender lay hold of grace and look the one he offended in the eye, **be quiet**, and **listen** intently to what the offended party has to say. A quickie confession that avoids listening has the stench of carnality and immaturity attached to it. Talking,

debating, justifying, arguing, explaining, and contending is not listening. Grace listens to the injured party and says the following,

“Thank you for sharing your feelings with me! I promise to weigh carefully what you have said.”

A soul impacted by grace understands that he can accept responsibility for his actions because Christ has accepted responsibility for his sins.

It is the responsibility of the offender to evaluate what he has done and to admit wrong done. Often in an altercation, there is plenty of blame to go around. It is not necessary to accept all the blame in a damaged relationship. But, when grace is at work, he will accept his share of the responsibility for the wounds felt. Accepting the bulk of the blame is honorable if indeed the bulk belongs to the offending party. But, accepting all blame for the sake of peace is not honest and will hinder healing and the long-term relationship.

The offending party has the responsibility to confess his fault and to secure forgiveness.

It is not enough to say, “I am sorry!” Grace at work says, “I was wrong for . . . will you forgive me?” “What should I do next time?” “How can I help you now?”

It is the responsibility of the offender to help heal the hurt caused and the damaged done.

It is not enough just to ask for forgiveness and walk away from a bleeding, hurting person. Forgiveness does not negate restitution. If one steals money, he needs to give it back. If one kicks a door in, he needs to repair the door. If one damages another emotionally, he needs to do all he can to repair the damage done. Deep hurt may take time to repair. Deep sins call for deep repentance. Spitting on a wildfire is a poor extinguisher of a roaring flame.

The offender needs to grow in Christ so he will not commit the same act again and again and again.

One test of sincerity is a concerted effort to resist sinning again (Romans 6:11-14).

In conclusion, both the offended and the offender have the responsibility to do everything possible to repair a damaged relationship. When grace is at work, the wounded will not use pain as an excuse to withdraw love. When grace is at work, the offender will not let pride keep him from listening, admitting wrong, and helping to repair the broken relationship. Grace makes a person proactive. Grace pursues, seeks, and works to restore a broken relationship.

45 The Family and the Sabbath

Exodus 20:8 Remember the sabbath day, to keep it holy.



In the laws of holiness, remembering the Sabbath is coupled with honoring parents.

Leviticus 10:3: Ye shall fear every man his mother, and his father, and keep my sabbaths: I am the LORD your God.

No culture outside of Christian societies have a Sabbatical rest. Even modern religious cultures borrow a “holy day” from Christianity.

The practice is unique to Western civilization under Biblical preaching. Consider the following facts and why Christians should vigorously joust to keep the First-Day Sabbath holy.

The Sabbath principle is opposed to humanism where man seeks to control his own universe by legislating laws designed to create his own utopia.

Under capitalism men are viewed as human resources for the lusty ambitions of capitalists. Under Marxism, there is no God and man must work to provide for his own destiny. *The total government of man replaces the total government of God.* Stalin sought to create his own Sabbath rest by redistributing work and wealth. The result was that Joseph Stalin, a communist Bolshevik Jew, enslaved and killed more (Christian) men than any tyrant in history (40 million).

The Sabbath promotes holiness for the spirit and wholeness for the body.

The Sabbath was not primarily a day of worship, but a day of rest. It was a day man ceased from his own labors and trusted God to provide not only his daily necessities, but salvation. The Sabbath is about freedom. It prevents man from being a total slave to his work. Furthermore, the Sabbath is about health. All health laws, cultic or otherwise, fall under the 4th Commandment; that is, Sabbath keeping promoted the health and welfare of the nation.

Severe laws were enacted to enforce the Sabbath:

No work was to be performed (Exodus 34:21; Deuteronomy 5:12-15); Gates were to be shut (Nehemiah 13:19). Every man has to stay home (Exodus 16:29). Donkeys could not carry a load (Nehemiah 13:15); no fires could be kindled (Exodus 35:3); no

sheaves harvested (Nehemiah 13:15); no sticks collected (Numbers 15:32-35); no goods transported or sold (Nehemiah 10:31); no wine processed (Nehemiah 13:15). However, life could be saved on the Sabbath (Mark 3:4; Luke 6:9). The sick could be cared for and animals retrieved. Hungry people could pluck a corn cob on the Sabbath for food, but could not harvest a field (Matthew 12:1-8). But, human need trumps every religious ritual; i.e., it is always permissible to do good and relieve pain on the Sabbath.

The gospel frees man from the binding rules of the Sabbath (Romans 14; 5, 6).

Who can deny that a law that required the death penalty does not have some application in principle even in the New Testament? While we are not under OT Sabbath laws, we must realize that a practice that issued a death penalty for its violation **must have an abiding principle for Christians to practice today**—something so basic that to disregard it acts as a principle of death to men and society. For the covenant man, the Sabbath is an abiding principle of rest, regeneration, and life (Rushdoony).

One reason for the Sabbath was to reflect on Israel's deliverance from Egypt (Deuteronomy 5:16). The NT First-Day Sabbath is a time the True Israel remembers their deliverance from sin and man's redemption at Calvary through Christ.

To reject the Christian Sabbath is to reject our Lord's redemptive work and to seek salvation by another inadmissible way! (Rushdoony)

The Sabbath not only prohibited regular work, ***but required positive energy to sanctify it.***

It was incumbent upon the people to “remember” the Sabbath and to keep it holy. Sabbath keeping took positive energy to prepare for the day of rest. Holiness implies submission to authority. Holiness is separation and devotion to the LORD God. Submission to authority leads to rest, protection, and prosperity (Exodus 20:8; Ezekiel 44:24).

But, there are anti-Christians among us who seek to undermine the Christian-Sabbath. Militant Jews and unsanctified businessmen undermine the Christian Sabbath by making it like any other day and by filling it with amusements.

For two-thousand years, Christians have observed Sunday as the Sabbath . . . and rightly so! The Bible calls it the "First-Day Sabbath" and "the Lord's Day." It was on this day, the Lord restored the original creative order. So powerful has been the observance of the Lord's Day, that it formed the foundation of Western Civilization.

So concerned was the Catholic church in Germany about the importance of the observance of the Christian Sabbath, that the Catholic church circulated a Papal

Encyclical to rebuke the German Reich for introducing sports on the Lord's Day. The encyclical was written "With Deep Anxiety" (Mit Grennender Sorge"]: Papal Encyclical on the Situation of the Catholic Church in the German Reich (March 14, 1937)

Volume 7. Nazi Germany, 1933-1945

You are told about sports. Indulged in with moderation and within limits, physical education is a boon for youth. But so much time is now devoted to sporting activities, that the harmonious development of body and mind is disregarded, that duties to one's family, and the observation of the Lord's Day are neglected. With an indifference bordering on contempt the day of the Lord is divested of its sacred character, against the best of German traditions. But We expect the Catholic youth, in the more favorable organizations of the State, to uphold its right to a Christian sanctification of the Sunday, not to exercise the body at the expense of the immortal soul, not to be overcome by evil, but to aim at the triumph of good over evil (Rom. xii. 21) as its highest achievement will be the gaining of the crown in the stadium of eternal life (1Cor.ix. 24).

Celebrating the Christian Sabbath on Sunday is Biblical and was an established tradition even in the first century.

But, the importance and significance of the Sabbath **has been clearly translated away!** The Greek word "Sabbaton" is translated "day" or "week" by modern translators and thus clouds its significance. The First Day Sabbath; i.e., the term Sabbath (Sabbaton) is used in the following text demonstrating that Sunday was clearly considered a Christian Sabbath early in the church:

- Matthew 28:1 "first day of the week" = mi,an sabba,twn or First-Day Sabbath
- Mark 16:2, 9 "first day of the week" = mia/| tw/n sabba,twn or First-Day Sabbath
- Luke 24:1 "first day of the week" = prw,th| sabba,tou or First-Day Sabbath
- John 20:1 "first day of the week" = mia/| tw/n sabba,twn or First-Day Sabbath
- John 20:19 "first day of the week" = th/| mia/| sabba,twn or First-Day Sabbath
- Acts 20:7 "first day of the week" = th/| mia/| tw/n sabba,twn or First-Day Sabbath

- 1 Corinthians 16:1-2 “first day of the week” = mi,an sabba,tou or First-Day Sabbath

Paul ordered the Corinthians to set aside an offering on the first day of the week (Sunday) for the saints in Jerusalem. The word “week” is the Greek word *sabbatou*. The genitive *sabbatou* is the attributive to *mian* which should be translated “first day”; i.e., “the First-Day Sabbath” or “the first day of the Sabbath.” The imperative *titheto* {to set aside} is definitely connected with collections, but one has to assume that **the early Christians under Paul’s care had already established the first day of the week as the Holy Sabbath.** To connect “orders” in verse one with the “Sabbath” in verse two has an indirect but logical connection. While it is not a silver bullet, it certainly does strengthen the concept of the “Lord’s day” in conjunction with Revelation 1:10.

Since the Lord was raised on this blessed day, the Christian Sabbath was separated from the Jewish Sabbath and superseded it in importance by virtue of the “new creation” (2 Corinthians 5:17) and His redemptive accomplishments (Hebrews 2:1-2, 14-15)

Since the Christian Sabbath is connected with Israel’s three feasts (the wave offering, Pentecost, and feast of tabernacles), Sunday commemorates YHWH’s new creation, spiritual redemption, and sanctification by virtue of our Lord’s death, burial, and resurrection on and in behalf of believers. Just as Christ is superior to angels, and the Melchizedek priesthood is superior to the Aaronic priesthood, and the New Covenant is superior to the Old Covenant, and the sacrifice of Christ is superior to the Levitical offerings, the Sunday, ***the First-Day Sabbath is superior to the old Jewish Saturday Sabbath.*** The old is “done away in Christ” and is superseded by the new, First-Day Sabbath. The letter, of the old Sabbath killeth, the Spirit’s establishment of the new Sabbath giveth life (Numbers 15:32; 2 Corinthians 3:6ff).

While there is also continuity between the Jewish Sabbath and the Christian Sabbath, the First Day Sabbath outshines the Jewish Sabbath like the Sun outshines the moon.

Both the Jewish holy day and the Christian holy day are called a Sabbath. Both days were a day of rest. Both reflect on creation. Both days were holy. But, celebration of the Christians Sabbath is of a higher order and deeper in significance than the Saturday Sabbath. As gold is superior to copper, the Sunday Sabbath is superior to the Jewish Sabbath by virtue of our Lord’s salvic accomplishments through His death and resurrection.

The goal of history is a Sabbath rest, the true Jubilee, the Kingdom of God.

With the coming of Christ the Kingdom of God has intersected history without consummation. The Kingdom of God offered the blessings of salvation without the final, climatic judgment of mankind. Through His life, death, and resurrection, our Lord demonstrated His authority to heal the sick, to raise the dead, and save man from the judgment of God. In every way, His life vindicated the hope of the prophets. Jesus Himself affirmed that the powers of "the Age to Come" were present in His ministry. God mounted a heavenly offensive on the beach shores of Satan's kingdom in order to rescue people from the chains of slavery.

Matthew 12:28 But if I cast out devils by the Spirit of God, then the Kingdom of God is come unto you.

Thus, there is a salvic rest for the people of God and that rest is commemorated on the Sunday-Sabbath. ***The Christian Sabbath is not the same as the Jewish Sabbath.*** The Hebrew Sabbath is merely "a shadow of good things to come," while the **Christian Sabbath** is the **SUBSTANCE** of things having arrived (Colossians 2:16ff). On Sunday, the Lord Jesus Christ rose from the dead and gave proof to the world that He is Lord. He is sovereign over death. The Hebrew Sabbath typified the hope of Christ's redemptive rest while the Christian Sabbath is the first fruits reality of that rest. **Thus, there is powerful discontinuity between the Jewish Sabbath and the Christian Sabbath.**

Had not the Christians made a clean break from the Jewish Sabbath [established discontinuity] Christianity would have only been another Jewish cult.

This discontinuity from the Saturday Sabbath is critical for spiritual maturity. Christ's resurrection is undoubtedly the most important even in human history. On the Jewish Sunday, Christ conquered man's fundamental problem [death]. He was God's wave offering; God's Firstfruits; God's Holy One; and God's New Creation. In Christ, the holy God and sinful man find redemptive rest. Consequently, it was quintessential that Christians separate themselves from the Jewish Sabbath and remember God's greater creative work in Christ on Sunday, the First Day Sabbath. And, it appears it was so ordered by apostolic command in 1 Corinthians 16:1-2. Just as a return to Judaism was a fall from grace, so a return to the Jewish Sabbath is a departure from the Christian faith (Galatians 5:1-2).

Christianity is not a ritualistic religion, but it has solemnized a few basic truths in its ordinances: First-Day Sabbath keeping (remembrance of redemptive rest), its practice of headcoverings (a symbol of authority), and the breaking of bread (proclamation of Christ and the price of redemption), and baptism (identification with the history of Christ and the blessings of salvation).

Thus, the Christian Sabbath is essential for the Christian family and the health of society. And, the family under God will do everything in its power to keep it holy and keep it from being victimized by the amusements of secular man.

46 The Family and the Church



The church meets on the First-Day Sabbath. ***Next to parents, the most important thing for a child is a church family.*** Christ's whole purpose for living and dying is summed up in love for His people (Ephesians 5:25-27). If the church is the object of His love, it ought to be the object of our love and affection.

The church is not a building, but people who share together the blessing of Christ in and through the gospel. It is made up of true born-again Christians who are "the people of God." The Jews are not God's people. Jews belong to the Synagogue of Satan. Jews rejected their Messiah and therefore forfeited their inheritance. The Jews rejected their Messiah and have remained anti-Christ to this day. The Jews are called a whore, but the church is called the Bride of Christ. Believing Hebrews and Gentiles received Christ as their Savior and are baptized into one body. This body is called "the church" or "the New Israel" or "the True Israel" (1 Peter 2:10; Revelation 2:9; 3:9; Ezekiel 16:28; Revelation 21:2, 9, 17; 1 Corinthians 12:12ff; Ephesians 2:12ff; Galatians 6:16).

The church is not an organization but a living organism. It is not a business or commercial center or stage show with pounding drums and Rockets dancing the doxology in leotards. ***It is a fellowship of men in a given locality with unlimited commitment to the gospel as commissioned in the New Testament.*** The church is likened to a Battle-Ax advancing the will of God on earth and attacking the citadels of evil (Matthew 16:16ff)

"the gates of hell shall not prevail against it" (Matthew 16:18). (Note the church assault the gate of hell).

Furthermore, a local church body is compared to a pillar, the sole support of truth (1 Timothy 3:15). (Note the anarthrous nouns (church, pillar, and support) and the articular noun, "the truth." A pillar was used to hold up buildings, but they were also public bulletin boards that published important events.

The church is necessary for a new Christian as a finger to the body, as a child to a family, as a soldier to an army.

What body is to the finger, the church is to an individual Christian.

What the family is to a child, the church is to an individual Christian.

What an army is to a soldier, the church is to an individual Christian.

The church is His body, the visible manifestation of the invisible Christ (Ephesians 1:19ff). What our bodies are to our soul, the church is to the Person of Christ.

The church is called a Minora or Candlestick (Revelation 1:19-20). As the candlestick in the tabernacle shined light on the table of shewbrew (a type of Christ), the church illuminates the history of Christ in its proclamation of the gospel. The church inherited all of Israel's sacred symbols and is God's instrument to shed light on Christ. The church are the people of God, not modern Jews.⁴² The church exists for the glory of God and is designed to reflect his attributes: (Ephesians 3:21; 1 Corinthians 10:31). It was created by God, for God, and is dependent on God. For this reason, the church is called a candlestick. The church is a reflection of what the GRACE of God can do (Ephesians 2:4-9); and, it is a reflection of the WISDOM of God (Ephesians 3:10).

Christ proclaimed the arrival of the kingdom of God in history and gathered disciples around Himself to bestow on them the blessing of the Kingdom through faith. Out of this transient, traveling caravan of disciples, the church was formed. It became apparent that the church was to have more than a temporary place in history.

As a **pillar** (1 Timothy 3:16, 17) the church is the sole means whereby God extends the truth in the world. As a public bulletin board, it proclaims the truth, and it supports the truth.

As His **body** (Ephesians 1, 2), the church represents Christ as the visible representation of the invisible Head. Christ is seen and made known to the world through the “arms” and “legs” of the church.

As **stars** (Philippians 2:14-15) the church acts as a guiding light to a dark, depraved, and twisted generation. Each local church shines like a star in the darkness of this age.

As an institution, the church finds itself laden with the dual responsibilities of *edifying itself* and *proclaiming* the Gospel to a lost world. The church is a learning center, a training camp, and an incubator for nurturing its members (Ephesians 4:11ff). Furthermore, the church is a public bulletin board that announces the

⁴² The church which is composed of multiple ethnic groups that believe on Christ are the people of God. The whole idea that modern Jews are the people of God is product of Zionist propaganda, not systematic theology (Ephesians 2:12ff; Hebrews 4:9; 1 Peter 2:10; Revelation 5:9)

gospel to the world. The church has problems with immaturity, instability, and deception. But gifted men were given to aid in the maturation process.

It has been said that when the church was in Jerusalem, it was a **fellowship**; when it moved to Greece, it became a **philosophy**; when it moved to Rome, it became an **organization**; but, when the church came to America, it became a **Business!** Modern churches have morphed into huge commercial centers controlled by the IRS as 501 c 3 religious organizations. Finding a healthy, balanced body of believers has become increasingly difficult. Furthermore, choosing a church is like going to a buffet and finding everything imaginable under the sneeze bar. Furthermore, modern churches are made up of sheep and goats, wheat and tares. Wild-eyed Charismatics doing the cha-cha-cha across the stage promising health and wealth is a far cry from the New Testament model. With the American church in such a state of chaos, the godly man will do well to keep his head in The Book and search carefully for a true family of God. *The duty to fellowship with sheep does not require a Christian to meet with goats.*

Look for a true church or start one on Biblical principles. A healthy church is Bible based (apostle's doctrine), relationship orientated (fellowship), Christ honoring, cross centered (breaking of bread), and a house of prayer (prayer) (Acts 2:42).

47 The Family and Government

47.1 Clarifying Romans 13

Romans 13:1-2 Let every soul be subject unto the higher powers. For there is no power but of God: the powers that be are ordained of God. Therefore whoever resists the authorities resists what God has appointed, and those who resist will incur judgment.



Government plays a big part in our lives.

Because Romans 13 has been misapplied by sugar-sweet pastors teaching total compliance of the total man to total government regardless of the character of the State, a few statements need to be made to clarify the limits of Romans 13.

Who is Lord, Caesar or Christ? The trend for the church to surrender its sovereignty to the state has produced mamby-pamby, passive, effeminate pew sitters who do not have the moral backbone of a DNA molecule to confront the overreaches of modern government. The atrocities of the Nazi Party occurred in part because the church in Germany failed to develop a holistic, Biblical theology of God and government. Hitler's favorite passage in the Bible was Roman 13 (Erwin Lutzer, Hitler's Cross).

Furthermore, Romans 13 was the most talked about passage by the Lutheran Church during the terror of WWII. Lutheran pastors used Romans 13 to encourage their flocks to submit to Nazi policy. American pastors have fallen into the same error as German theologians. Something is radically wrong with a church that fails to recognize tyranny and believes it is their duty to submit to oppressors.

What is a Christian to do when the government he is supposed to honor is the enemy of God's Law turned traitor to its own constitution? Christians need to rethink Romans 13 and develop a complete, accurate theology of God and Government **from the whole of Scripture**.

The term "Moloch" in the OT is a synecdoche for statism--the worship of the State as an absolute. Modern statism is a revival of ancient Moloch worship wherein citizens are trained to look to the State as some kind of god. We call it Fascism. The doctrine of *Pro aris et focis*, "for God and country," is also a hyperbole for statism. That God requires Christians "to bow the knee" to government is apostasy. Daniel chapter two and six comes to mind.

1) ***Romans 13 does not control Scripture.*** Every passage in the Bible must submit to the whole of Scripture and the whole of Scripture does not teach total compliance to any State. While the Scripture does not encourage anarchy, neither does it support sheepish compliance to a tyrant. The Egyptian midwives comes to mind, who by the way, gained fame in Holy Scripture--not because they obeyed the king, but because they disobeyed their king. That Christians should submit to tyranny, turn in their guns, and wait for Christ to return deal with political oppressors is simply a religious cloak covering irresponsibility and cowardice.

The thinking at the time of the American Revolution was "*Resistance to tyranny is service to God*"-- a motto that Thomas Jefferson wanted to memorialize in the Great Seal of the United States. His own personal seal read, "Rebellion to tyrants is obedience to God."

"If ye love wealth better than liberty, the tranquility of servitude better than the animating contest of freedom, go home from us in peace. We ask not your counsels or arms. Crouch down and lick the hands which feed you. May your chains set lightly upon you, and may posterity forget that ye were our countrymen." ~ Samuel Adams

(2) ***If Jesus Christ is Lord, it is not possible or desirable to always obey any government;*** that is, disobedience to an overreaching State can be obedience to Christ. Likewise obedience to an overreaching state can be disobedience to our Lord. History teachers are famous for assisting students to memorize famous war cries like "Remember the Alamo," or "Remember Pearl Harbor," but they never seem to get around to teaching the war cry of the Revolution, "No king, but King Jesus!"

(3) A key to the interpretation and application of this passage is the word "except". The authority to which Christians are to be subject is one that is "appointed of God;" i.e., ***"there is no legitimate authority except of God"***--legitimate governments are ones that acknowledge God's law-order and seek to arrange themselves under the authority of the Lord Jesus Christ. The idea that Christians are to submit to all regimes regardless of their character is heresy plain and simple; that Christians are not to resist the bloody reins of a Stalin or Mao Tse Tung or a Barak Obama is resignation to a fault.

The government to which Christians owe their allegiance for conscience's sake must give countenance to the authority of Christ and supremacy of His Word—***that allegiance is due to a state just because it exists, irrespective of its moral character, is ludicrous and unbiblical.*** States that do not acknowledge the authority of Christ over them have joined the rebellion of Psalm 2.

*Psalm 2:1-3 Why do the nations rage, And the people plot a vain thing?
The kings of the earth set themselves, And the rulers take counsel*

together, Against the LORD and against His Anointed, saying, "Let us break Their bonds in pieces And cast away Their cords from us."

(4) While Christians are pummeled into submission by preachers demanding unquestioning obedience to the United States, Inc., these same preachers never seem to get around to the truth that ***the United States government has a duty to submit to King Jesus***. Jesus not only saves, He kings! Jesus is the King of kings, and therefore, makes demands on all man's institutions. Just as the church has a duty to submit to the authority of Christ in administration of mercy, rulers have a duty to submit to Christ in their administration of justice (Revelation 1:5).

“For every soul” should be in submission to the authority of Christ includes kings, prime ministers, presidents, governors, generals, and sheriffs, mayors as well as citizens.

It was this truth that "turned the world upside down." Jesus is king and even Caesar has a duty to repent and surrender to His authority because "He will judge the world in righteousness" (Acts 17:1-7, 30).

When British Major Pitcairn shouted to an assembled regiment of Minutemen in Concord; "Disperse, ye villains, lay down your arms in the name of George the Sovereign King of England." The immediate response of Reverend Jonas Clarke was: "***We recognize no Sovereign but God and no King but Jesus!***" And then . . . the shot . . . the shot that was heard around the world. Oh, that the modern church had armed Minutemen and a pastor like Jonas Clark!

Jonathan Trumbull, a crown-appointed governor, wrote back to England: "If you ask an American, who is his master? He will tell you he has none, nor any governor but Jesus Christ."

(5) ***All governments are institutions of limited authority***. When a State overreaches its authority, it must be resisted and or replaced. And, replacing a tyrannical state is a right of man.

Governments are instituted among Men, deriving their just powers from the consent of the governed, --That whenever any Form of Government becomes destructive of these ends, it is the Right of the People to alter or to abolish it, and to institute new Government, laying its foundation on such principles and organizing its powers in such form, as to them shall seem most likely to affect their Safety and Happiness (The Declaration).

When injustice becomes law, rebellion becomes duty! ~ Thomas Jefferson.

(6) ***The law to which a government has a duty to enforce is common law***: "For God's rulers are not a terror to good conduct, but too bad." Common law is superior

to statutory law. Statutory law only applies to government workers and people in contract with the government. Common law applies to all men everywhere. Only God can define good, and He has defined it in the Ten Commandments. A government that refuses to submit to the Ten Commandments joins the rebellion of Psalm 2 and makes itself an enemy of God. When the State becomes the enemy of God, men suffer. Christians have a duty to resist it with particularity and specificity.

Our government is a government of limited powers. Contrary to popular thinking the government cannot govern anything it wants, tax anything it wants, and write laws to control any man it wants.

"Limited government' is a key term in the American philosophy. Its great significance is indicated by describing the purpose of limiting government's power in these words: Limited for Liberty. This summarizes what is meant by the statement in the Declaration of Independence about governments being limited in power "to secure these rights"--to make and keep them ever secure.

"Limited" means limited by a written Constitution adopted by the sovereign people as their basic law--never changing in its meaning, as originally intended by The Framers and Adopters, except subject to change by the people only by amendments at any time and to any extent they may see fit. All governments in America are thus limited by written Constitutions--by the [United States Constitution](#) as the "supreme Law of the Land" and, as to each State government, by that States' Constitution" (Lexrex.com).

A government that multiplies laws makes every man a criminal. This is the kind of legalistic madness that was found in Judaism and that Jesus resisted during His ministry in the first century. Zillions of laws cannot create a perfect society! Tyranny, the total control of the total man, is marked by an overabundance of statutes and codes . . . and the propaganda that somehow all men are under duty to obey the federal government. Nonsense! The liberal mind is at war with the law of the Lord God while multiplying laws to control a population. **Law cannot regenerate society! The Christian mind believes in the rule of law but NOT RULE BY LAW!** A healthy society has laws, limited and few: but, a society in decline produces regulations "ad nauseam." Thus, the tyrannical State has to create a police State to enforce law. Modern law enforcement is not about keeping the peace but charging fines and fees to enrich the State.

(7) A primary duty of government is to punish evil doers and to purge evil men from society; i.e., men who infringe on the rights of others. Its duty is to

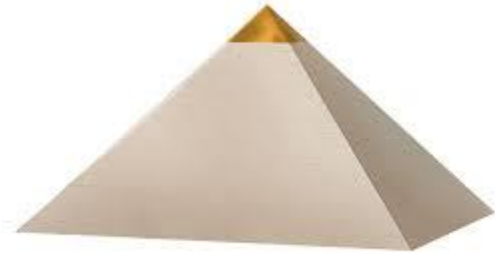
enforce common law, things that are *mala in se*, and not to create laws *mala prohibita* for commercial gain. When a government protects evil men and punishes innocent men, it no longer qualifies as a State worthy of Christian loyalty. The "governing authority" to which Christians are to submit is one "instituted of God" and that does "good" and not "evil." A good government is one that submits to the authority of the LORD God and His Law-order. ***It is an error to think that Christians are called to submit to a government that has declared war on God's Law-order!*** God's law defines good. When States permit the wholesale killing of innocent babies and accepts civil unions of Sodomites and grants privileges to racial minorities, it is no longer good. It requires resistance, not cooperation.

(8) ***There are multiple examples of holy men rebelling against the State who were approved by God.*** The Hebrew Midwives, Gideon, Samson, David, the three Hebrews, and Daniel come to mind. As Christians, we do not advocate anarchy. We believe in the rule of law, but we do not believe in RULE BY LAW! A government that rules by law to control the people while exempting itself from its own laws is a tyrant, and like King George, must be resisted.

Because the government does not obey its own laws, the government is not your friend- Judge Napolitano.

(9) However, ***faulty authority must not become an excuse to rebel against de jure authority.*** A cloudy day is not midnight and partial justice is not injustice. Defective execution of judicial power is not necessarily a crime nor is an imperfect government a corrupt state; that is, the weaknesses of fathers and rulers are not good excuses to oppose imperfect authority.

48 NT Case Law on Marriage



Every command in the Bible regarding husbands and wives is case law branching from the trunk of the Ten Commandments. Failure to see NT instruction on marriage as case law has created casual Christians. Every command in Scripture is designed to keep men and women away from the Poisonous Tree and from repeating Eve's transgression.

God is good and always good whether we recognize it or not; and, therefore, His commands are good for women; that is, every command builds womanhood and femininity; and, the more holy and womanly a woman, the more manly her husband becomes. Likewise, with the man, the more he pursues Christ, the stronger his home. In obeying God's commands, couples build up their children and fortify their home. Likewise, most weeds growing in the family garden can be traced back to perfunctory obedience to God's law and ruts headed toward the Poisonous Tree.

Building a strong marriage can be compared to building a three-dimensional pyramid with the capstone as the 1st Commandment declaring the authority of the LORD God; and, three base cornerstones: The 3rd Commandments which is the honor of God's name; the 5th Commandment which is about honoring parents; and the 7th Commandment with is about faithfulness and marital fidelity.

48.1 The Third Commandment

Exodus 20:5 Thou shalt not take the name of the LORD thy God in vain.

When we say we are a Christian, we take the name of Christ . . . and the honor of His name should fly high in the flagpole of our minds. So many problems in marriage can be traced back to a relaxed effort to honor His name. Breaking vows and wanting to get out of an imperfect marriage show contempt for the LORD God and one's contract with Him. A mellow attempt to honor Christ spells misery for the entire family. It should be the goal of every man to be a true Christian man and not a pretender. If our goal is not to be the greatest Christian that ever lived today, we have already compromised the name of Christ.

The Third Commandment is about God's holy name and His position in the universe as King of the Nations and Head of every man (Jeremiah 10:7). God's name and titles reflect Who He is. To misuse His name is to promote a lie. To use his name is

to declare legitimate purpose and integrity of speech and action. Lies lead people astray and contribute to the death of society. Therefore, the Christian is called to adopt His name honorably and in truth (Isaiah 48:1). Furthermore, the godly are called to confront those who profane His name and warn them that God will not hold them guiltless who misuse His name.

So important is this Command, the first order of business in the Lord's Prayer is, "Hallowed be Thy Name;" i.e., may men recognize the supremacy of the Father and use His name with integrity now!

48.2 God's Resource

Romans 6:2-6 How shall we, that are dead to sin, live any longer therein? Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with *him*, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin.

Romans 8:4 That the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.

Ephesians 5:18 And be not drunk with wine, wherein is excess; but be filled with the Spirit;

The gospel provides all the resources we need to honor His name. For those who camp near the Poisonous Tree, keeping God's law is out mind and out of sight. But, for those who have placed their faith in Christ, they have been "baptized" (placed into) into Him; i.e. believers co-share in the powerful benefits of his death, burial, and resurrection.

The term "dead to sin" refers to the character of the "new creation" due to the believer's union with Christ; that is, one's new gestalt in Christ which is unresponsive to sin. The phrase "old man" refers to all that man is outside of Christ. The word "flesh" is a reference to unregenerated humanity. The term "Spirit" refers to regenerated humanity; i.e., those who are in Christ experiencing the benefits of His victorious history. The man "in Christ" is identified with His history and enjoys the benefits of justification, regeneration, forgiveness, and reconciliation to God. God's seed (His Spirit) is in the believer burgeoning with life and a desire to please God. Righteousness is not only possible but probable.

Note the phrase "that the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us." There is no pitting of grace against law here. Salvation equips believers with the power to keep the law of God. Grace empowers Christians to obey God's commands. So dynamic is the regenerated soul, the believing man is endowed with a new capacity to love and to do what Scripture requires. The ugly duckling is turning into a swan (Romans 13:8; 2 Corinthians 5:17; 1 John 3:1-10; 5:1-3).

Oh, that there would be a revival among men. Real men! Men who are men. Men who are in right relationship to God. Men with moral courage who will stand up against the secular assault on the Christian home, accept their God-given authority, and captain their ship on the seas of marriage and family life.

Likewise, the spiritual woman is a "new creation." She has the power to not only obey God's commands, but to obey them vigorously with joy. She need only to be renewed from time to time during the demanding journey of family life through prayer and reading of God's Word and fellowship with godly sisters (Romans 12:1-3).

So, as we look at case law in the NT regarding men and women in the home, realize that the true Christian men are endowed with a desire to obey God's law and the capacity to obey God's law through the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ.

48.3 Honoring Authority in the Home

1 Corinthians 11:3 But I would have you know that the head of every man is Christ; and the head of the woman is the man; and the head of Christ is God.

The war on the family begins with an assault on headship in the family: "Strike the shepherd, and the sheep will be scattered."

The anatomical term "head" is a synecdoche for spiritual authority. Some people have said that, "Knowledge is power," and in this case Paul seeks to clarify power in the home⁴³--the headship of Christ over the man; and the headship of man in the family; that is, Paul wants Christians to understand God's original creative purpose in Genesis 2-3 is still in effect and the foundation of the home.

The Father has authority over Christ. He is the obedient Son under command to the Father. But, he is much more. Christ is the King of the Nations, and He is the Head of every man. And, it is the privilege and honor of Christian men to acknowledge His authority over them. Man is the pinnacle of God's creation and is endowed with the privilege of bearing the image of God. Man is born a sovereign with the duty to take dominion over the earth. He has authority because he is under authority--the authority of our Sovereign Lord Jesus Christ. As head of the home, leadership in the family is his spiritual service.

Man is first in the order of creation and made him to be the head of the wife and his family. In his home, the man is a king; and the woman is the queen. He has God-

⁴³ The word "power" in 1 Corinthians 11:10 is the Greek word *exousia* which refers to authority, the right to give orders, make decisions, and enforce obedience.

given authority to lead and rule, to command and order, to enact rules and enforce law, to organize his home under the commands of the LORD God. God gave men power over their families for the good of the family. Acton's words, "Power tends to corrupt, and absolute *power corrupts* absolutely," is a cute ditty, but not always true. Power in the hands of good men is a benefit to the people they serve.

The woman is not the head of the home. She is the property of the man and under his coverture. While men and woman are equal in value bearing His image, they are not equal in authority. The roles are different . . . and the roles are determined not by talent, but by sex. The male is the designated head and leader of the home. This does not give men a right to be a bully or dictator, but it does give him power to lead. Male leadership must be sanctified by submission to the Christ; that is, he is to use his God-given authority to build up his family . . . and, God is asking the woman to recognize the original creative order and to memorialize it by wearing a headcovering in public assemblies.

The whole idea that "power corrupts and corrupts absolutely" is as false as a killer Bambi. Acton's words, "Power tends to corrupt, and absolute *power corrupts* absolutely," is a cute ditty, but not always true. Power in the hands of good men is a benefit to the people they serve. God gives power to use, and when used by a godly father, it leads to prosperity and happiness.

48.4 Headcoverings

1 Corinthians 11:4ff Every man praying or prophesying, having his head covered, dishonoureth his head. But every woman that prayeth or prophesieth with her head uncovered dishonoureth her head: for that is even all one as if she were shaven.

For a man to remove his hat during public prayer and for a woman to adorn her head with a covering is case law regarding Biblical authority and headship. The lesson of this section of Holy Scripture is about authority; the symbol of that authority is the veil or headcovering. The practice of headcovering is a symbol, a memorial, a typical lesson for all people about the authority of the Lord Jesus Christ, the man's duty to obey Christ, and the woman's duty to obey her husband.

When Christians go to church, they do so to learn about God not man. When a man removes his hat in public worship he is saying "may the glory of God be seen in this

place;" and, when the woman veils herself, she is saying, "Enough⁴⁴ of man!! May the authority of Christ and His law-order be honored here today."

There are three subjects in 1 Corinthians 11: headship, headcoverings, and Head remembering. Likewise, there are three symbols in this chapter: the headcovering, the bread, and the wine. All three are necessary. All three emblemize an historical truth. All three are commands. All three are part of the institutional practices of historic Christianity.

These symbols are not cultural nor exclusive to Corinth. The practice of wearing a veil and breaking of bread (communion) was common to all churches in the first century (11:16). The godly man and woman would do well to overcome the errors of modern day, permissive, antinomian Christianity and the many false arguments offered to deny this practice in 501 c 3 commercial organizations desperate to increase revenues by being "seeker friendly."

Just as it is apostasy for a man to wear a tallit or prayer shawl or cap in a public assembly where there is prayer and a reading of God's Word, it is apostasy for a woman not to wear a veil of some type. Wearing a headcovering is a command, not an option. But there is freedom as to the type and style of that emblem. Thus, it is the duty of men to educate their wives, sons, and daughters about how to adorn themselves in public worship. An unveiled woman is a shame to a man and indicative of one who is uninformed or ill-informed about Christian law.

There are seven reasons given by the apostle for the practice of headcovering in 1 Corinthians 11 and the Biblical home would do well to study them.

In summary, the first occupation of the Christian is to honor the precious name of the Lord Jesus Christ and to understand⁴⁵ authority. By virtue of His resurrection from the dead, He is Lord. Christ is the Head of every Christian man, and our Lord has appointed men to be the head of their home. The symbol of that authority is the headcovering. When men and women recognize this truth, they honor Him. Breakdowns occur when authority is denied or misused. When couples arrange their marriage based upon these laws, they build their marriage on the Rock and not upon sinking sand.

⁴⁴ Christians attend church, not to learn about man, but to learn about God. Our society is saturated with humanism and amusements centered on man. Church should be a place where the spotlight is on Christ . . . not man and not women.

⁴⁵ Understand: to understand means "to stand under;" i.e., to stand under the authority of Christ.

49 Case Law on a Woman's Behavior in the Church



1 Corinthians 14:34-36 Let your women keep silence in the churches: for it is not permitted unto them to speak; but they are commanded to be under obedience, as also saith the law. And if they will learn anything, let them ask their husbands at home: for it is a shame for women to speak in the church.

In this passage women are instructed to be silent in church assemblies where people assemble to learn the Word of God. The locus of application is a public gathering of the whole church. This instruction is not the rule for the home or for small group social gatherings or for civic business. The apostle is not saying women are cretinous or less competent than men. Christianity liberated women, but did not place them in authority over men. What man has not benefited privately by the conversation and opinions of a godly woman?

I cannot tell you how much I owe to the solemn word of my good mother. ~ Charles Spurgeon

The verb "keep silence" (sigao) is an imperative; i.e., a command. It is not a suggestion or a great option, but an order from the Commander. Women were not permitted to teach, speak in tongues, pray, or prophesy. Further, this restriction is repeated in 1 Timothy 2:11,12. This rule is not a war on women. It is binding on autonomous, liberated women and those who have declared war against God's law-order. Even the majority of men are ordered to be silent (14:30). Like the angels ascending and descending on the golden staircase in Jacob's dream, the church is to be a place of order and dignity. The most qualified and competent men were charged with the duty of instruction and prayer. Thus, "confusion" and "disorder" and "chatter" was discouraged.

When a woman has a theological question about a sermon, she is instructed to ask her husband who is charged with the duty of knowing the Holy Scripture. Unfortunately, modern women are less likely to do this in part because of the rise of feminism; and, in part because most men are poor students of theology. But, if they did, a wife might be surprised to see her husband turn into a Bible student.

"As also saith the law," formed the ground of the Apostolic command. It is a reference to (A) Genesis 3:16 where God defined the woman's role as "thy desire shall be to thy husband, and he shall rule over thee;" and to (B) male leadership in Israel's institutions where leadership was drawn from the "men of Israel"--a phrase summoned over 56 times in the OT. Leadership in the nation came from qualified men. Only men were called to be a kings, priests, and prophets. The instruction is designed to prevent a repeat of the original transgression--of Eve's usurpation of leadership, and Adam's desertion of responsibility. Only in rare instances do we read about a woman leading a portion of the nation and in each case it was during the times of apostasy.

The "shame" connected with speaking is because speaking is an infringement on the original creative order; that is, God appointed men to lead in the home, in the church, and in the nation. When a woman speaks (preaches) to the whole church, she oversteps the role God has assigned for her. All authority is limited. The command is designed to reinforce order, roles, and the necessity of male leadership in the church and the home. Just as it is a shame for a woman to address the church in an authoritative manner, or teach, or pastor a congregation, it is a shame for men to be passive and lackadaisical in home and church leadership. Every war in history has been won by men. Likewise, the battle for truth must be advanced by men.

Like all rules, there are limitations to this law --a missionary report or a planned testimony for example or a couples' home Bible study may be exceptions to this rule. The way a large church of five-hundred performs and the way a home church of 30 operates requires reasonable, flexible application. Likewise, a godly pastor would do well to sit down with some older sisters and learn a thing or two.

John Gill summarizes the Christian position: “. . . it is not permitted unto them to speak; that is, in public assemblies, in the church of God, they might not speak with tongues, nor prophesy, or preach, or teach the word. All speaking is not prohibited; they might speak their experiences to the church, or give an account of the work of God upon their souls; they might speak to one another in psalms, hymns, and spiritual songs; or speak as evidence in any case at a church meeting; but not in such sort, as carried in it direction, instruction, government, and authority. It was not allowed by God that they should speak in any authoritative manner in the church; nor was it suffered in the churches of Christ; nor was it admitted of in the Jewish synagogue; there, we are told (b), the men came to teach, and the women "to hear": and one of their canons runs thus (c); "a woman may not read (that is, in the law), "in the congregation", or church, because of the honour of the congregation;" for they thought it a dishonourable thing to a public assembly for a woman to read, though they even allowed a child to do it that was capable of it.”

50 Case Law for Wives in Ephesians 5:22, 33

Ephesians 5:22-24 Wives, submit yourselves unto your own husbands, as unto the Lord. For the husband is the head of the wife, even as Christ is the head of the church: and he is the savior of the body. Therefore as the church is subject unto Christ, so *let* the wives *be* to their own husbands in everything.



The following instruction for wives is preceded by a marvelous treatise on "spiritual blessings" showered upon believers, instructions in Biblical ethics, and a command "to be filled with the Spirit;" that is, to be governed by God's power and God's Word (Ephesians 5:18; Colossians 3:15-16).

The **first requisite** required of wives is "submission" and the **second requisite** is that of "respect" toward husbands. These instructions are case law flowing out the Torah, specifically the Genesis Record and the 5th Commandment.

Submission (u.pota,ssw,, hupotasso): the Greek word for *submission* *hupotasso*. It is a military term meaning "to arrange yourself" under a superior. Though *hupotasso* is a military term, it has a relational context. The home is not the army! God, not the husband, is the One requiring the wife to arrange herself under her husband's authority, to recognize the man's position as head of the home, and to serve his leadership. No man has a natural right to demand his wife submit to anything. It is God who orders women to surrender to their husband's leadership, not the husband. Submission does not imply inferiority, but it does require spirituality; i.e., activating a spirit of servanthood, obedience, and meekness. The modern "democratic" family in an old corpse in a new suit--a repeat of Eve's naked transgression in the garden--a repeat of Adam's wimpy capitulation to Eve!

To submit to anyone less than Christ is difficult in a marriage. Yet it is Christ who commands women to be submissive to their sinful, fallible husbands. In this sense Christ is the silent partner of the marriage. It is hard for a wife to submit when she disagrees with her husband. But when she knows her submission is an act of obedience to Christ and honors Christ, it is much less difficult. ~ R. C. Sproul

Ephesians 5:33 . . . and the wife see that she reverence *her* husband.

Respect (fobe,w, phobeo): The Greek word for "fear," "reverence," or "respect" is *phobatai*. We get the word "fear" and "terror" from this word. The proper response

to God-appointed authority is respect even fear. Though a man is not always worthy of respect, the wife can always respect the position of her husband. He is, after all, "the head of the wife." He is appointed by God and has authority over her. The spirit of respect and the fear of burrowing under his God-appointed authority should be reflected in a woman's words, tone, and demeanor. A mouthy wife can be a massive transgressor. While a woman can disagree with her husband, how she conducts that disagreement is of paramount importance. A challenge to a man's authority in the home is not only insubordination but rebellion against God's law-order. It is much easier for a man to lead a respectful wife. In fact, men are energized by respect. A wife who debates, challenges, and belittles her man injects death into her home. The constant drip of a woman's criticism can take a tall-timber man and whittle him into a toothpick. Respect! In a healthy home, a woman under God respects her husband.

The Christian woman would be wise to take her cues from Scriptural models of godly womanhood and not from proud, aggressive, motor-mouth, head-snapping American feminists.

Again, this is the general law for the home, but like all laws, there are limits to their application. God is not asking the woman to submit to a man who has declared war against God's law-order and who employs violence in the home. What is a woman supposed to do when her head who is expected to live under the authority of Christ has rebelled against all matters of propriety endangering himself and the entire family? Alcohol, drunkenness, and physical abuse come to mind. These wonderful passages on the family authority structure become mute in a home where the man is out of control and is a threat to life and limb. War requires a different set of principles.



By way of reflection, the modern rebellion against the Christian order began with the Women's suffrage. Since then, women have demanded power to rule their home, kill their babies, and to run for public office. Since then, fornication has infected humanity, divorce has skyrocketed, and over 60 million babies have been murdered. Feminist, in order to gain power, whine about a faux war on women when in reality feminists have declared war on

men and babies and God's law-order. The Christian women would do well to recognize propaganda and to resist it.

51 Case Law for Husbands in Ephesians 5:25-33

Ephesians 5:25-33 Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the church, and gave himself for it; That he might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word, That he might present it to himself a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish. So, ought men to love their wives as their own bodies. He that loveth his wife loveth himself. For no man ever yet hated his own flesh; but nourisheth and cherisheth it, even as the Lord the church: For we are members of his body, of his flesh, and of his bones. For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and shall be joined unto his wife, and they two shall be one flesh. This is a great mystery: but I speak concerning Christ and the church. Nevertheless, let every one of you in particular so love his wife even as himself; and the wife *see* that she reverence *her* husband.



As God has a will for the wife, He has a will for the husband. In Biblical law, the husband is the undisputed head of the home. Social engineers undermine male leadership in the home by indoctrinating society with the mother cults: the Mother land, Mother Earth, and Mother Nature. The Biblical mind resists this kind of indoctrination because his values are shaped by the law of the LORD God and His role for men in the family.

Love (avgapa/w, agapao): God requires men to love their wives as Christ loved the church. The Greek word *agape* is the word used to describe God's love. *Agape* is God's gracious, beneficent love that sacrificed His Son for sinners. The nature of *agape* is self-sacrifice for the good of others. God is calling the man to a life of *agape*—to lead the home through self-sacrifice. The model of this love is Christ who loved his chosen ones dying in their stead.

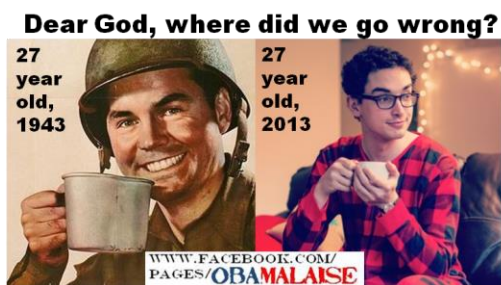
This passage employs two other words to reinforce love: "nourisheth" and "cherisheth." The word "nourish" means "to feed" or "build up." The word "cherisheth" means "to keep warm." Both refer to the gracious practice of caring for the needs of the wife and of treating her as a special treasure. God does not command the man to love his wife because she is always lovely, but because love is the law of God's kingdom. He loves his wife because he is becoming a man of love, not because his wife always exhibits lovable traits. It is not difficult for a wife to

submit to a man who does everything out of love. A godly man is God's love with "skin on." He is God's gift to a godly man.

What higher motive could there be for the husband to love his wife? By loving her as Christ loved the church, he honors Christ in the most direct and graphic way. He becomes the embodiment of Christ's love to his own wife, a living example to the rest of his family, a channel of blessing to his entire household, and a powerful testimony to a watching world (John MacArthur, Pastor)

Honor (timh., tima): The Greek word *tima* (tee-may) means "to honor," or "to make room," or "to give weight." Simply put, *tima* means, "to listen" to one's wife and "to make room" for her wishes; "to give weight" to her opinions. It is much easier for a wife to surrender to her husband's leadership if he listens to her and has her best interest in mind. It is a Christian practice for men to introduce their wives as their "special treasure" or "jewel" rather than legally as "wife." Any criticism of a wife should be direct and tenderly stated. It is God's will that the man know his wife ("dwell with her according to knowledge") and carefully consider what she says. It is easier for a woman to respect a man who listens to what she has to say. A godly husband will weigh carefully the opinions of his vulnerable wife.

Likewise, there are limits to the law of love. Love is not the antidote to every problem in the family. What is a man supposed to do if he has a wife who rebels against God's law order and camps near the Poisonous Tree to play with the hissing snake? God forbid, but what is a Christian husband supposed to do if he has a wife that adopts feminist law or plunges into drunkenness and a life of dissipation? A woman who violates her oath must be dealt with on different principles than the law of tender affection. Tough love must be employed with the hope the wife will repent and be restored to fellowship with Christ.



By way of reflection, the Feminist Movement with the help of the Zionist liberal media has declared a war on men in order to advance the cause and prosperity of single, lesbian, feminists. Hollywood produces movie after movie starring wimpy, smooth-faced, pajama boys being bossed around by angry, domineering mouthy feminist. News broadcasts are now dominated by high-pitched motor-mouthed females who can out talk an inebriated parrot. And, this trend threatens nominal Christian men who are being hypnotized by T.V. The Christian man would do well to keep his head in the Book during this storm and to study the lives of real men like Robert E. Lee, Stonewall Jackson, and President Jefferson Davis.

52 Case law on Male / Female Roles in the Church

1 Timothy 2:8-15

There is not a church in America that can afford to lose the ministry of our precious Christian sisters. These amazing women help with our Sunday schools, mission projects, and service organizations. Their gifts, excellence, and attention to detail make the church work. We are forever indebted to these dedicated sisters. But, they are not permitted to teach men or lead prayer in Church. The context of this passage is church, not the home, and not business.

*1 Timothy 3:15 But if I tarry long, that thou mayest know how thou oughtest **to behave thyself in the house of God**, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and ground of the truth.*

Timothy was commissioned by the Apostle Paul to stay in Ephesus to put the affairs of the church in order (1:5-10; 3:15, 16), to expel false teachers (1, 4), to ordain elders and deacons (3), to establish ethical standards (3, 4, 5, 6), and to adjust the care of widows (5). One of the issues Paul addressed was the role of males and females in the church (2:8-15). The context is, “that thou mayest know how thou oughtest to behave thyself in the house of God” (3:15).



2:8 I will therefore that men pray everywhere, lifting up holy hands, without wrath and doubting.

The word “I will” (Bou,lomai) does not refer to Paul’s personal feelings, preferences, or desires. “I will” refers to God’s will by virtue of Paul’s commission to be a preacher, apostle, and a teacher of the faith among the nations (2:7). In other words, his instruction to Timothy is ordained by the will of God through Paul’s apostolic authority. They are the “commandments of the Lord” (1 Corinthians 14:37).

The word “therefore” (ou=n) refers back to Paul’s earlier instructions that prayer be the main priority of the church (2:1-5).

The word “men” is not “anthropos” but “andros” (a;ndraj). The word “anthropos” is generic term referring to all mankind which includes men and women. But, the word “andros” refers exclusively to the male population in the church; i.e., to men or males. Paul instructs the church to appoint qualified males to lead the church in

public prayer. Women are excluded from this duty. But, so are many of the men. Not just any man may pray. Paul **restricts** the duty of prayer to **qualified men**.

There are four qualifications for leadership in public prayer:

First, the duty to lead in prayer is assigned to men (not women);

Second, the duty of prayer is limited to holy men (lifting up holy hands);

Third, the duty of prayer is limited to happy men (without anger); and

Fourth, the duty of prayer is limited to hopeful men (without doubting). The word “doubting” is the Greek word “dialogismou.” It means to “slice through” or “to speak through,” or “to slice through an argument.” We get our term “dialog” from this word. In this context, Paul eliminates contentious, dubious men from praying. Prayer requires faith and hope.

When it comes to prayer, women are forbidden to lead the congregation in prayer. That duty falls to men, but not just any men. Those who lead the congregation in prayer must be holy, happy, and hopeful.



2:9 In like manner also, that women adorn themselves in modest apparel, with shamefacedness and sobriety; not with broided hair, or gold, or pearls, or costly array; {broided: or, plaited} 2:10 But (which becometh women professing godliness) with good works.

The phrase, “In like manner” (w`sau,tws), is an adverb modifying the main verb in verse eight, “I will” (Bou,lomai). Paul is not saying, “Just as I want men to pray, I want women to pray.”

Rather, Paul is saying, “Just as I have instructions for the men in the church, I also have instructions for the women in the church.”

The infinitive “to adorn” (kosmei/n/) should be immediately connected to the main verb “I will” in verse 8: “I will (2:8) that women adorn themselves (2:9) . . .” The word “adorn” (kosmi,w|) means “to arrange or to adorn.” We get the word “cosmos” and “cosmopolitan” from this term. Women in every age have been concerned about how they look in public. He is not telling the women “to dress down” or not be concerned about their dress. He is telling them to adorn themselves appropriately. By using the word “apparel” (katastolh/|), Paul instructs woman about their external vestments. The word “apparel” is modified by the Greek adjective (kosmi,w|) which is related to the infinitive “to adorn” (kosmei/n). It should be translated “respectable.” Women are to wear appropriate, feminine, respectable apparel in church . . . and all activities. Modest dresses and skirts is appropriate in every age.

Two genitives (of in English) follow defining what Paul means by respectable. The first word “shamefacedness” (aivdou/j) is a noun meaning “modest.” Modesty is the opposite of “sexy” or “revealing.” The phrase “not with braided hair and gold or pearls or costly garments” addresses the opposite challenge of deportment and that is fashion extravagance. God wants women to dress nicely but not “fit to kill.”⁴⁶ Clothing fashions is very much a theological issue. People dress according to their religious beliefs whether those beliefs be right or wrong. Dressing in gray like a mummy from head to toe, or transgender clothing, or unisex clothing wherein a woman looks like a man is not appropriate dress.⁴⁷

The second word “propriety” (swfrosu,nh) expresses the apostle’s concern about the woman’s attitude about dress. It can be translated “sobriety” or “self-control,” and it refers to the internal, orderly arrangement of a woman’s mental and emotional state. The term “good works/deeds” identifies a godly woman’s behavior. Paul is concerned about the *kosmos* of the outer woman (modest dress), and the *kosmos* of the inner woman (propriety), and her public behavior (good works). Real beauty (godliness) begins in the heart (propriety), projects itself in physical appearance (adornment), and expresses itself by good deeds (behavior).

Paul is not telling the women to “dress down” or to hide their femininity, but to arrange themselves appropriately as a Christian woman in the assembly of the church. When attending a public assembly of God’s people, women should adorn themselves respectfully and modestly, i.e., they are to be appropriately covered, not “under dressed” (without modesty) or “overdressed” (with gold and pearl-braided hair and costly clothing). Because male attraction to the opposite sex has a long-established historic tradition, “dressing way up” or “dressing way down” can take the focus off Christ and place it where it does not belong, on women as women.

This instruction is for those “who profess godliness” and demonstrate it by their good works. The context of application is the church, not the workplace. How a woman dresses at work, or in recreation, may be different than how she dresses in a public meeting of the church. But, even here she should seek to dress appropriately for the occasion.⁴⁸

⁴⁶ Younger women are often oblivious to the effects dress has on men, or in the business world, or on their testimony for Christ. The changes in dress style from the roaring twenties to the skin revealing fashions of modern times needs little comment. It is the duty of older women to teach younger women how to dress (Titus 2). Older women must instruct younger women how to be modest, but not drab and old fashion; to be lady-like and feminine without being risqué and seductive. Nudity in the garden of Eden was the beginning of history, not the goal of history.

⁴⁷ It is the duty of men to teach sisters how to dress appropriately for church.

⁴⁸ Dress is much more complicated today than it was in Paul’s time because of so many varied activities in which this population is involved: sports, school, play clothes, skiing, business, parties, conferences, swimming, etc. The key word is *appropriate*-shirts and tank-tops may be acceptable in

Application: It is required that all theology flesh itself out in practice. It is not enough to teach about modesty. It must be applied. Appropriate attire must be identified and embraced. Inappropriate attire must be identified and rejected; that is, decisions about what clothing is applicable in church must be made by church leadership: shorts, tank tops, pajamas, sweatpants, see-through attire, etc. Sloppy dress reflects sloppy theology. Casual dress reflects casual Christianity. A preacher will never get into trouble teaching the principle of modesty. That is safe! Friction occurs and sparks fly when the preacher names fashions that are improper for Christians. Those that identify certain fashions as inappropriate for public deportment will be called an “old fuddy-duddy,” “legalist,” “judgmentalist” and other names. But, practical decisions about tasteless dress must be made because modern people appear to be clueless about dress and what is suitable for public worship. Men need moral courage here! We come to worship the King, and, therefore, short shorts, shorts, tank tops, see-through attire, sweatpants, t-shirts and the like are completely inappropriate for Christian women AND MEN! Dress to please the king! Remember, dress is a reflection of your theology whether it is right or wrong! That is, dress “sharp!” The King is among us! (See how Israel was required to dress in their finest when appearing before Him in Exodus 19.)

2:11 Let the woman learn in silence with all subjection.

Paul continues his instructions on how men and women ought to behave in the church. The word “learn” (manqane,tw) is a present, active, imperative verb implying continuous durative action, and should be translated, “Let a woman learn in . . .” We get the word “disciple” from the noun form of this word. Church should be a place of instruction about the gospel (1:10) and about Scripture (4:15). Women are to assume the role of a disciple in the church of Christ.

The phrases “in silence” and “in subjection” are prepositional phrases describing either the environment of her learning or the instrument of learning.

Women are to learn “in silence? (h`suci,a). The word means just what it says, “silence” or “quietness.” In Paul’s defense (Acts 22:22) before the crowd at Jerusalem, the crowd became quiet (h`suci,an) when they heard Paul speak in Hebrew. In other words, Paul wants women to be quiet like this crowd when the pastor speaks. Women are also to learn “in all subjection.” The word “subjection” (u`potagh) is a military term meaning “to arrange oneself under a superior.” Though

some situations, but are certainly not appropriate in church or the business world. In the business community, professionals realize that dress is a statement of character. Tired of people showing up at conferences in a T-shirt with a little gravy stain in the middle, specialists have introduced the term “sharp casual” to describe appropriate dress. Would to God, that fathers and mothers would teach their young men and young men posture and appropriate dress for every occasion. Godliness does not neglect outer appearance.

the context is not military service, the thought is discerning, agape submission to pastoral leadership. The adjective “all” (pa,shl) defines “subjection,” that is, there are no exceptions. Feminists hate the term “submission,” but it is a Biblical word and godly women will pursue its requirements.

2:12 But I suffer not a woman to teach, nor to usurp authority over the man, but to be in silence.

The verb “I suffer not” (evpitre,pw) should be translated, “I do not permit.” This verb is in the indicative, the mood of reality.⁴⁹ The use of “I” is not Paul the male-chauvinist-rabbi speaking, but Paul the apostle-*not from men nor through man, but through Jesus Christ and God the Father, who raised him from the dead (2:7)*! What is it the apostle does not permit? “I do not permit a woman to teach or to usurp authority over the man.” The word “teach” is the Greek infinitive “dida,skein.” meaning the act of teaching. The word “usurp” comes from the Greek word “auvqentei/n.” Originally, auvqentei/n meant “to kill a man.” Later, it came to mean “having absolute authority over a man.”⁵⁰ Two negatives are used in the verse (ouvk and ouvde.). The negative forbids the action of teaching or the exercising the authority over males in some pastoral function.

The phrase “over men” should be translated “of men” (a genitive). That is, “I do not permit a woman to teach or to have the authority of men” in the church. Women should be in a learning role in the assembly of God’s people, **not** in a teaching role where men are present. This does not mean, however, women cannot teach other women, teach the youth in a church, or hold a staff position in a church. Paul expects women to disciple other women and to teach their children (Titus 2:2-5); i.e., gifted women have a responsibility to teach two-thirds of the church—other women and the children. But, God has not given our lovely sisters the responsibility to pastor a congregation. A woman who takes on the role of a pastor is in rebellion against God's law-order; and, a congregation who calls a woman to preach has commits apostasy. Men must be disciplined by other qualified men, not by women. Likewise, it is best if women disciple women in the order of Titus 2:3-5. This restriction on teaching males publically does **not** mean that a woman has nothing to teach men or that in common communication a women cannot speak her mind or give her opinion on a subject. God forbid! Godly sisters have helped many a man

⁴⁹ In the Korean culture, youth are taught to respect authority. They can do about anything they want unless something is impermissible. So, when a parent wants to restrain a child, the parent will say, “I forbid you to . . .” This is the strongest form of negation in that culture. Likewise, when Paul says, “I do not permit a woman to teach,” such terminology is Paul’s strongest way of stating a negations—something that is just not permissible in the church. He is saying, “I forbid in the name of the Lord for a woman to teach men formally from the pulpit in the church.”

⁵⁰ To kill a man is to exercise absolute authority over the man. Paul does not women exercising authority over men or teaching or pasturing men in the congregation.

from straying from the truth. But, it does eliminate any possibility of a women being a pastor/teacher in any church in the world that names the Name of Christ.

2:13 For Adam was first formed, then Eve. 2:14 And Adam was not deceived, but the woman being deceived was in the transgression.

Paul gives the reason for this prohibition. Women are restricted from being in an authoritative teaching role belonging to men, because of (a) the order of creation, and (b) the danger of repeating the transgression of the fall. This instruction is necessary in order to prevent a repeat of Eve's transgression.

First, it was God's will in the material creation that Adam be the head of his wife and to lovingly lead her. Likewise, it is God's will that men lead in the church, God's new creation, and to lovingly lead His flock. Further, it was God's will that Eve be a *help meet* to her husband (Genesis 2:18), and it is God's will and that women be a helpmeet in the church; that is, in a supportive complementary role as an assistant administrator. Second, God forbids a woman to lead men because it was the woman who usurped authority over Adam. Because Adam resigned positive leadership, the human race fell. What happened in the original creation must not be repeated in the new creation!!

Paul does not say women should not be teachers of men because they are ignorant, ungifted, less skilled, or unspiritual. He does not say that women should not teach men because the culture did not support it. Every pastor can name at least a half-dozen sisters in the church who are more spiritual, more skilled, and more gifted than he. The teaching role is not determined by skill, but by sex . . . and only qualified males at that! Better to have a weak, growing male teach the congregation than to have a more gifted woman teaching the congregation. How else will a church raise up strong, masculine, male leaders? Further, "real men" will not permit women to lead in times of war, either in the church or the military. Such condition is against the creative order, against nature, and against the laws of nature's God.

2:15 Notwithstanding she shall be saved in childbearing, if they continue in faith and charity and holiness with sobriety.

Among feminists, this is one of the most hated verses in Scripture. The phrase "she shall be saved in childbearing" does not mean "to be saved from judgment" but to be saved from repeating Eve's transgression. God has a role for men—to lead in the family and in the church, and God has a role for women—to lead their children in the things of God.

The word "she" is singular, and the word "they" is plural. Why does Paul switch from the singular to the plural? And, who does the word "they" refer to? "They" could refer to women, or "they" could refer to children, or "they" could refer to men and women. In the context, Paul moves from the individual *woman* to the corporate

subjects, *women*. If women continue in faith, and charity, and holiness and sobriety, they will be saved from repeating Eve's transgression.

In summary, to dismiss this passage by claiming that it is culturally irrelevant⁵¹ or that Paul is a male chauvinist does injury to the integrity Scripture. Using this argument, one could dismiss any passage of Scripture from application to the church. Paul does not forbid women to teach men because they are less qualified, but because of the purpose of God. It is God's will that qualified men lead the church in prayer. It is God's will that qualified men teach the entire congregation of God's people. It is not God's will that gifted, knowledgeable, qualified women Bible teachers lead in public prayer or teach God's Word where men and women are present.

It is God's will that qualified men lead His church; that women take a supportive role in the church; that men disciple men, and women disciple women.

Application: How do we apply this passage to our modern structures? The context is the assembly of the whole church in a given place. Paul is not necessarily addressing some of our informal gatherings, small group prayer, or home Bible studies. He is not saying a man has nothing to learn from a godly sister. He is not saying that a woman cannot give a missionary report or a testimony about what God has done in her family. The context is authoritative teaching and leadership in the church. There is **NO SCRIPTURAL AUTHORITY** for a female pastor. All female preachers should resign. The bottom line is that when the whole church comes together in one place, that qualified males are to pray and that a qualified male is to teach the congregation. Women are to assume a supporting role. As to small groups, or a radio Bible class, or a marriage class taught by a couple, each institution is going to have to work out a policy that honors the intent of Scripture within the culture.

⁵¹ Today's "politically correct" church has dismissed this passage saying that Paul's instruction was simply a cultural application to his time and not something applicable to the modern church. But, this is pride! If we dismiss this passage using the "cultural argument," then we could dismiss the cross, or baptism, or the Lord's Supper or any admonition in the Bible as something cultural. Using the cultural argument, the Episcopalian Church ordained a homosexual in July, 2003. How did they do it? The liberals said that the Bible's prohibition against homosexuality was a cultural prohibition fitting for biblical times, but in modern times, the "Spirit" (what spirit?) is leading the Episcopal Church to accept and approve of homosexual unions. Once a church abdicates the authority of Scripture and misapplies the cultural argument, then that church sets itself up to be blown and tossed by every wind of doctrine.

53 Case law for Men and Women in Titus

53.1 Six Marks of Christian Manhood

Titus 2:2 That the aged men be sober, grave, temperate, sound in faith, in charity, in patience.



The word "aged men" is the Greek word *presbutas* which refers to one's age in years. Six marks of Christian manhood are identified:

Sober (*nephaleos*): Literally the word means free from the addiction of alcohol; that is, he is equitable or in his right mind. Spiritually, it refers to the *sweet reasonableness* that characterize grandfathers; it is the opposite of

being emotional and irrational; angry and bitter; subjective and glandular.

Grave (*semnos*): This word refers to being "respectable" or "venerable" or "reverend" or "serious." The ESV translates the word "dignified." The mature Christian looks, speaks, and acts like men of honor and dignity regardless of their economic status in society. A Christian man is a gentleman. He carries his head high with shoulders up. He stands tall because he is made in God's image and is the object of Christ's love and affection. Even his dress express modesty and dignity. It is the opposite of casual and careless. He is serious rather than silly; respectful, rather than disgraceful; sharp rather than banal.

Temperate (*sophron*): This word is often translated "self-control." It refers to sanity of mind and the ability to harness one's desires. The mature man is to be a moderate man, in control, not given to excess laughter, anger, or food and drink. He controls his desires, his mind, his speech, and his actions. Furthermore, *sophron* is the one and only command given to younger men in verse six. It is all a young men can do to throttle the engines at work in his person. A man must conquer himself before he tries to conquer the world. A man must lead himself before he can lead a wife. The first requisite of leadership is self-control. Never trust a man who lacks self-control. He will poke out your eye, crush your hopes, and eat your heart out (Proverbs 25:19).

Sound in faith (*hugiaino ta pistis*): Older men are exhorted to be healthy and whole in the faith, to be mature and balanced in doctrine having studied the whole of God's Revelation. A holy man practices a life of study and applies himself to learn

the Word of God and its Theology. He is a Bible man and a discerner of truth and error. Furthermore, he makes appropriate applications of Scripture to his own life and family. Terms like balanced, wholeness, grounded in truth come to mind.

Charity (*agape*): The word "charity" refers to *agape* love. The mature man is a gracious and loving man. He is a gentle man. While he believes in self-defense, he is a threat to no man. He excels in love because he has a canon of love; that is, he is a man who defines love by God's law, for "love is a fulfilling of the law." He does not define love as romantic feelings or a slobbering display of ooey gooey affection. He is concerned about actions. He is not only a loving man, but a lawful man; that is, he is not a danger to his neighbors or their property. This does not mean he is passive or weak. He is not made of Honey-coated, Boo Boo Bear Cereals. He does not believe love is the solve-all for human problems. His love for God drives him to hate evil and workers of iniquity (Psalm 97:10). He makes room for tough-love and the rule of law. The charitable man has convictions, but he is probably on some government hate-list (1 John 3:13). While a lawful man, he may not be a "legal" man; that is, he is not too concerned about being in conformity to zillions of Caesar's laws, but he is vigorously committed to the simplicity of the law of Christ.

Patience (*hupomeno*): The Greek word *hupomeno* means to "remain under." It refers to that excellence of spirit that continues to be godly even under pressure. It is that quality of life that loves and shows grace even while he may be experiencing personnel adversities. It is the ability to love a wife and play with children even when depressed and burdened down by the pressures at work. The mature man does not run from problems. He stays on the Potter's Wheel while under the painful process of sanctification. He does not revolt when he is "poured from vessel to vessel" (Jeremiah 48:11). He is bearing even though he has a cross to bear.

Titus 2:3-5 The aged women likewise, that they be in behaviour as becometh holiness, not false accusers, not given to much wine, teachers of good things; That they may teach the young women to be sober, to love their husbands, to love their children, To be discreet, chaste, keepers at home, good, obedient to their own husbands, that the word of God be not blasphemed.



Paul is addressing older women (*presbutidas*) who are seasoned Christians. He challenged these sisters to develop a way of life consistent with temple servants. The Greek word "becometh holiness" is an adjective describing the noun "behavior." It refers to a deportment consistent with actions suitable to sacred duties. The root word (*ieros*) refers to

that which belongs to divinity or that which is God-like; i.e., a deportment consistent with the character of the Lord God--character revealed in the Ten Commandments.

Furthermore, there are some behaviors they are to be avoided like the Black plague: "not slanderers" and not "slaves to much wine." The word "slanderer" is derived from the Greek word *diabolos* the name given to the Devil who is "the accuser of the brethren" and the "accuser of husbands" (Revelation 12:10). Here Paul is referring to that discerning, critical, accusing spirit that comes through the experience of discerning men. Older women often have strong opinions and 20/20 perceptions when it comes to people. But, without a bridle on the tongue, an unrestrained woman can inject death into relationships. It has been said, "A six-inch tongue can slay a six foot man." It is true. A sharp tongue can slice a man in half.

Positively, mature women in Christ are called to be "teachers of good" or "good teachers." Only God has a right to define good. When man defines good, we end up with "therapeutic abortion" and feminists in the pulpit. Good is defined in the Ten Commandments. Further, every command is good. Thus, these mature sisters are instructed to teach that which is consistent with the law of the LORD God.

Older women should teach younger women the skills and disciplines needed to have a successful home and marriage. Experienced wives and mothers will find their greatest avenue of ministry in teaching younger wives what they need to know to be effective wives, mothers, and homemakers. ~ John MacArthur



53.2 Seven Marks of a Christian Womanhood

The word "teach" or "train" is a subjunctive expressing a purpose; that is, it should be the purpose of older, mature Christian woman to train younger women in seven areas of virtue.

First, it is a mark of Christian women "to love their husbands." The word "love" here is not *agape love*, but *philandrous*; i.e., *practical, caring, on-hands type love*.

Generally speaking, pagan women don't have a clue about loving their man. Many are good at demanding, complaining, and socializing, but they are not good at meeting the needs of their husbands. They are good at eating, sleeping, partying, and watching soap operas, but they not good at understanding their man and following his rules for the home. Most men are quite simple in that their needs are few: Most men can be quite happy if they come home to (A) a good meal and an ordered home, (B) a loving affectionate wife, and (B) a woman that respects his authority and follows his rules for the home.

In marriages that are in trouble, you will find a woman from Venus that lives with romantic idealism or a grouchy, complaining woman who barks at her husband like a Chihuahua on GNC "Rip Fuel." No man can long endure coming home to a woman who opens a can of beans, is as cool as a cucumber, or who drills him like a prosecuting attorney. A wife that's coughing out criticism like a person hacking up flem isn't that attractive. A woman who can't cook, is too tired for a bedroom rendezvous, and whose conversation is filled with bitter protests will find herself as lonely as a hinny among fillies and mares. No man wants to come home to a barking dog.

Therefore, mature Christian women are exhorted to teach younger woman how to cook a tasty meal, keep a clean, orderly house, how to care for her husband's need for intimacy, and to weigh her words so that they are always respectful and edifying. No barbs allowed! An angry, neck jerking, motor mouth, in-your-face feminist will find herself looking to the government for food stamps.

Second, it is a mark of Christian women to "love their children." When the word "love" is mentioned most women think of rule-bending indulgence or ooey goey, marshmallow permissiveness--the kind of over-protective love that can ruin children. Love must be defined. We dare not draw upon a pagan definition of love or the psychological model of love. Love is defined as obeying God's commandments:

1 John 5:2 By this we know that we love the children of God, when we love God, and keep his commandments.

The home is the institution of education. It is the duty of Christian parents to train their children in the basic skills that they need to be successful in life. One of these disciplines is law. The devout home is a place where children learn the law of the LORD God, His judgments, and His commands. When a woman teaches her children to love the LORD God and to keep his commandments, she is well on her way to being a good mother. Unlike pagan women who are yellers and screamers who build their houses near Mount Vesuvius, Christian mothers live near the tree of life and bring their children up in the "nurture and admonition of the Lord."

Third, it is a mark of Christian women to be "discreet" (*sophronizo*). The word discreet is a reference to *self-control*. Self-control is a rose in the bonnet of a good woman. It refers to the thermostat on her emotions and the filter on her mouth. It is the opposite of being anxious or worried or loquacious. Pagan women are easily governed by their thoughts and emotions. Husband and home are often neglected. Pagan women are known for their explosive emotions and sharp tongues. When troubles arise, a carnal woman can become a chatty-Cathy or a worrywart or as critical as the Washington Post about a Republican politician. Pagans are not called "Bi....s" for nothing. Christian women trust God for all things and exercise control over their minds, emotions, and tongue. For a sharp, bitter tongue set on fire by hell will burn her house to the ground.

Fourth, it is a mark of Christian women to be "chaste" and pure (*hagnos*).

Purity is the Lily of virtues. The word "pure" reminds us of snowflakes, of the pristine waters of a high mountain stream, of a clear blue sky with cotton like clouds, and a tall glass of crystal-clear water. The word purity refers to moral goodness, modesty, and singularity of devotion to God and family. It is the opposite of sophisticated.⁵² Purity is hard to find in a world where the air is foul, and the streams are muddy. Humanistic man likes to build their homes near the Poisonous Tree.

Christian wives are known for their pure thoughts, sound words, and good works. They are aware of women who sleep under the Poisonous Tree, dress like prostitutes and who have wasps on their lips. But they shun their grim ways. Christian women drink from the water of life; dress modestly and adorn themselves with clothes that complement their femininity; decorate their homes with symbols of life, and anoint their lips with the law of kindness.

Fifth, it is a mark of Christian women "to be keepers at home" (*oikouros*).

This is a contrast to the seductress whose feet are never at home and always on the street (Proverbs 7). Pagan women like to socialize, flit around, and mingle with the boys. The Christian woman, however, is focused on her home. Godly women are a cross between Virgin Mary and Betty Crocker. They are homemakers intensely devoted to their family and its prosperity. In a godly home you can hear the vacuum cleaner running, washing machines working, and children working and laughing. A woman who leaves the home and runs for public office takes a step down. There is no higher calling for a woman than that of being a wife and mother.

The Christian woman as a housewife looking diligently to the affairs of her family was the standard in Puritan New England:

In seventeenth century New England no respectable person questioned that a woman's place was in the home. By the laws of Massachusetts as by those of England a married woman could hold no property of her own. When she became a wife, she gave up everything to her husband and devoted herself exclusively to managing his household. Henceforth her duty was to "keep at home, educating her children, keeping and improving what is got by the industry of the man." (Edmund S. Morgan, The Puritan Family (New York, 1944), p. 42.)

One should not underestimate the impact of social engineers upon the Christian family. Lusting for a greater tax base, politicians saw homemakers as a "human resource" for government. Thus, in the 1970's, feminism was born. Gloria Steinem and others were financed by the Banksters to captain their cause. A pseudo war on

⁵² Sophisticated: worldly-wise; not naive; manipulative and misleading; complex and intricate.

women was announced wherein women were pushed out of the home and into the working world. The man's wages were reduced and soon it took two incomes to provide for the family. Even teenagers have to find part time jobs to support the family. Consequently, it has become increasingly difficult for Christian women to be "keepers at home." Even in the best homes, the woman has been forced into the workplace to help pay the family bills for periods of time. While it is still possible for a woman to "be a keeper at home," the challenges are real. Husband and wife will have to seek the LORD God and carefully plan how they can work together to keep mom at home with the kids.

Sixth, it is a mark of Christian women to be "good" (*agathos*). The meaning behind "good" is that of kind heartedness. Pagan women are known for catty behavior and tongues as sharp as a butcher's knife. Christian women are known for their generous spirit. The "good" here must not be defined by man, but defined by God. Modern women define "good" as a woman working in an office on the top floor of some skyscraper in a big city. "Good" is defined by God's law. It is good for a woman to be keeper at home. It is good for a woman to honor her husband and to arrange herself under his law order. It is good for a woman to share the fruits of her labor with her neighbors and to be a "stay-at-home" mom with her children.

Seventh, it is the mark of Christian women to be "obedient to their own husbands." Carnal women obey their own inclinations. Furthermore, they see themselves in competition with men fighting to the bitter end for supremacy of the home. Cultic religions drift into a matriarchal home where the men are nothing but passive participants under the powerful thumb of dominating women. But, not so with Biblical women. Mature Christian woman understand that God appointed men to be the head of the home and that women are called to be "helpmeets" in furthering the purposes of God in the family.

The first mark of a Christian woman is to love (*philandros*) her husband; that is, to love him in practical, need-meeting ways. We get the word "philanthropy" from this Greek word which means to promote the welfare of another. In the context, it means that she is to understand her husband's needs and to find practical ways of ministering to him.

In the seventh mark, Paul wanted to make sure that older Christian women return to the foundations of authority as set up by God in Genesis; that is, to train women "to obey" their husbands and avoid repeating Eve's transgression. The word for "obey" is *hupotasso*, a military term representing the subordination of soldiers to their commander. It is present passive participle and should be rendered as "be keepers of the home for good, while being obedient to their husbands." As young women captain their home, they are to be mindful of their husband's supreme command and to order the home under the parameters set by their king.

The grand reason that older women need to teach younger women the marks of Christian womanhood is so the "word of God be not blasphemed." The word "blasphemed" means "to speak against." Here is a quote from the "evil Bible," an atheist network:

The problem with their Christian approach lies not only in an oft- noted failure to practice what they preach, but an equally pronounced tendency to ignore what the Bible itself, preaches.

Paul complains that the Name of God was blasphemed among the Gentiles on account of the evil deeds of the Jews (Romans 2:24; see Ezekiel 36:20-23), and he did not want the error repeated in the church. That is, in obeying their husbands, Christian women have an opportunity to glorify God by their reverent conduct in the home. There are none so intolerant as those who preach tolerance. The eye of pagans is upon Christians and they are more than ready to indict Christian women for practicing "hypocrisy to the highest degree."

The atheist rant continues:

Christians practice what can only be described as "selective morality". What they like, they cling to and shove down other's throats; what they don't like, they ignore vehemently.

In this case, the critics⁵³ of Christianity, have tossed a two-ringer horseshoe.

Thus, Christian women, and men, must revisit the Third Commandment, and seek to be true men who do not take the name of the LORD God in vain.

⁵³ But, it is not only Christians that practice "selective morality," the humanist is ten times the villain picking and choosing his morality like a buksy customer at flea market. He demands government and all its institutions practice the same godlessness. Removing the Ten Commandments and prayer from schools and "transgender" accommodations come to mind.

54 Case Law for Wives in 1 Peter 3:1-6

1 Peter 3:1-2 Likewise, ye wives, be in subjection to your own husbands; that, if any obey not the word, they also may without the word be won by the conversation of the wives; 2 While they behold your chaste conversation coupled with fear.



A theme in 1 Peter is holiness. God calls men and woman to be holy and devoted to the law of the LORD God (1:15). Another theme in Peter is and how to suffer well (2:21). Holiness must be worked out on the bumpy roads of life's pilgrimage. Just as Peter has a message for the suffering Christian in chapter two, he has instruction for Christian wives and husbands in chapter three. He

addresses the wife first.

The adverb "**likewise**" directs us back to the previous section addressing the suffering of the Lord Jesus Christ through whose "wounds we are healed" (3:24). Not all wives have a husband devoted to Christ. Peter understands the varying conditions of marriage and that the fruit of the Poisonous Tree is a work in families producing death. He also knows that Christian women are connected to the tree of life and have the potential to be "wounded healers." Peter exhorts Christian women to follow the Lord's example and to be the instrument of healing for an onerous husband that doesn't submit to God's authority over him.

The first step toward winning her husband's affections is for the woman to be "**subject**" (hupotasso) to him; that is, to be an obedient, respectful wife. Peter builds on the original creative order in Genesis that the man is to rule over his wife. The woman is not charged with being subject to men (plural). That would be insane. But, she is under law to arrange herself under her husband's authority. All family problems begin here; i.e., with a fractious⁵⁴ woman who won't subject herself to her husband's authority (Genesis 3:16).

The "**if any**" is a first-class conditional that is assumed true; i.e., even though the man is married to a believer in Christ, he remains an unbeliever. This condition is followed by a **purpose clause**, "that they may be won" to Christ through the godly behavior of the wife and her voluntary submission to the man's authority in the

⁵⁴ Fractious: a reference to an animal that won't submit to the harness; peevish, irritable.

home. The means of winning the unbelieving husband is not by mouthing or criticizing the man into concession, but by godly behavior. The wife here is not exhorted to talk about the gospel or to lecture her husband, but to live out her faith in quiet godly service under the eye of God; i.e., to "shut up" and to put flesh and bones on her faith so the husband can see the difference faith makes in Christian women. A woman struggling with difficulties in her marriage due to her husband's lack of faith would do well to remember that "actions speak louder than words;" that flogging a man with her tongue doesn't produce a happy man. Faith at work in the hands and feet is more important in the home than faith on the lips; that is, the concerned wife needs to learn how to give sermons through silence.

When a child was asked to describe love, here is what she wrote:

When my grandmother got arthritis , she couldn't bend over and paint her toenails anymore.. So my grandfather does it for her all the time , even when his hands got arthritis too. That's love.' (Dennis Chapman, What is Love)

The phrase "**obey not the word**" must be clarified. Like all of God's commands this instruction has limits. Peter is not asking women to submit to husbands who are lawless criminals or to husbands that are abusive and violent. That would be an assignment to a hellhole on earth. "Obey not the word" is a reference to a married man that is not a believer; that is, he has not embraced the gospel for some reason or another. We must assume that the man is flawed but not so insolent as to think that he is totally dominated by evil. The wife may be wounded emotionally by her callous husband, but Peter sees an opportunity here for the wife to become a WOUNDED HEALER just like our Lord Jesus Christ; that somehow, her love for the Lord would be greater than her hurts and wounds (2:24); and, that she should do all within her power to make her husband a happy man. This is Christianity at its best!! Faith with skin on is the purest kind of religion. God is not asking women to submit to tyrants, but to husbands who have not yet embraced the truth regarding the death, burial, and resurrection of our Lord and Savior.

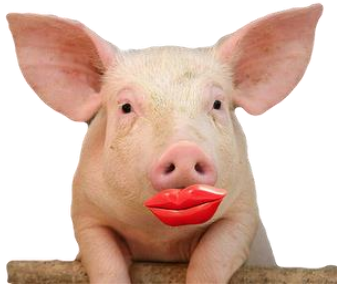


**Julia, Daughter of Emperor
Titus 79 AD**

3-4 Whose adorning let it not be that outward adorning of plaiting the hair, and of wearing of gold, or of putting on of apparel; But let it be the hidden man of the heart, in that which is not corruptible, even the ornament of a meek and quiet spirit, which is in the sight of God of great price.

Peter now gives a description of the beautiful, holy women of God. The word "**adorning**" is translated from the nominative *kosmos*, the

last word in the sentence. It refers to the outer dress or physical arrangement of a woman. We get the word "cosmopolitan" from this word which refers to beauty and fashion-- fashion referred to here as "plaiting the hair," "gold" jewelry," and refined "apparel." The sophisticated woman pursuing fame and a career places a premium on outward charm and good looks. Not so with a Christian woman. She does not neglect her appearance, but places a priority on internal beauty.



We have a strong contrast in verse three through the use of the conjunction "*alla*" which is translated "**But, let it be . . .**" By his imperative "*Let it not*", Peter is condemning an emphasis on external fashion to the exclusion of internal character. Lipstick on a pig doesn't change ugly.

He calls Christian women to put physical fashion on the "back burner" and to move "spiritual beauty" to the front burner; i.e., to stress the weaving an excellent spirit in the "hidden man of the heart." Peter is not ordering Christian women to dress in a pile of rags, but to braid their character with a meek and quiet spirit. As we are all aware, external beauty fades over time and youth gives way to the wrinkles of old age. Spiritual beauty is "not corruptible;" that is, it never goes out of style.

The precious duvet (doo'va) that God is threading in the Christian heart of men and women is a rare interlace called "**a meek and quiet spirit.**"

Meekness is not weakness. It is strength under control--strength at rest due to the quiet confidence that God is in control of all things. The meek woman is not unemotional, but her emotions are tethered to the sovereignty of God. She is not without opinions, but they need not be expressed. A meek spirit is the opposite of crushing force and over-powering argument; it is the opposite of being controlled by fear and the impulse to equivocate on every issue in the home. It is the confidence of having muscle without having to flex. It is the knowledge that one is accepted in God's sight even though her husband projects signs of displeasure. Because she is in Christ and an object of God's love, she doesn't have to make demands on her husband or manipulate him through chicanery. While she would like to have his approval, his approval is not necessary because she knows that she is "accepted in the Beloved." In surrendering to her husband, she knows she is doing the will of God . . . and His approval is enough (Ephesians 1:6; Romans 12:2-3; 1 Thessalonians 5:18).

A quiet spirit is one that is at rest in the middle of a storm. Its sails are dignity and poise. When the thunder clouds gather and the winds howl and scream, the quiet spirit is hushed because it knows God has her best interest at heart. While the pagan woman is tossed about on the white-capped waves on the tempest of marriage, the Christian heart is at rest because her confidence is anchored to the

cross. While the carnal woman is filled with doubts about her safety and demands to get her way, the quiet heart is filled with assurance that "all things are working together for good" because she loves God. She knows the Potter has his hands on her vessel. Yes, she wishes her husband was more sensitive and less abrasive, but his lack of response to Christ does not determine her response to Christ. She knows God's law for the home, and accepts it. Furthermore, she knows that actions speak louder than words and that the gospel is being "fleshed out" through her godly conduct.

5-6 For after this manner in the old time the holy women also, who trusted in God, adorned themselves, being in subjection unto their own husbands: Even as Sara obeyed Abraham, calling him lord: whose daughters ye are, as long as ye do well, and are not afraid with any amazement.

Again, we have the word "**adorn**" (*kosmos*). The Christian woman knows she is not alone. Other godly women have been married to insensitive, rock-headed husbands--men who make decisions with catastrophe written all over it. Living under a flawed, impetuous man is scary indeed. Oh, that husbands would take the advice of their perceptive wives. But, they often don't! And, this is the trial of women--having to follow proud, insensitive men. The challenge for Christian women is believing God while following their visible, imperfect head; and, the challenge of Christian men is believing God while following a perfect but invisible Head. Both take faith.

Notice the two traits of holy women. The beautiful women of old adorned themselves in two ways: First, they adorned themselves with the robe of faith and trusted that God knew what He was doing by assigning them such flawed men. Second, these holy women adorned themselves with the sandals of obedience subjecting themselves unto their own husbands; that is, they closed their eyes to the circumstances, crossed their fingers, trusted God, and obeyed their husband's orders. *Not always easy, but always Right!!*

Sarah's example comes into focus. "**Sarah obeyed Abraham calling him Lord.**" His leaving the watered lands of Mesopotamia to live near the plains of Beersheba, asking her to identify herself as Abraham's sister to Pharaoh, deferring the decision of the choice of real estate to Lot, organizing a 400-man army to pursue five kings to rescue Lot, and taking Hagar for a surrogate must have seemed like madness to Sarah. But, she submitted herself to Abraham's decisions.

When and where did Sarah call Abraham "lord?" There is no recorded spoken word where Sarah addresses Abraham as "Lord Abraham." But, there is a text that records Sarah's thoughts in Genesis 18:12, "*Therefore Sarah laughed within herself, saying, After I am waxed old shall I have pleasure, my lord being old also?*" Like all women, Sarah was interested in her three visitors and their discussion. While she was making preparation for her guests, she was ease dropping on the conversation. When the heavenly beings informed Abraham that Sarah's was going to give birth

to a son in her old age, she laughed and shrugged it off. But, in the account, she called Abraham "lord" in her heart. This was her thinking process. What amazing insight! Sarah called Abraham "lord" in her heart, not to his face. Over time, Abraham's authority in the home was accepted in the heart of Sarah. She truly saw him as her master having authority over her. This was a great work of the Spirit in her life. Furthermore, this passage is showered with grace. In a state of unbelief about her being able to have children, the Spirit of God sees the good in her thoughts wherein she called her husband "lord," . . . and the Spirit was pleased to record this virtue for the admonition of all. In other words, the Spirit wants all Christian women to follow her faith . . . and if they do, they will become the beautiful, lovely, precious daughters of Sarah. Such women are a treasure . . . and they are hard to find.

The daughters of Sarah are not women of fear, but of faith; not women of amazement, but women of expectation. Pagan women give into hysteria and fear; but the daughters of Sarah have a quiet confidence that the LORD God is in control of every detail of their lives . . . and that God will guide and protect them through their husbands; that He, has the power to lead and direct their man without them having to say a word.

55 Case Law for Husbands in 1 Peter 1:7

1 Peter 1:7 Likewise, ye husbands, dwell with *them* according to knowledge, giving honor unto the wife, as unto the weaker vessel, and as being heirs together of the grace of life; that your prayers be not hindered.



When I was in Israel, I was talking to a wealthy Bedouin about my family. I showed him a picture of one of my two beautiful, unmarried daughters who were in their twenties. He grabbed the picture and took a second look. "I will give you twelve camels for her," he stated. "That's the highest price that a man can pay for a wife. It's my final offer." I smiled. During the archaeological dig I inquired about the bridal price among Arab Bedouins. I found out there were two camel wives, four camel wives, but no one ever paid more than 8 camels for a bride. I learned that if I had 12 camels I would be a highly esteemed man among Bedouins in Israel. Further, people told me that a woman's whole identity and self-respect was tied to her bridal price--that the more a man paid for his bride, the better he treated her, and the more esteemed she was in that community. And, this is the purpose of Peter's instruction--that men might honor their wives. A man who does not honor and respect a wife has been suckin' on lemons from the Poisonous Tree.

The adverb "**likewise**" links Peter's instruction with his previous section; that is, just as he has instructions for wives about their duties in marriage, he has instructions for men on their duties to wives. Furthermore, it links this section to Christ as the "Shepherd and Overseer of your souls" in chapter two. Holy men understand that just as Christ is the Great Shepherd, God calls them to shepherd their wives with tenderness and care.



Two participles are used in an imperative since to describe the nature of a man's leadership in the home. The **first imperative** is "**dwell with them according to knowledge.**" **Probably**, the most common complaint about husbands by women is that they do not listen to them. Christian men are instructed to accumulate knowledge about their wives and to lead them accordingly; that is, a godly man asks lots of questions and listens intently to his wife's desires, wishes, hopes, fears, and preferences. A holy husband is a man with big ears! He is a conversationalist. He listens without interrupting his wife or entering into a debate. He carefully considers her input in major decisions. He does not act unilaterally. He consults his wife and listens to her advice. This does not mean that he will always

follow her counsel or even choose her preferences, but it does mean than in ever decision, he acts with her best interest in mind. And, when he makes a decision contrary to her wishes, he gives her the reason for his decision.

The **second participial imperative** is "**giving honor unto the wife as the weaker vessel.**" The word "**honor**" means "weight" or "value" or to set a "high price" on a thing. The wives of carnal men often feel worthless. But, not so among wives living with a holy man. Men devoted to Christ treat their wives as a treasure, a priceless jewel, a "twelve camel woman." They demonstrate that value by listening to them and treating them as a special pearl--a gift from God.

The spiritual man listens to his wife and honors her for **three reasons**:

The first reason is that women are the "**weaker vessel**;" that is, women are not as physically as strong as men, and in some ways, women are more delicate than men--more sensitive to emotions, feelings, tones and words. Because God's man understands that women are more sensitive than men, he guards his conversation so as to eliminate anger, bitterness, and other emotions that cripple good communication. Carnal men explode and erupt into emotional tirades and bitter debate. Good husbands exercise self-control and employ words of life. They know that "life and death" are in the power of the tongue. They avoid the Poisonous Tree and chose words sprouting from the Tree of life.

Second, good men treat their wives as "**heirs together of the grace of life.**" They understand that life on this earth is short, and because of this, they seek to make a woman's pilgrimage on earth a pleasant journey. Life is a gift from God and the godly man treats his wife's life as a special treasure to be guarded and nurtured. Furthermore, he understands that he lives with the daughter of a King, and therefore, treats her well-- like a fellow heir on the road to God's Kingdom.



Third, the discerning man knows that if he does not listen to his wife that God will not listen to him--"**so that your prayers may not be hindered;**"that if he is callous and ignores her requests, God will ignore his requests; that if he is not sensitive to her needs, that his prayers will be hindered. Happy wives feel heard, unhappy wives feel alone and isolated.

In summary, there are only three things that can go wrong with a marriage: want of devotion to the LORD God and His law-order; sin at work in the heart of wife causing her to disrespect her husband's authority and rebel against him; or, sin at work in the heart of the husbands that makes him callous to the needs of his wife, and that cause him to dishonor her as a gift from God.

56 Headcoverings, the Sign of a Family Under Christ

1 Corinthians 11:4-5 Every man who has *something* on his head while praying or prophesying, disgraces his head. But every woman who has her head uncovered while praying or prophesying, disgraces her head; for she is one and the same with her whose head is shaved.



It has been a tradition for men to remove their hats during prayer and for women to wear a headcovering during prayer since the conception of Christianity. Christian art is dominated by women adorning themselves with a veil or scarf. Among the Amish, Mennonites, and Plymouth Brethren, and some Presbyterian and Baptist churches the practice still continues. All of these groups have a high view of Scripture and their people are known for their piety. In the major denominations, men still remove their hats in church, but unfortunately, the wearing of the veil by women has been abrogated.

There are several reasons why modern women do not cover their heads in prayer. First, the American church is very much a product of the culture. Around 1960 the practice of women covering their heads in prayer shifted. In the age of movie stars and the inauguration of skin magazines, everything came off. Bikinis were in! Feminism burst on the scene and women were propagandized into the cult of arrogance. By the time the mini-skirt rage hit the pop culture (1970s), headcoverings all but disappeared in the church.

Second, the rise of feminism influenced theology and modern churchmen culturalized the practice teaching that headcoverings was just a local Corinthian problem wherein the early church did not want their women to look like temple prostitutes. But, the trend to culturalize uncomfortable parts of Scripture has infected the church to such an extent that even homosexuality, a Biblical abomination, is being accepted by churchmen. Women are now being accepted as “elders” and in some apostate churches the pastor is an apostate hinny. Following the cultural argument, why not culturalize baptism, the Lord’s Supper, the cross, and blood atonement?

Third, we are living in a day of apostasy. Few Christians read the Bible. Fewer still study the Scripture and believe in the principle of “sola Scriptura.” Law is placed in

juxtaposition to grace. Even the principle of male headship in the home and the duty of a woman to obey her husband seems like an alien dogma to modern Americans.

Fourth, women spend a great deal of time preparing to go to church and which one of them wants to mess up their hair by wearing a veil? But, instead of pleasing men, woman would do better to figure out what pleases God . . . and, wearing a veil pleases the Lord.

Let's look at Paul's argument:



Paul calls the church to imitate him as he imitates Christ (11:1).

The topic of this chapter is **headship** (11:1-2), **headcoverings** (11:3-16), and **Head remembering** (11:17ff). Paul advances an ancient truth, **the hierarchy of authority**: God, Christ, man, woman. This chain of command appears to be a solid, biblical, unchanging order related to Adam and the headship of the man in the family. Paul exhorts men to remove any head wear in worship and for women to cover their heads ("something down the head" like a scarf) for the following reasons:

Headship: The grand subject of this section is authority. God, Christ, man, and woman form the chain of command. Headcoverings are a sign of a women's obedience to God and acceptance of His law-order. The wearing of a veil is a symbol of the man's authority over the woman, and that she is under her husband's coverture. The practice of a woman covering her head is a visible, object lesson that God created man to be the head of his home and a woman to be his "helpmeet."

Shame (11:5-6): Paul taught that if a man prays while having his head covered (*kata keppalas ekon*) having something down the head like a tallit or prayer shawl, he disgraces his head. The term "his head" appears to be a reference to Christ. A man who will not remove his hat during prayer shames the Lord Jesus Christ.

Likewise, a woman who prays uncovered (*akatakalupto*), shames her head. It is not clear whether Paul is saying that an uncovered woman embarrasses herself or her husband. Since the context is headship and authority, I assume an unveiled woman shames her husband and disregards God's chain of command. Paul is emphatic! Every woman praying without something "down the head" expresses contempt for God's law-order and reproaches her husband. If a woman will not cover her hair, she was to have her head shaved that she might emotionally feel the shame of praying while uncovered. An uncovered woman was like the *hetairai*, the temple prostitutes in Corinth and the adulteress who was punished by having to shave her

own head (Numbers 5:18). A shaved head is a universal stigma among women. So shameful was a woman with a shaved head, a shaven woman would be forced to wear a veil until her hair grew out again--a hard way to learn this lesson in that day!

Theology (11:7): The reason given for the practice of veiling was theological. Removing a covering from the head of a male was a statement regarding the glory of God. When men remove their hats they are saying, "May the glory of God be seen in this place." When a woman covers her head, she is making a statement, "May the glory of man be concealed in this place so the glory of God may be made known." This is consistent with our Lord's prayer, "glorify you Son, that the Son may glorify you" (John 17:1). When a woman approaches God, she does so while graciously recognizing the role that He created for her. The veil is a statement that the Christian woman accepts her husband's authority (or father's authority) over her. The whole idea of a unisex approach to God is alien to Scripture. He made us male and female and each has an ordained approach to God in worship.

Creative Order and Purpose (11:8): The practice of hat removal and headcovering recognizes God's created order and purpose. It recognizes the order of creation, that man was created first and that woman was created second. Man (adam) was the head of the family—the woman his helpmeet. A woman's practice of covering her head is a symbolic statement that proclaims the creative order and the purpose of the sexes--that woman was created for the man, not the man for the woman. Sexual differences are not the result of the fall, but the product of creation and God's law-order for the home. To prove the validity of the practice, Paul uses Biblical authority from Genesis. If wearing a headcovering was merely a cultural practice, why would Paul appeal to the "Big Guns" in Torah to fortify a local custom? You don't use Genesis foundations to shoulder up some local custom. It would be inappropriate for any man to use the heavy artillery of the Law to support a fad or a passing fashion.

Paul adds in this verse even the truth of the universal dependence of the sexes on each other lest any male should drift into arrogance and pride. Headcovering is about order, not superiority! Both men and women of faith are declared to be children of God (John 1:10-13).

Education (11:10): Apparently, angels take a great interest in headcoverings. In Isaiah six, we notice that seraphim covered their faces and their feet with their wings in the presence of the thrice holy God. Holy things are often covered. The tabernacle and the veiling of the face of Moses come to mind. Paul says the headcoverings educate angels about authority; i.e., angels are instructed in why Christ died for men instead of angels. Our Lord died, not because he was a martyr, but because He was obedient to His heavenly Father. His submission to the Father demanded a death walk to the cross. Furthermore, the headcovering instructs angels that their Lord died for sinful men who were made in the image of God and

that he did not die for fallen angels who are mere servants of the Most High. When women cover their heads, they model our Lord's submission to His heavenly father—a wonderment to the angels.

Propriety (11:13): Paul appeals to the Corinthian sense of propriety for the continuance of this practice. The custom of women veiling in prayer was so common in the churches, Paul could appeal to this tradition as a matter of orthodoxy—an honorable tradition in the early church. Apparently, the practice of headcovering was a matter of apostolic authority and such established tradition in the church that it was not open to debate. The Christian position is more liberal than the Jewish tradition where women veiled even their faces, but more conservative than the libertine Corinthians where women paraded seductively in public unveiled. Interestingly, it is the Jewish tradition today for men in a synagogue to wear a yarmulke, **the exact opposite of Christian teaching**⁵⁵. Messianic communities that endure the practice of men wearing a yarmulke are taking their cue from modern unbelieving Jews rather than from the blessed teaching of Rabbi Paul, the bondservant of Christ. Selah.

Nature (11:14): Paul appeals to nature for the continuance of the symbolic practice. Men tend toward baldness. Long hair on women is a universal standard of beauty. Nature tells us that Christ is the head of man, and that women are the glory of men. Paul reasons that if a woman's long hair is given to her for a natural covering, she should be inclined to wear a spiritual covering ("something down the head") like a veil or scarf. Paul is not saying that long hair is a substitute for a veil nor is he condemning a shorter hair style. He appeals to natural law as a reason to practice the spiritual law. The whole idea that long hair is a symbol of submission is ludicrous and something even libertarians will not accept. Wearing a headcovering is consistent with nature and is spiritual sign pointing to the natural order of the original creation.

Unity (11:15-16): Paul argues that the churches of his day practiced the custom of veiling, and he urges the Corinthians to adopt the common tradition. Failure to comply exposed a contentious spirit; i.e., rebellion against God's law-order. His purpose of mentioning the term "contentious" was meant to cut off the debate.

⁵⁵ Jeff Raskin, 1990, describes rather humorously the **origin of the yarmulke** tradition in his History of the Yarmulke (<http://humane.sourceforge.net/humor/yarmulke.html>). He says, it is not known when Jewish men began to wear the yarmulke. It is not rooted in ancient tradition, and apparently is a rather recent invention. It took ten men to make up a synagogue, and sometimes, Jewish men would gather outside under the Sun to pray where the balder men would get sunburned. At first, these men would pray under an umbrella to keep from burning themselves. Later, bald men, started wearing a skull cap to protect themselves. Somewhere after the sunburn and the umbrella, the rabbis of rabbis rejected the umbrella as sacrilegious and sanctioned the yarmulke as an approved form of sunburn protection. The common practice evolved into a standard liturgical worship apparel among Jews. Tradition!

Out of all the reasons given to practice the tradition of headcovering not one was cultural. In fact, Paul appealed to the fundamental principles in the OT to persuade these believers to accept the practice of veiling. Apostles do not appeal to the OT Scriptures to invoke a temporal, cultural practice. To speculate that Paul was addressing a local, petty cultural problem at Corinth is to invoke a rationale foreign to the reasons Paul himself gives. Furthermore, we would not only put words in the Apostle's mouth that are not there, but we would ignore the reasons that are there.

The ancient practice of hat removal by men and wearing headcovering by women does not appear to have any practical value. The practice is iconic or symbolic of the Divine order. Since man is made in the image of God (icon), men are to imitate God. Women, on the other hand, are NOT the icon of man but the glory of man. Women have no duty to emulate man or to accumulate masculine traits. In fact, they are forbidden to do so (Deuteronomy 22:5). [Start here](#)

The practice of wearing a veil has been abandoned by many modern churches, but it has not been disregarded by Western Civilization even though most have no idea why they practice that removing and hair covering. In going to football games or public events where prayer is offered, most men will remove their hats and helmets, and most women, if they have something on their head, let it remain. Isn't it ironic that the neo-pagans honor the tradition while many churches have generally abandoned the practice?

Other lessons: The practice of headcovering embraces many Biblical principles and is a symbolic lesson regarding: creation, God's mandate to take dominion, the order of creation, the purpose of man and woman, the fall, the law that man is to rule his home, gracious male leadership, submission of the woman, male-female roles, respect, holiness, modesty, Biblical ethics, the Sonship of Christ as the Servant of the Lord, marriage, roles of husband and wife, and other important truths in Scripture.

Let's look at what the church fathers had to say:

Irenaeus (120-202 AD): Irenaeus translates 1 Corinthians 11:10 as follows: "A woman ought to have a veil [*kalumma*] upon her head, because of the angels."(Irenaeus, Against Heresies, Book 1, 8:2, cited in The Ante-Nicene Fathers, A. Cleveland Cox, ed., (U.S.A: The Christian Literature Publishing Co., 1885), I:327.)

Tertullian (150-225 AD) discussed whether the command for a woman to wear a veil applied to virgins. This discussion would not have occurred if headcoverings were not a common practice among the churches. Tertullian, On Prayer, cited in The Ante-Nicene Fathers, A. Cleveland Cox, ed., (U.S. A.: The Christian Literature Publishing Co., 1885), III:687.

Clement of Alexandria (153-217 AD): Clement understands the words in 1 Corinthians 11:5 to refer to a veil of fabric and not to a woman's hair.

"And she will never fall, who puts before her eyes modesty, and her shawl; nor will she invite another to fall into sin by uncovering her face. For this is the wish of the Word, since it is becoming for her to pray veiled" [1 Corinthians 11:5 GLP].(Clement of Alexandria, The Instructor, cited in The Ante-Nicene Fathers, A. Cleveland Cox, ed., (U.S.A: The Christian Literature Publishing Co., 1885), II:290.).

Jerome (345-429 AD):

"It is usual in the monasteries of Egypt and Syria for virgins and widows who have vowed themselves to God and have renounced the world and have trodden under foot its pleasures, to ask the mothers of their communities to cut their hair; not that afterwards they go about with heads uncovered in defiance of the apostles command" [1 Corinthians 11:5].(Jerome, Letter CXLVII:5, cited in The Nicene and Post-Nicene Fathers, Philip Schaff, ed., (Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans Publishing Co.), VI:292. 13. Augustine, Of the Work of Monks, cited in The Nicene and Post-Nicene Fathers, Philip Schaff, ed., (Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans Publishing Co.), III:523.

Augustine (354-430 AD):

"We ought not therefore so to understand that made in the image of the Supreme Trinity, that is, in the image of God, as that same image should be understood to be in three human beings; especially when the apostle says that the man is the image of God, and on that account removes the covering from his head, which he warns the woman to use, speaking thus: 'For a man indeed ought not to cover his head, forasmuch as he is the image and glory of God; but the woman is the glory of the man.'" Jerome, Letter CXLVII:5, cited in The Nicene and Post-Nicene Fathers, Philip Schaff, ed., (Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans Publishing Co.), VI:292. 13. Augustine, Of the Work of Monks, cited in The Nicene and Post-Nicene Fathers, Philip Schaff, ed., (Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans Publishing Co.), III:158.

John Calvin (1509-1564)

"When he says 'her hair is for a covering [[1 Corinthians 11:15](#) GLP], ' he does not mean that as long as a woman has hair, that should be enough for her. He rather teaches that our Lord is giving a directive that He desires to have observed and maintained. If a woman has long hair,

this is equivalent to saying to her, 'Use your headcovering, use your hat, use your hood; do not expose yourself in that way!'" (Seth Skolnitsky, trans., Men, Women and Order in the Church: Three Sermons by John Calvin, (Dallas, TX: Presbyterian Heritage Publications, 1992), p. 53)

John Knox (1505-1572 AD):

"First, I say, the woman in her greatest perfection was made to serve and obey man, not to rule and command him. As saint Paule doth reason in these wordes: 'Man is not of the woman, but the woman of the man. And man was created for the cause of the woman, but the woman for the cause of man; and therefore ought the woman to have a power upon her head,' (that is, a coverture in signe of subjection)." (John Knox, "The First Blast Of The Trumpet Against The Monstrous Regiment Of Women," Works of John Knox, David Laing, ed. (Edinburgh: Printed For The Bannatyne Club), IV:377.)

Matthew Henry (in his Commentary on the Whole Bible, published in 1706)

"The woman, on the other hand, who prays or prophesies with her head uncovered dishonoureth her head [1 Corinthians 11:5-6 GLP], namely, the man, v.3. She appears in the dress of her superior, and throws off the token of her subjection. She might, with equal decency, cut her hair short, or cut it close, which was the custom of the man in that age. This would be in a manner to declare that she was desirous of changing sexes, a manifest affectation of that superiority which God had conferred on the other sex." Matthew Henry, Matthew Henry's Commentary on the Whole Bible, (McLean, VA: MacDonald Publishing Co.), VI:561.

A.T. Robertson (Word Pictures ~1931):

". . . it is the sign of authority of the man over the woman. The veil on the woman's head is the symbol of the authority that the man with the uncovered head has over her [1 Corinthians 11:10]." A.T. Robertson, Word Pictures in the New Testament, (Nashville, TN: Broadman Press, 1931), IV:162.

J. Vernon McGee (1904-1990):

"Apparently some of the women in the church at Corinth were saying, 'All things are lawful for me, therefore, I won't cover my head.' Paul says this should not be done because the veil is a mark of subjection."

Thru the Bible with J. Vernon McGee, (Pasadena, CA: Thru The Bible Radio, 1983), V:50.

I can't help but think one of the reasons we are facing so many cultural problems in the family due to liberalism and the rise of feminism is that the Christian church has dropped the symbolic practice of men removing hats during prayer and women veiling themselves during prayer.⁵⁶ Isn't it true, that ***all that is wrong with marriages today can be found in the lack of what headcovering symbolize?*** Isn't it true, that in troubled marriages you will find a paucity of what headcoverings symbolize? Isn't neglect of God's law-order at the root of so many problems in the family? Today, people do not understand God's creative order or his purpose for the sexes. It is next to impossible to tell the difference between the godly and the ungodly, not only by dress but by demeanor. Feminism wages war against gender roles and confusion reigns. The whole idea that a person can choose his sexual identity is to proclaim that man is a god with his own law order.

Though I am persuaded the practice has validity, I have come to realize that the casual church does not have the wherewithal to practice these truths; nor does the average Christian husband have enough rope on his bucket to dip into this well of truth taught in this chapter. A preacher who preaches the truth with any conviction will ruffle feathers, and may find himself pecked out of the hen house; moreover, a woman who practices veiling may find herself scratching for grain alone. Some have thought it best to put this passage in the category of "doubtful things" (Romans 14) and leave the matter up to the individual conscience. But even this is doubtful because the Apostle says, "if any man seems to be contentious (resistant to the practice of veiling), we have no such custom, neither the churches of God!" That is if anyone does not recognize this practice, he should not be recognized in the church of God. He simply does not take the Word of God seriously.

In conclusion, this passage declares three truths: headship, headcoverings, and Head remembering. The man is exhorted to remove his hat in his approach to God; godly woman is exhorted to cover her head as a statement of God's law-order. And, the man and wife that obey these commands and practice what they symbolize will stand out like lilies in a green meadow.

Note on the Hijab: According to Amier Taheri on the "Origins of the Hijab," the controversial headgear of Muslim women has nothing to do with Islam or

⁵⁶ I was in an outdoor football stadium after 9/11 where the whole crowd of 35,000 observed a minute of silence. The men removed their hats, and the women kept their hats on. Interestingly, the culture seemed to retain this tradition while the church has totally abandoned it. Personally, I can't figure out why the church has forsaken the practice unless it is due to the fact that woman don't like to mess up their dry-blown hair on Sunday morning.

Mohammed the prophet. It is not sanctioned anywhere in the Koran. It began in the 1970s by Mussa Sadr, an Iranian mullah and leader in the Shiite community.

Inspired by the headwear of Lebanese Catholic nuns, which practice itself was modeled after Christian art portraying Christian women wearing headcoverings—especially the Virgin Mary, Sadr invented the idea that Iranian women should wear a headgear to avoid sexual harassment and rape. Thus, Sadr's neo-hijab made its **first appearance in 1977** as a symbol of Islamist-Marxist opposition to the Shah's Americanization of Iran. When the mullahs seized power in Teharan in 1979, women were compelled to wear the hijab and thousands did so.

In the Islamic mind, women are intrinsically evil and able to capture men by their hair and drive them into an erotic state. "In 1981, Abol-Hassan Bani-Sadr, the first president of the Islamic Republic, announced that "scientific research had shown that women's hair emitted rays that drove men insane." To protect the public, the new Islamist regime passed a law in 1982 making the hijab mandatory for females aged above six, regardless of religious faith. Violating the hijab code was made punishable by 100 lashes of the cane and six months imprisonment."

Thus, in the Shiite mind, men are not responsible for raping a woman. All rape is caused by the irresistible, spell-binding beauty of a woman. Women invite their own rape. Therefore, mullahs demand woman practice radical modesty by wearing the hijab and loose black outer wear. Women are not even allowed to get into a bathing suit appropriate for swimming. This kind of extremism is unknown in Christianity.

Furthermore, the reason for the Christian headcovering in Christianity is symbolic and spiritual. It has nothing to do with repelling men or disguising a woman's femininity. The Holy Scripture places the onus of self-control on men without demanding the defeminizing women. While the Bible exhorts Christian women AND MEN to be modest, it does not anywhere order women to divest themselves of their feminine traits by wearing uncomplimentary clothing. In fact, the Word of God forbids women to dress in men's clothing or enjoin unisex fashions (Deuteronomy 22:5). If the Bible condemns cross-dressing, how much more does it condemn transgender conventions: mentally, spiritually, physically, and biologically.

Thus, the employment of the hijab is a recent development within Islam—an idea borrowed from 2000 years of the Christian tradition of women wearing a headcovering—an idea taken to a radical extreme to humiliate and defeminize Muslim women. What the mullahs can't figure out is why modern American Christian women do not obey Christian law in 1 Corinthians 11 that exhort women to cover their head in public worship!

And, since Christian women have dropped the practice of wearing headcoverings (1960s) holy women are as rare as a virgin on a troop train, divorce has quadrupled, fatherless homes are multiplied, millions of babies have been aborted, women are forced into the work place and made to dress like men, children come home to school absent a mother and father, promiscuity abounds, Sodomites are permitted to adopt children, the unisex movement has infected the west with same-sex marriages, transgender identity issues, and the political push for neutral-gender restrooms and showers for lesbians, gays, transvestites, and whoever. Maybe, just maybe, the 2000 year practice of women wearing headcoverings at church is more important than the modern apostate Christian can comprehend.

57 References

Other Authorities

- 1 Blackstone Commentaries.. 67
- A. A. Hodge 248
- A.T. Robertson 325
- Aaron Lazare 271
- Augustine 324
- Baba Kamma 37b 156, 157
- Baba Mezia 24a 156
- Ben Shapiro..... 245
- Ben Sira 36:14-24..... 75
- Black's Law Dictionary 56
- Book of Common Prayer.. 89, 90
- Book of Confessions 96
- Bracton, de Legibus et
 Consuetudinibus 68
- CA Farmer 241:5 (Oct. 5, 1974),
 p. 28 34
- Catherine Bowen 122
- Centers for Disease Control. 143
- Charles Spurgeon..... 106, 292
- Clement of Alexandria 324
- Cliff Notarius of Catholic
 University 212
- Coke's Institutes 68
- D.L. Moody 106
- David Barton 122
- David Elkind 107
- Declaration of Independence 61
- Dennis Chapman..... 313
- Dietrich Bonhoeffer 108
- Dorothy Briggs 107
- Edmund S. Morgan, The Puritan
 Family..... 309
- Erwin Lutzer 282
- Ethelbert Stauffer 33
- evil Bible 311
- Francis Schaeffer (*How Should
 We Then Live*, 1976, p. 26)
 121
- Frank Sinatra..... 230
- Gordon H. Clark 246
- H. Berman, The Interaction of
 Law and Religion..... 47
- Hillary Clinton..... 34
- Howard Markman of the
 University of Denver 212
- International Centre for Prison
 Studies..... 178
- Irenaeus 323
- It Is Dangerous to Be Right
 When the Government Is
 Wrong 162
- J. Vernon McGee..... 325
- James Madison* 38
- James Rawles' Survival Blog. 139
- Jean B. Colbert 140
- Jenkins' Eight Centuries of
 Reports..... 68
- Jerome 324
- Jim Owen..... 123
- Jo Ann Stockton 132
- John Adams..... 20
- John Calvin 324
- John Dewey 122, 247
- John Knox..... 325
- John MacArthur 297, 307
- John Marshall..... 140
- John Rushdoony..... 115, 116
- John Witherspoon..... 138
- John Witherspoon, President of
 Princeton..... 246
- Joshua Harris..... 107
- Judge Andrew Napolitano..... 44
- Karl Barth 201
- Kenneth S. Latourette, A History
 of Christianity, Volume I.... 21
- Lester Roloff..... 134
- Marbury v. Madison..... 76, 78
- Matthew Henry..... 325
- Mike Adams 143
- Modern Money Mechanics,
 Federal Reserve Bank of
 Chicago 160
- Office of Justice Programs,
 Bureau of Justice Statistics
 178
- Papal Encyclical 276
- Patrick Henry..... 9, 108
- Paul Harvey 122
- Probation and Parole in the
 United States, 2006 .160, 178
- R. C. Sproul**.....294
- Robert E. Lee106, 152
- Rushdoony.....275
- Saint Augustine113
- Samuel Adams.....283
- Sanhedrin 57a156, 157
- Schaeffer121
- School of Law178
- Sir Christopher Wren.....89
- Stonewall Jackson's Book of
 Maxims204
- Taxation Key, West 933161
- Ted Bundy, Serial Killer & Rapist
 of at least 28 Women & Girls
 115
- Tertullian27, 323
- The Case for Personal Freedom
 162
- The Dead Poets Society212
- The Institutes of Biblical Law 156
- The Maxims of Robert E. Lee 204
- The MIAC Report139
- the Mishnah148
- The Rutherford Institute144
- The Westminster Confession of
 Faith*.....84
- Thomas Aquinas (1225-1274)
 121
- Thomas Jefferson284
- Trayner, Latin Legal Maxims and
 Phrases68
- U.S. Bureau of Justice Statistics
 160, 178
- U.S. Department of Justice..160,
 178
- U.S. News & World Report* ...212
- Vance Havner123
- William Earnest Henley230
- World Prison Population List.
 8th edition178
- Yuri Bezmenov.....50, 142